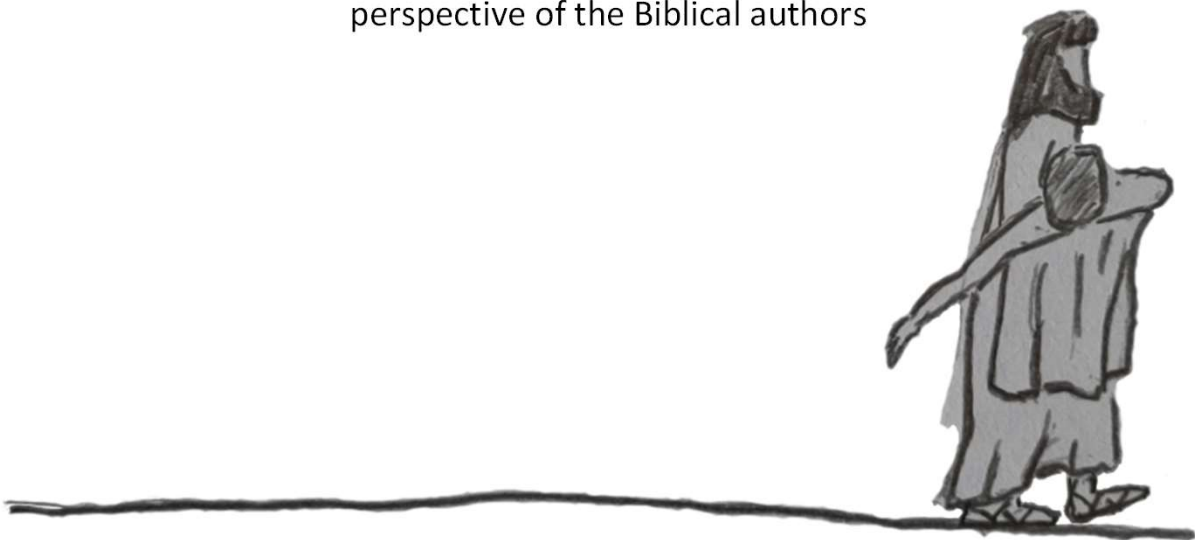


# The Epic Story of the Holy Bible

told through a contextual flow chart,  
resurrecting a spiritual world view

Uncovering the reality of Scripture,  
& the Deuteronomy 32 / Psalm 82  
perspective of the Biblical authors



For the Glory of Christ Jesus  
the King who is returning soon!  
Blessed be He

What if someone gave you a treasure map  
to the greatest story ever told?  
Would you read it?

To my 'L's – may this edify your relationship with Jesus.

Very special thanks to my mom, who always reads what I write, & for being my editor.  
And my dad, who always had the patience to have philosophical conversations with me.  
And to my family, for praying for me when I was in the valley of the shadow of darkness.

Compiled by Jeff Metcalf  
11.14.2021 – 01.14.2022

Edited  
01.14.2022 – 03.14.2022

© 2022

ISBN: 978-X-XX-XXXXXX-X

Image

COVER

Jesus Returning King on Horse

## Introduction

### **Why this is important for me**

On November 13, 2021, I wouldn't have known this project existed. By December 31, 2021, I'd completed the first version of this work. Many times, I'd open my Bible to find a verse reference turning right to the page. When that happens once, it's weird. When it happens again & again & again, you have a knowing that the Holy Spirit is working through you. This is important for me, because it is important for Him. In the Name of Jesus, I pray it works in your life as it's worked in mine, amen.

I've had questions. Who are the bad guys? What are we fighting? How do we participate? How can we beat our personal sins? Why would an Almighty God care about me? What if I currently define myself as this, that, or something else? I'm a baller, a bruiser, a messed up loser... It all seems so pointless. Have fun until we die, whoever dies with the most toys wins...

Except that in my own philosophical journeys & experiences I came to know that the Most High God was real. It wasn't only because I realized the spirit world was real, because I know many who think that. But when you press into the spirit world & ask the Incomparable God for discernment, dots start to get connected. I believe that:

God the Father, Son, & Holy Spirit are three in one – the Trinity.  
The Bible is the true, God-breathed revelation of the Unmade God.  
Jesus came, died, was buried, & on the third day was raised again.  
And the only way I can be saved is by receiving the free gift of Jesus.

To paraphrase Mike Heiser, 'I believe a lot of the same stuff you do. But the reasons why I believe them are probably very different than the reasons you do, or what you've been taught.'

I came across a video by Mike Heiser a few weeks ago as I was writing this. It was about an hour, so I thought I'd give this guy a few minutes to see what it was about. Four hours later, I'd watched four one-hour sections of his seminar, was looking for more videos & ordered three of his books.

I was amazed. Questions I had been asking & researching for years were all there in pockets. But the linchpin, the 'connective tissue' if you will, was pulled together in the work done by Mike Heiser. I can't thank him, & really the Lord Jesus for working through him to get me what I needed.

With all this information at my mental fingertips so to speak, I drafted a first sketch of the timeline start to finish. I carefully redrew a second cleaner version by hand, but realized nearly all of the content was the same. Then I drew it a third time in Visio, because that is my professional medium for working with regulated products, & it was a natural fit for this. But again, the content was essentially the same. After a round of minor tweaks & layout improvements, I've arrived at a 'top of the waves' version that highlights the spiritual epic of the Bible from beginning to end.

I did all this for myself because it helps me think through process. But then I realized that this information was like a map, & maybe it could be used by others. I've felt this, prayed about this, & I really feel the Lord confirming that His hand is in this. That it is usable by the Kingdom. This is something that can help people with ears to hear & eyes to see resurrect what Heiser calls a 'Deuteronomy 32 Psalm 82 world view.'

### **What I'd love**

If you have an open mind to explore some of the weirder & lesser taught parts of the Scripture, I invite you to put on your Indiana Jones hat & come on an adventure of literally Biblical proportions. I think you will find that the Bible is an incredible story with spirit beings, colossal battles, cosmic geography, & a fight by the LORD to save you & bring you into His Kingdom. Ultimately, I'd love for you to get to know the Lord Jesus, & for Him to work His salvation in your heart.

## Defining the Spiritual World View

### Second Temple World View

As Heiser points out, a Jew from the Second Temple period would have told you that there were three falls of humanity. These each had specific impacts to the human condition, which were also understood during this time. It is something that was understood by the writers & readers of the New Testament. It is essential to understanding the Old Testament. Tragically, this world view has been lost by modern readers.

When reading any text, it is important that we also understand the world view at the time. This is what the authors would have expected of the readers. To displace this with a modern world view is to misunderstand the text. This is why 'translations' that don't rely on original language may be great devotionals, but they aren't tied to the God-breathed world view.

The LORD is spirit. He expects us to also understand that we share in the spirit, as we are a composite (in this part of our life) of body (flesh), soul, spirit. There are spiritual realities that impose on our existence today, just as our great hope is for the everlasting in the world of spirit.

“11 Let us therefore strive to enter that rest, so that no one may fall by the same sort of disobedience. 12 For the word of God is living and active, sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing to the division of soul and of spirit, of joints and of marrow, and discerning the thoughts and intentions of the heart. 13 And no creature is hidden from his sight, but all are naked and exposed to the eyes of him to whom we must give account.”

– Hebrews 4:11-13

### A Deuteronomy 32 / Psalm 82 World View

Deuteronomy 32 hits on points that include:

- The disinheritance of humanity, the allotment of nations of people to lesser gods, the borders of these nations, & the remnant the LORD kept for Himself (vs. 8).
- The howling waste of the wilderness (Sheol, death) (vs. 10).
- The wings of the LORD (vs. 11).
- Yahweh is not the lesser (foreign) god (vs. 12).
- Prophecy of Israel rejecting Jesus (vs. 15).
- The anger of the LORD when Israel worshipped demons [not NT demons, but lesser gods, see Numbers 25] (vs. 17, 21).
- The beasts (rebellious nations) set against Israel (vs. 24).
- That the Most High God is over all the lesser gods (vs. 26-27).
- Fruit of the enemies is poison (vs. 32-33).
- The LORD will vindicate His people (vs. 36).
- Prophecy of the destroyed lesser gods (vs. 37).
- A taunt by the LORD to the lesser gods under the control of the Most High God (vs. 38).
- That the LORD is the incomparable God, nobody compares to Him (vs. 39).
- Prophecy of the destruction of the lesser gods & the people who follow them (vs. 41-43).
- Prophecy of the great wine press during the outpouring of the Wrath of God (vs. 42).
- Vengeance for His children (vs. 43).

Psalm 82 requires a reality where:

- The lesser gods were placed over the nations & expected to rule justly according to God's Divine Law (vs. 1-2).
- That they are gods, sons of the Most High (sons of God), but shall die like mankind (vs. 6-7).
- A cry from the Psalmist to 'Arise' (resurrect – points to the Messiah) & judge the earth & inherit the nations (vs. 8).

## §1: Preface

The entirety of a spiritual world view isn't relegated to these two sections of Scripture, but are a fantastic reflection of it. They are obvious touchpoints that point to how a better understanding of the spiritual reality makes the entire rest of the Bible light up. It also battles against what the enemy has done through people to 'humanize' the Scripture. By this I mean the refactoring of things that are clearly spiritual in the original text & message into something that is 'only human,' avoided, or swept under the rug.

It is a worthwhile endeavor to recover this spiritual world view for ourselves. It gives line of sight to a better understanding of the Bible. It will develop our relationship with Jesus. We will love others better as we reflect the Character of Christ. We will be equipped with the full armor of God. We will be able to discern the voice of our Shephard & follow the leading of His Spirit in our daily lives. Nothing suffers from edification. The building up of the LORD is the best thing there is!

## About the Diagrams

### What I See

I wasn't there. None of us were. But the LORD knows all & I trust in Him. As I have been authoring these studies, these images are an attempt to share what the LORD has shared with me.

It had been on my mind for a while to draw these diagrams & include them in the work. But, there are quite a number of studies in this work. So I thought, 'maybe I'll complete this work with the flows & the studies and that will be enough.' Except that I could feel on my heart from the LORD to draw them so they could help provide a vision of what He has given me.

Hopefully you enjoy them.

### The Diagrams

Each original diagram is 18" x 24" (imperial) graphite & charcoal on 400 pound paper in 24" x 30" cuts.

I've produced the layouts in method that allows me to derive a rough version of the vision into a tangible picture I can associate with each study.

I've done this for a few reasons:

- This allowed me to get the layout I was looking for – which was a project by itself.
- The approach allowed me to move the layout between digital & physical media.
- I was able to replicate the diagram as part of multiple attempts in the event something didn't work out.
- I was able to complete original diagrams in physical media using traditional methods.
- Lastly, high resolution images sufficient for physical printing could be incorporated into the work.

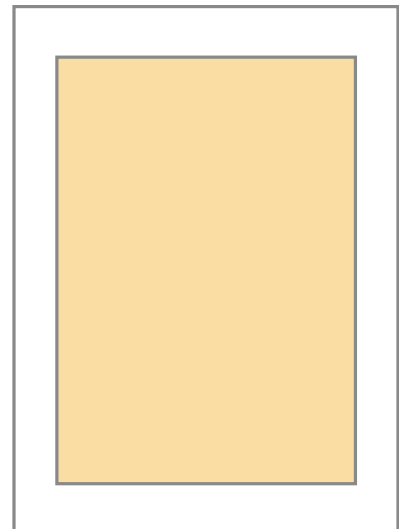
### Seeing the Events

While there are many works that deal with stories from the Bible, much of the content in this work focuses on 'weird' things that in my experience are avoided. When they are considered, it seems theories will humanize the story and develop a narrative that does not cohere with the overall Biblical narrative. Moreover, these parts of the Bible are handled in seminary, with answers for pastors in training so they are prepared to dismiss questions.

But this stuff is strange to our experience. If we didn't know it to be the Truth of the LORD, it could be portrayed as a fantasy book – which is exactly how many worldly minded people see it. Antiquated, fantasy, irrelevant, & unimportant.

But to a follower of Jesus, the idea of an all God all man individual who was crucified, died bodily, was resurrected bodily, ascended to Heaven, & is coming back – that is weird. But it is also the most important person to us in the living Christ our King, Lord Jesus!

So let's endeavor to look with eyes that see, & hear with ears that hear, & understand some of these weirder parts of the Scripture as we prepare for His return.



## Table of Contents

### **§1: Preface**

4	Introduction
5 – 6	Definition of the Spiritual World View
7	About the Diagrams
6 – 8	Table of Contents
9 – 10	Legend
11 – 12	What to Look For
13	Addressing the References
14	Table of Books
15	Why Context is Important
16	List of Things to Research
17	The Three Heavens
18	Abraham’s Bosom & Hades

### **§2: Spiritual Events Bible Flow**

20	Spiritual Events Bible Flow
21	Creation
22	First Fall – Eviction From Eden
23	Cain – Second Fall
24 – 25	Second Fall
26	Flood – Noahic Covenant
27	Post-Flood World
28	Disinheritance of Humanity
29	Abraham – Moses
30	Rescue from Egypt
31	40 Years in the Wilderness
32	Promised Land & Two Kingdoms
33	Daniels 70 Weeks
34	Aliyah, Return to the Promised Land – Birth of Jesus
35	Jesus Pre-Ministry
36 – 37	Ministry of Jesus is a Cosmic Battle
38	The New Covenant
39 – 40	Christian Soldiers
41	Signs of the Season – The Last Week is Near
42	The Last Week Begins
43	The Last Week
44	Cup of Wrath – Millennial Kingdom
45	The Millennial Kingdom
46	The Great White Throne Judgement – The Eternal Kingdom

### **§3: The Trinity**

48	The Trinity
49 – 52	Names for Personalities of the Trinity
53 – 57	The LORD’s Redemption Plan
58 – 62	Daniel’s Prophecy of Seventy Weeks
63 – 67	Jesus the Faithful Israelite
68 – 72	The Sufficiency of the Blood of Jesus
73 – 76	The Seven Personalities of the Holy Spirit
77 – 81	Romans 8 – How the LORD Adopted us into His Family
82 – 85	Types of Grace



## Table of Contents

### **§4: The Enemy**

87	The Enemy
88 – 91	Names for Satan
92 – 95	Abodes of Satan
96 – 100	Fall of Satan
101 – 105	First Fall of Humanity
106 – 110	Cain's Concern
111 – 116	Second Fall of Humanity
117 – 120	Second Fall Consequences – Part 1: Satan
121 – 125	Second Fall Consequences – Part 2: Angels, Demons, & Humans
126 – 130	Post Flood Giants & Unclean Spirits
131 – 135	Third Fall of Humanity
136 – 140	God vs. lesser gods in Egypt
141 – 145	Land & Dominion
146 – 150	Birth of Jesus is a Declaration of War
151 – 155	Ministry of Jesus is a Cosmic Battle – Part 1: Demons
156 – 160	Ministry of Jesus is a Cosmic Battle – Part 2: Angels
161 – 164	Ministry of Jesus is a Cosmic Battle – Part 3: Covenant

### **§5: Dispensations**

166	Dispensations
167 – 171	The Dispensations
172 – 176	The Covenants
177 – 181	The Falls
182 – 186	The Judgements
187 – 191	The LORD Saves Through Judgements

### **§6: Humanity**

193	Humanity
194 – 198	Israel – Remnant of the LORD
199 – 204	The Israelite Camp
205 – 209	People Held Hostage by lesser gods
210 – 213	Sin, Transgression, & Iniquity
214 – 218	Christian Soldiers & The Great Commission

### **§7: The End of This Dispensation**

221 – 222	Introduction to the End Times
223	Picking Things Up At The New Covenant...
224	The New Covenant
225	Christian Soldiers
226	Work of the Church & Followers of Christ Jesus
227	Fulfillment of Prophecies, WWI
228	Fulfillment of Prophecies, WWII – Recent Times
229 – 232	Fulfillment of Prophecies, Recent Times
233 – 234	The Near Future
235	Lead Up to the Last Week
236	First Half of the Last Week & Ministry of the Two Witnesses
237	Ministry of the Two Witnesses & Last Week Midpoint
238	Second Half of the Last Week, Three Warnings & Fifth Seal
239	Death of the Two Witnesses, Sixth Seal & Seventh Seal

## Table of Contents

### **§7: Great Tribulation Continued**

240	First Five Trumpets
241	First & Second Woes, Warning of the Third Woe
242	Harvest of the Righteous
243	The First Six Bowls of God's Wrath
244	Seventh Bowl, Harvest of the Wicked
245	Seventh Bowl, Harvest of the Wicked, Return of King Jesus
246	Removal of the Enemies of the LORD
247	Setting Up the Millennial Kingdom
248	Millennial Kingdom, Final Rebellion, & Second Resurrection
249	Final Judgement
250	The Eternal Kingdom

### **§8: Commentaries About the Future**

252	Commentaries About the Future
253 – 254	Seeing prophecy from the LORD's perspective
255 – 257	One World <del>Government</del> Governing Ideology
258 – 260	The Two Witnesses
261 – 263	Full Spiritual Armor Needed
264 – 266	The Elect
267 – 269	The Wicked Get Worse
270 – 272	Seals & Trumpets & Bowls
273 – 275	The Cup of Wrath of the LORD
276 – 278	The Millennial Kingdom
279 – 281	Great White Throne Judgement
282 – 284	The Lake of Fire
285 – 287	The Eternal Kingdom

### **Appendix**

289	Appendix
290	Bibliography, About the Authoring
291	Additional Resources
292	Printing Tips
293	Hanini – Here I Am Lord, Send Me!
.....	
297	It's An EPIC Story!

# Legend

Events of the Most High God (in whole or as part of the Trinity) in amber.

Events of spirit beings aligned to the LORD in blue.

Events of humanity in green.

Events of spirit beings in rebellion to the LORD in grey.

123. Dotted black line (any box color) indicates a non-Biblical reference.

Independent historical, cultural, or geological events you can research.

Event Number

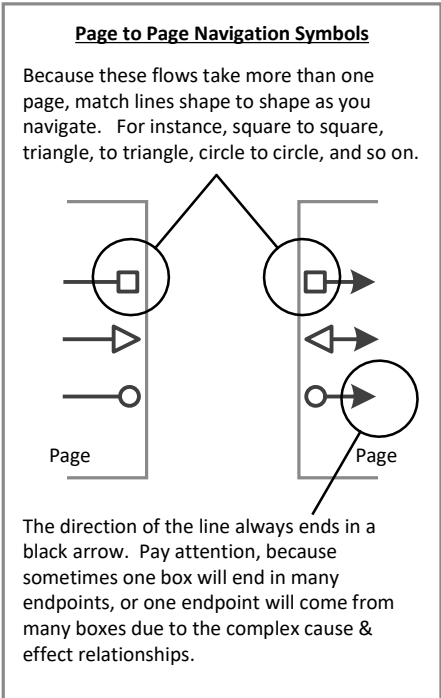
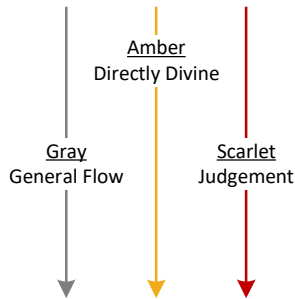
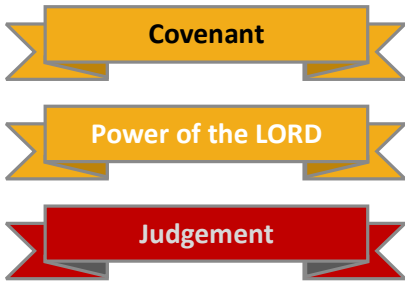
Simplified version of what happened.

123. Summary description of the event. (Reference)

These are usually provided as examples of fulfilled prophecy.

To Biblical or additional text

Clarifying notes are provided in boxes like this one, and are pinned to the box using the black line, like the one used on this example note.



Covenants

Judgements

Falls

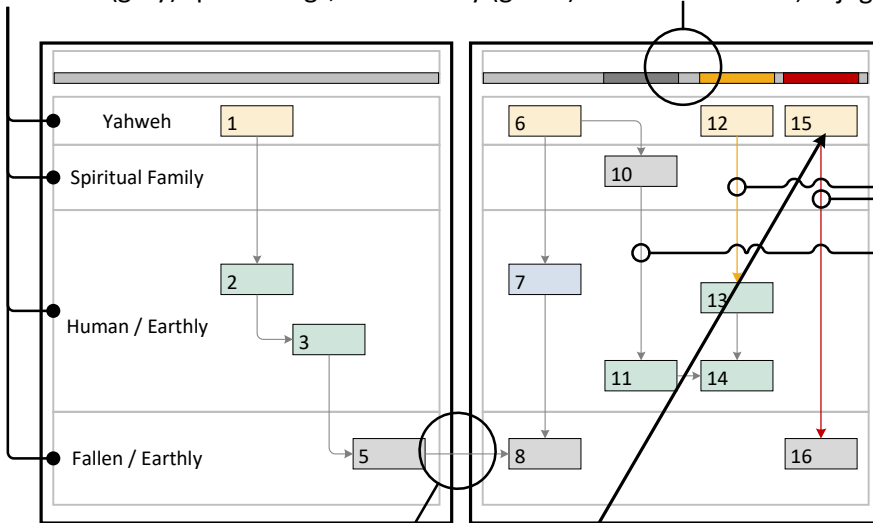
Time Mark

(#) Dispensation Name

# Legend

Space, & who can occupy it isn't as easy as "heaven & earth." The swim lanes here break down generally where things happen. But note that does not limit who does what where. This is why I've color coded the boxes, to make it easier to identify actions of the LORD (amber), aligned (blue) & rebellious (gray) spirit beings, & humanity (green).

Block indicators along the tab give the larger context for things like dispensations, falls, covenants, & jugements.



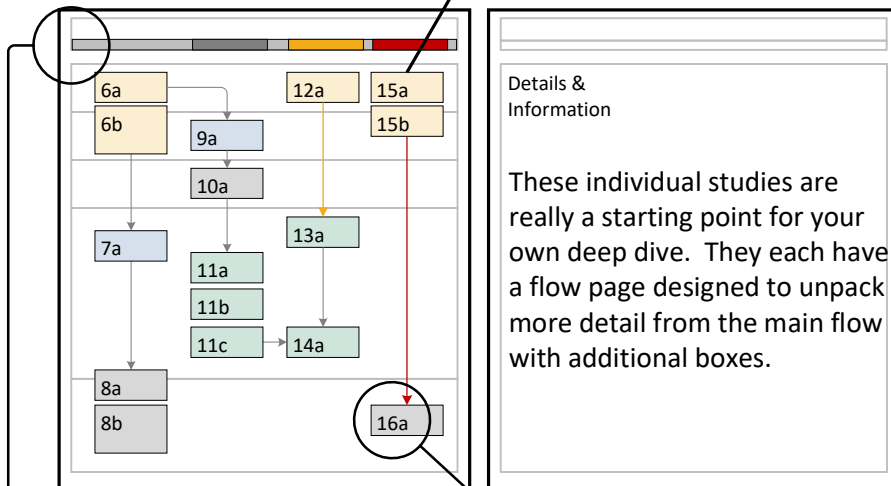
Divine actions are only performed by the LORD. To help identify them, the colors of amber & scarlet have been used.

All other general flow lines will be gray, & simply indicate the flow from one box to another.

Note that some events have more than one cause, as indicated by both the numbering order & flow lines.

If you have the PDF, the two longer Spiritual Events Bible Flows are designed to be printed such that the flow lines connect from one page to the other.

Using the numbers (like 15a) to refer you back to the Spiritual Events Bible Flow (box 15 above), allows the individual study context to be correlated to the larger context of the epic storyline.



Details & Information

These individual studies are really a starting point for your own deep dive. They each have a flow page designed to unpack more detail from the main flow with additional boxes.

In the individual studies, the block indicators along the top may indicate a more contextual element to the deep dive. An abode of Satan for instance, as opposed to the dispensation.

All boxes are numbered & refer back to the main flow. Each study also lists alphabetic sequence specific to that study. Note that these boxes might show up in multiple studies, with variations & different alphabetic sequences.

## What to look for

This flow pulls the events in the Bible & related texts out in a way that allows us to see the spiritual epic that is God's story. By looking at the epic of the Bible this way we can see several important things.

**1. Motives:** When something doesn't make sense, you may have heard the idiom, 'the LORD works in mysterious ways.' But when we look at what He is trying to achieve the pieces begin to fit. He demonstrates this through things like His faithfulness, the patterns of dispensations, & creating in kinds, so that we can look forward knowing what to expect because He has demonstrated it before. Understanding motive is important for what the enemy is doing in their 'delay & stay' strategy. Finally, it applies to us & our understanding of how we fit into the larger Epic story.

**2. Dispensations:** While some may not want or recognize dispensations, God operates by first setting humanity up for success (indicated by a Covenant). Then some type of fall occurs, which causes humanity to drift into an apostate condition. The condition becomes so bad that the LORD must bring judgement. Through each judgement the LORD always saves the remnant of humanity faithful to Him. This is then followed by another Covenant, & another dispensation. Marked by the LORD's direct involvement with Humanity (Jesus is an obvious example to us), this defines the major or most agreed upon dispensations.

**3. Warning:** By studying the cyclical nature of how the LORD operates, He provides warning about what is coming. This is true for us today.

**4. Divine Events:** Today we can & should boldly claim that the return of Christ Jesus as King is a literal event that will happen. Looking back, we can see that divine events have occurred, & we should expect them to continue.

**5. The Enemy at Work:** The enemies of God are in rebellion to His authority. We learn who these guys are, & it should help connect dots within the Scripture. If we don't understand who we are fighting, we are fighting a fight we don't understand.

**6. Covenants:** The LORD makes covenant with humanity. Some are conditional (i.e., Eden - don't eat the fruit, Abrahamic – circumcision), some are unconditional (i.e., Noahic). Each time the LORD is setting us up to be successful. While He is always faithful to His covenants humanity always drifts into an apostate condition because we are not capable without Him. Thus, we see why judgement is necessary.

**7. Nature of Judgements:** The LORD sometimes passes judgement by giving what was asked for. For instance, Satan is in a futile exercise of running a fallen kingdom that will ultimately fail & be destroyed by the Most High God. Adam eating the fruit had his eyes opened to good & evil, & the LORD bestowed upon him a conscious to guide him. People throughout the ages, even today, who decide to be their own god will get an eternity of being exactly what they asked for, in eternal death & torment.

**8. Salvation Through Judgement:** Look for judgement events like the eviction from Eden, the great flood, Babel, rescue from Egypt, exile in Babylon, & even in our own lives. Consider how the LORD saves His people through times of judgement; how He works in the same way; how He is the same yesterday today & tomorrow; how He saves us through our lives from sin; & what this means for the coming prophesied judgements.

**9. Our Mission:** Jesus gave us our mission in the Great Commission. It is true that we need to work to minister the Gospel of Jesus to the lost. But what does that mean? Even in the language used by Jesus is threaded in a world view that we don't share with the early church. The hope is to uncover this context & frame the powerful mission given to every believer & who He calls His church.

10. The Enemy Within: We fight against the flesh, & it is a struggle every believer understands is real. But as we congregate the enemy has infiltrated the camp of the righteous with spies & influencers who seek to dim the eyes & ears of your spirit, make you uncomfortable about the mission given by Jesus, & make the church following Jesus a 'worldly church.' At first blush, this may not seem true, but it becomes the elephant in the room when we look at the strategy of the enemy.

11. Strategy of the Enemy: We know the enemy is defeated, but they are not gone. Their success is to delay their judgement as long as possible. To that end, it is a 'delay & remain' approach. They are delaying the fullness of the Gentiles from coming in, & the reawakening of the Jews. When these two things occur, which the LORD has prophesied will happen, then the Wrath of God will be poured out on them. The longer we as followers of Jesus tarry without evangelizing the Gospel, our own complacency enables the enemies of God.

12. What to Expect: We are called to know the times & seasons. The LORD has provided signs & explained conditions that reveal His plan to followers of Jesus. Getting more in depth on the overall storyline of Scripture should help us all understand where we are & how we fit in the plan of the Almighty God.

## Addressing the References

As this is a walkthrough of the Epic Story of the Bible, I've included all of the canonical Biblical texts from the Old Testament & New Testament. Or temporally, the First and Second Testament.

I've also included the texts that were in the Bible before Martin Luther & the Protestant Reformation determined to pull them out. These texts referenced outside of the agreed upon canon also include all of the books in (what some would call) the Catholic Bible. Regardless of whether you consider them Scripture, Apocryphal, or Deuterocanonical texts, I highly recommend reading them. They are part of the story of the Bible, & the Word of God can only benefit you.

Additionally, I've referenced the Books of Enoch & the Book of Jubilees. Again, & to underscore, these books are descriptions of the story, not sources for doctrine. Thus, in general terms, they are as about as heretical as a Christian self-help book written today. While these texts provide more detail to the story, it is also important what they don't do. They aren't what we as Christians derive doctrine from. They also do not change the core doctrines & beliefs we have as followers of Christ Jesus. Their inclusion in the flow is not intended to do anything further than shed light on parts of the story that give the complete context for the epic of the Bible.

Finally, it feels like I need to mention that there are a lot of texts out there that as modern readers we would consider 'ancient.' While there are many to pull from, I've stuck to a select few that have also been vetted by academics that have more experience with these texts than I do. The bottom line is that these writings:

1. cohere with the Biblical Story,
2. explain more detail around some of the weirder stuff in the Scripture, &
3. help connect dots.

They are descriptions that provide context – the same context that the writers of the New Testament had. For instance, the clear references by Peter & Jude to the angels in gloomy darkness underscores this point.

**Importance of the Non-Biblical descriptions:** The additional descriptions relating to events like the first fall, the perpetrators, the specific rebellions, & others, can remain interesting descriptions that don't affect doctrine. However, it may raise the point that there are many spiritual 'bad guys' that have rebelled against the LORD. Moreover, as the timeline is investigated it doesn't change the fact that there is a single 'head of the Serpent' ('the Satan') with all of the other fallen angels & unclean spirits (under Satan) being judged by God the way we all know about.

The purpose in including this is to paint a more detailed picture of the epic story, but if these bother you, then you can skip over them. Nonetheless, I've referenced these texts because they are in support of, & have coherence with the story of the Bible & the Messianic world view. They are not gnostic gospels, in support of some ancient theology, or intended to lead believers away from the Bible – they point to the same Most High God, the same story, with additional detail.

### **Three Main Points to Remember**

- 1. The Bible is the Word of God**  
It is the only true source, there is power in it, so always go to it first.
- 2. Non-Biblical Books**  
These provide context, some times prophetically. The Holy Spirit fruit always aligns with the Bible. If you don't like these books, skip them.
- 3. Get to the Power of the Word**  
Understand the context, understand what the LORD is saying, & this will get you to the Power of God.

## Table of Books

### Old [First] Testament

Book	Abbr	Book	Abbr
Genesis	Gen	Song of Solomon	SoS
Exodus	Ex	Isaiah	Is
Leviticus	Lev	Jeremiah	Jer
Numbers	Num	Lamentations	Lam
Deuteronomy	Deut	Ezekiel	Ezk
Joshua	Jos	Daniel	Dan
Judges	Jud	Hosea	Hos
Ruth	Ruth	Joel	Joel
1 & 2 Samuel	1 Sam	Amos	Am
1 & 2 Kings	1 Kgs	Obadiah	Ob
1 & 2 Chronicles	1 Chr	Jonah	Jna
Ezra	Ezr	Micah	Mic
Nehemiah	Neh	Nahum	Nah
Esther	Est	Habakkuk	Hab
Job	Job	Zephaniah	Zeph
Psalms	Ps	Haggai	Hag
Proverbs	Prov	Zechariah	Zech
Ecclesiastes	Ecc	Malachi	Mal

### Scriptural / Apocryphal / Deuterocanonical

Book	Abbr
Tobit	Tbt
Judith	Jdth
Esther (Greek)	EstG
Wisdom of Solomon	WoS
Sirach	Sir
Baruch	Bar
Letter of Jeremiah	LoJ
Prayer of Azariah	PoA
Susanna	Sus
Bel and the Snake	BatS
1 Maccabees	1 Mac
2 Maccabees	2 Mac
1 Esdras	1 Esd
Prayer of Manasseh	PoM
Psalms 151	Ps151
3 Maccabees	3 Mac
2 Esdras	2 Esd
4 Maccabees	4 Mac

### New [Second] Testament

Book	Abbr	Book	Abbr
Matthew	Mat	Hebrews	Heb
Mark	Mk	James	Jm
Luke	Lk	1 Peter	1 Pt
John	Jn	2 Peter	2 Pt
Acts	Acts	1 John	1 Jn
Romans	Rom	2 John	2 Jn
1 Corinthians	1 Cor	3 John	3 Jn
2 Corinthians	2 Cor	Jude	Jude
Galatians	Gal	Revelation	Rev
Ephesians	Eph		
Philippians	Philp		
Colossians	Col		
1 Thessalonians	1 Thess		
2 Thessalonians	2 Thess		
1 Timothy	1 Tim		
2 Timothy	2 Tim		
Titus	Titus		
Philemon	Philm		

### Additional Books

Book	Abbr
1 Enoch	1 En
2 Enoch	2 En
3 Enoch	3 En
Jubilees	Jub



## Why Context is Important

Imagine that you are trying to hang a picture up on a wall. And that wall is a regular framed wall, which means that the studs – the 2"x4" boards – behind the sheet rock are 16 inches on center. This is important. If you measure from the corner, every 16" should be the middle of a 2"x4" stud. Simple enough. But which corner? The left corner or the right? The problem is, if you hang a picture that is light, it might not matter. But if you hang something heavy, like a mirror or a bookshelf, it could rip the wall apart & fall on someone.

Knowing what the measurement is, & which corner is critical. For followers of Jesus, He is our corner stone. Even more, we look to Him as our measure. Just as Paul said, follow him as he follows Jesus. This is not saying Paul is a deity, but rather that Paul strives to be an example of Christ Jesus to this world & when we do the same, we are stepping into the family business of our Heavenly Father.

This brings us to context & why it is so important. Over time the enemy has infiltrated the Body of Christ, His church. Dimmed our hearts with false teaching. Led us into things that seem innocuous but divide us from the Lord Jesus. We need to ask ourselves, what is more important? Is Jesus the paramount thing? Or is it something else?

I like to think of Mary & Martha. If I could choose to sit directly at the feet of Jesus & learn right from the source, that is the best I could get. That is the best we could all get. Worrying about everything else in life makes us Martha & causes us to major on the minors. I am on team Jesus. I want to love people like Jesus did & strive in my brokenness to become like Him. As I put this flow together with help from the Lord Jesus through His Holy Spirit who helped me see the story of the epic of the Biblical Story. But that doesn't mean that I know everything or wrote it all down perfectly. In the end I know that the Most High God is my Heavenly Father, & He knows. And He is who I ultimately want to place my trust. Not in this timeline.

In the meantime, I've tried to capture the events that help construct an armature for the epic Biblical story. Just like those studs that hold up a wall, they are important to understanding how the entire story fits together. Knowing these things makes reading all the books of the Scripture engaging in new & interesting ways.

Along the way this has felt like 'Biblical archaeology' if you will. I imagine myself like Indiana Jones tunneling through the deep basements of the story, trying to connect dots. And the Lord has been my guide along the way. It has given me better understanding about who the 'bad guys' are, how & what to pray for, & much more.

The Lord placed it on my heart to share this with others. If it helps you, I pray that the Lord edify you, & that this be a springboard into your own spiritual growth in your relationship with Jesus Christ! At the end of the day, & the end of all days to come, it is about the Lord Jesus & choosing Him to be our Lord.

The final thing to mention is that unlike a wall built with studs 16" on center, the Bible is much more interesting & complex. To paraphrase Paul again, we must labor in the Scriptures to develop our understanding as He develops it within us. Thus, all of the references to Scripture are the most important, & what we should rely on the most. To fill in the blanks, I've leaned on texts like the Books of Enoch, which were known, read, & referenced by writers of the New Testament including Peter, Jude, & Jesus Himself. Even so, these references are designed to connect dots, help unpack some detail about the spirit world, & who the cast of spiritual characters are in the most amazing epic of the Bible.

There will be a day when we are all spirit & live in the direct power & presence of the Most High God. Preparing for that only edifies me to evangelize the Gospel of Christ Jesus today. I invite you in the Name of Jesus to join me on this fascinating journey designed to regain the context of a 'Deuteronomy 32 Psalm 82' world view of the spiritual story of the Holy Bible shared by the writers of the Holy Scriptures that has been lost by most modern people.



Image

1a

3 Heavens

Image

1b

Underworld

Image

1c

Wilderness



## Section 2

### Spiritual Events Bible Flow

“All Scripture is breathed out by God and profitable for teaching, for reproof, for correction, and for training in righteousness, that the man of God may be complete, equipped for every good work.”

Paul  
Apostle of Christ Jesus  
2 Timothy 3:16-17

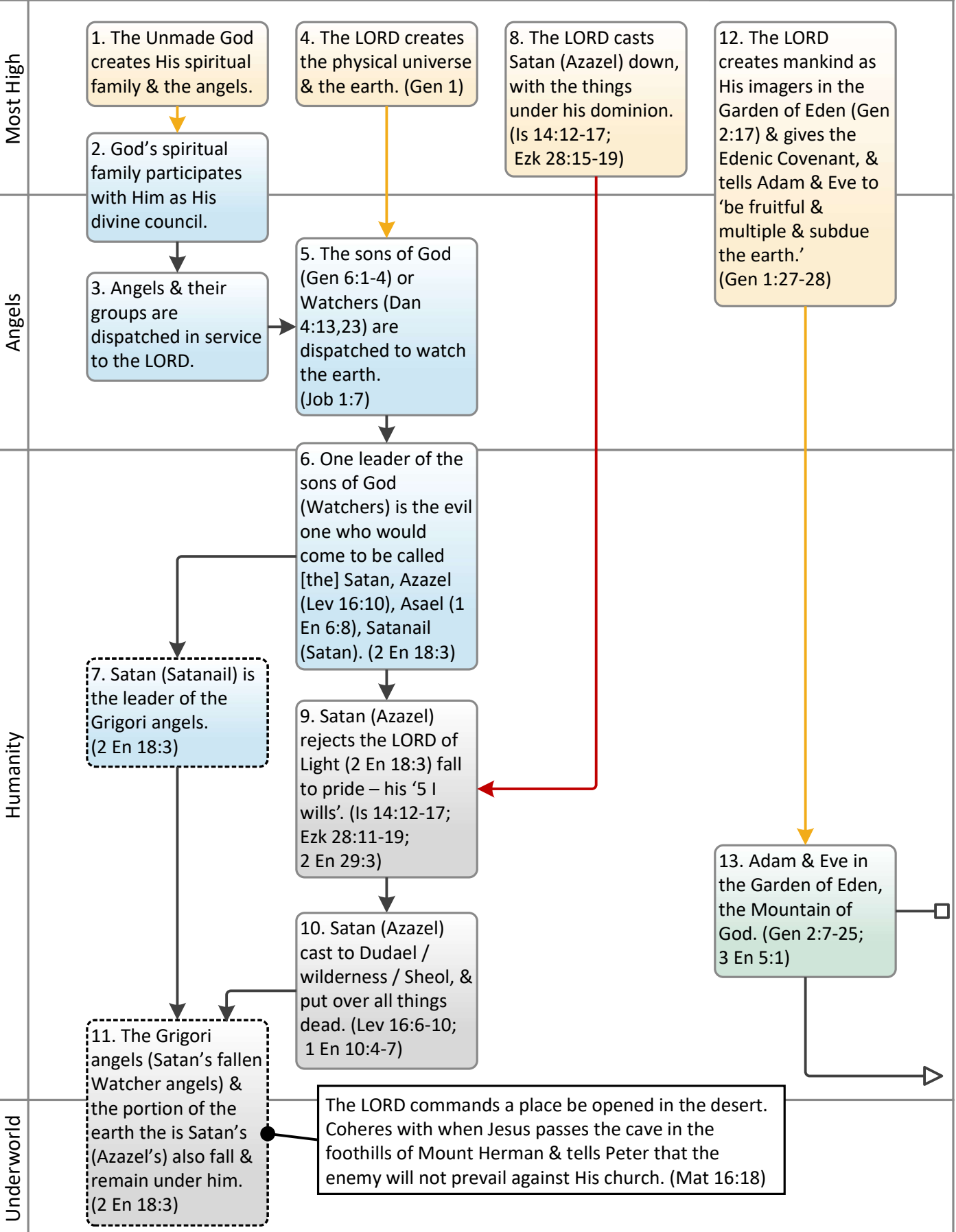
## §2: Spiritual Events Bible Flow: Creation

Event Marker:

**Edenic Covenant**

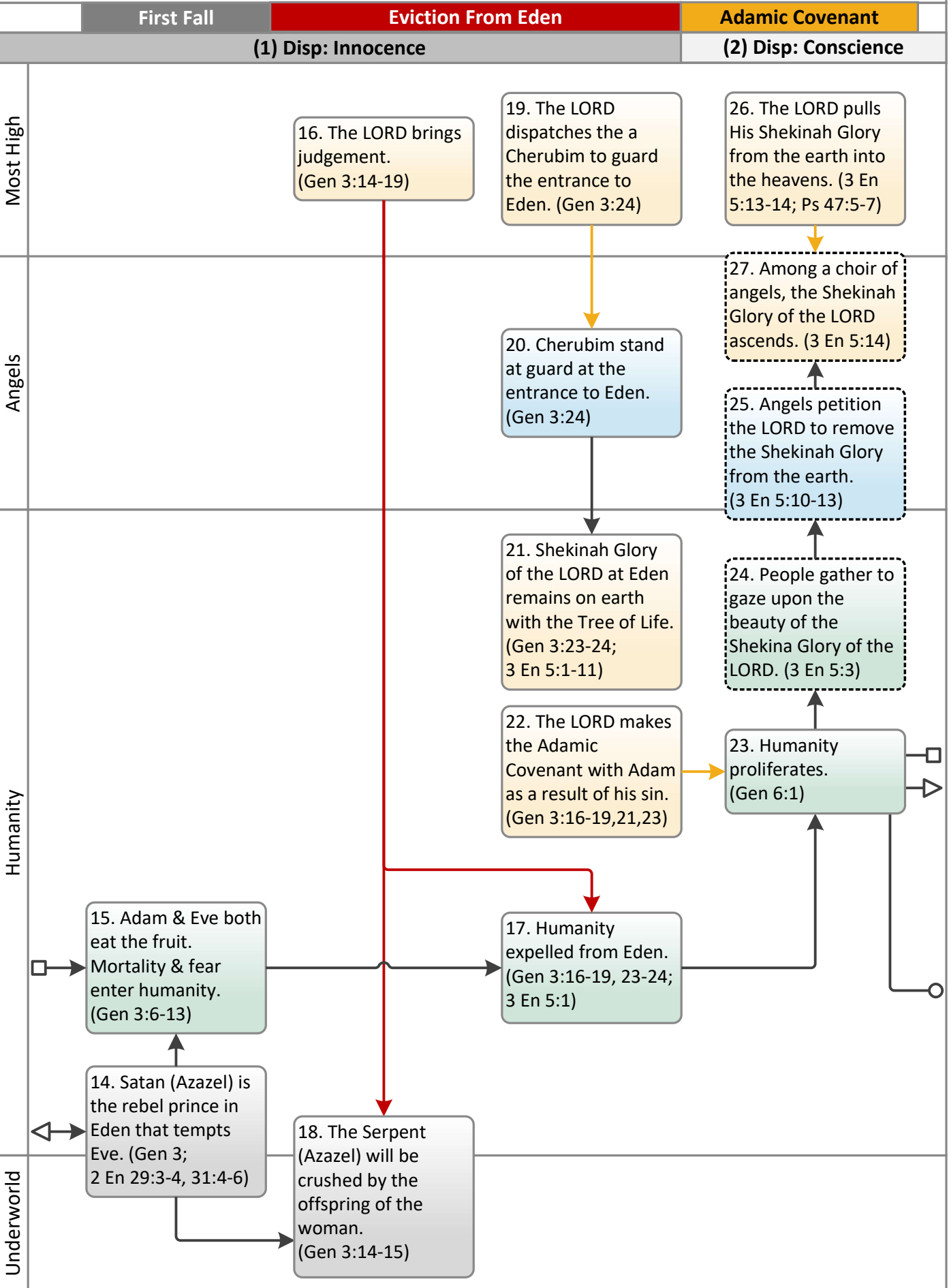
Dispensations:

**(1) Disp: Innocence**





§2: Spiritual Events Bible Flow: First Fall – Eviction From Eden



(2) Disp: Conscience

Most High

28. The LORD banishes Cain, but protects him seven fold. (Gen 4:8-16)

Angels

32. The sons of God (Watchers) see that women are beautiful & lust after them (Gen 6:1-4) & make a pact to sin. (1 En 6)

33. The sons of God (Watchers) 'married' the ones they chose' (raped women). (Gen 6:1-4)

38. The Watchers & Semjaza their leader teach humanity the secrets of the heavens, things they are privy to, and other sins, accelerating human depravity. (1 En 7-9, 9:7-8)

34. Nephilim are offspring (Gen 6:1-4) who God found abominable, a mix of spirit & flesh. (1 En 15)

Humanity

30. Cain kills Abel & is banished. God marks protection on Cain who is worried about being killed by 'anyone who finds him.' (Gen 4:8-16)

31. Satan (Azazel / Asael) is among the Watchers & listed as one of the leaders – his faction being the Grigori soldier angels. (1 En 6:7)

35. The genetics of humanity are defiled by the sons of God & Nephilim. (Gen 6:1-4; 1 En 7)

39. Teachings accelerate the depravity & destruction of humanity. (1 En 8)

36. Nephilim [Giants] have unclean (evil) spirits (NT 'demons') come out of them when they physically die. (1 En 15:8-10)

Underworld

29. Satan (Azazel & his Grigori angels) fallen angels in rebellion have access to the earth. (Lev 16:6-10; 1 En 10:4-7)

Cain's concern: Seth is first since Abel, but other siblings could exist before Seth. Also, Azazel & his Grigori angels, & other Watchers.

37. Unclean spirits sent to Sheol / the wilderness which is on earth as they 'remain on the earth' per Yahweh. (1 En 15:8-10)

Second Fall

(2) Disp: Conscience

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

Satan (Azazel & probably his Grigori under his leadership) teach humanity how to make weapons of warfare, & the accoutrements of lust & fornication (1 En 8).

40. Wickedness of Azazel (Satan) & his horde & wicked people ravage & kill humanity. (Gen 6:5-6; 1 En 9:1-2)

41. The spilled blood of humanity cries out. (1 En 9:1-2; Gen 6)

42. Aware of their transgression, the Watchers ask Enoch to petition the LORD on their behalf. (1 En 13:4).

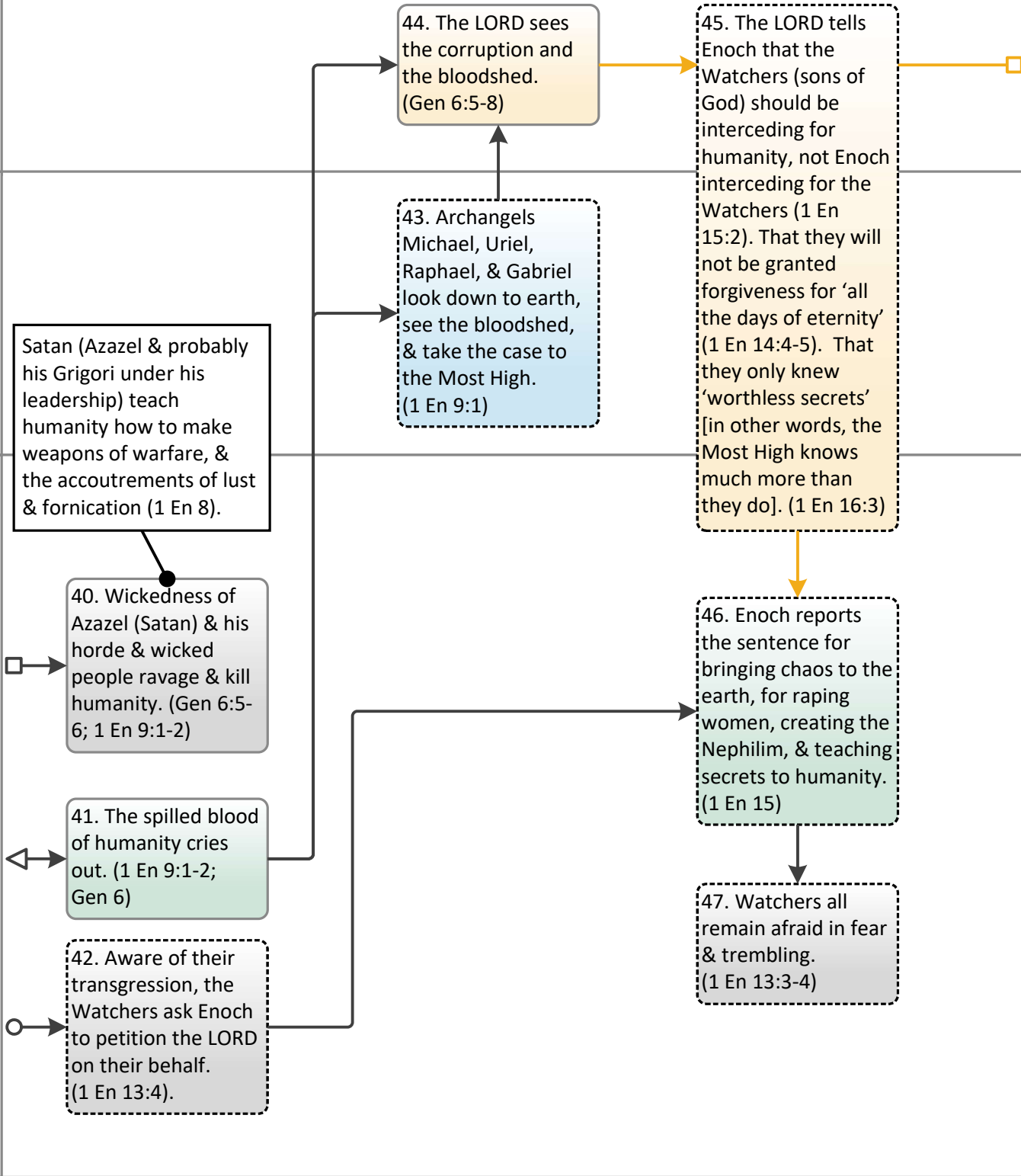
44. The LORD sees the corruption and the bloodshed. (Gen 6:5-8)

43. Archangels Michael, Uriel, Raphael, & Gabriel look down to earth, see the bloodshed, & take the case to the Most High. (1 En 9:1)

45. The LORD tells Enoch that the Watchers (sons of God) should be interceding for humanity, not Enoch interceding for the Watchers (1 En 15:2). That they will not be granted forgiveness for 'all the days of eternity' (1 En 14:4-5). That they only knew 'worthless secrets' [in other words, the Most High knows much more than they do]. (1 En 16:3)

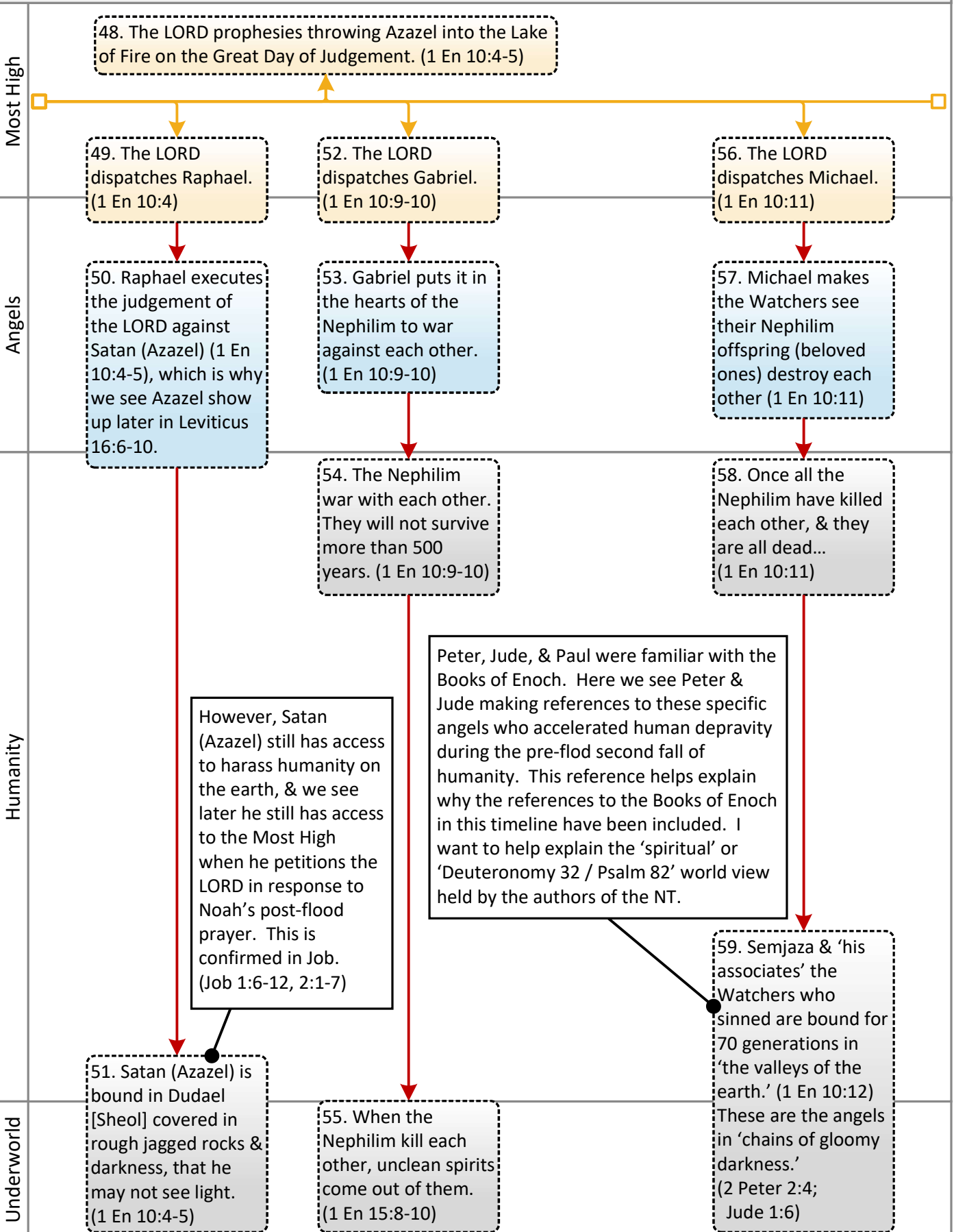
46. Enoch reports the sentence for bringing chaos to the earth, for raping women, creating the Nephilim, & teaching secrets to humanity. (1 En 15)

47. Watchers all remain afraid in fear & trembling. (1 En 13:3-4)

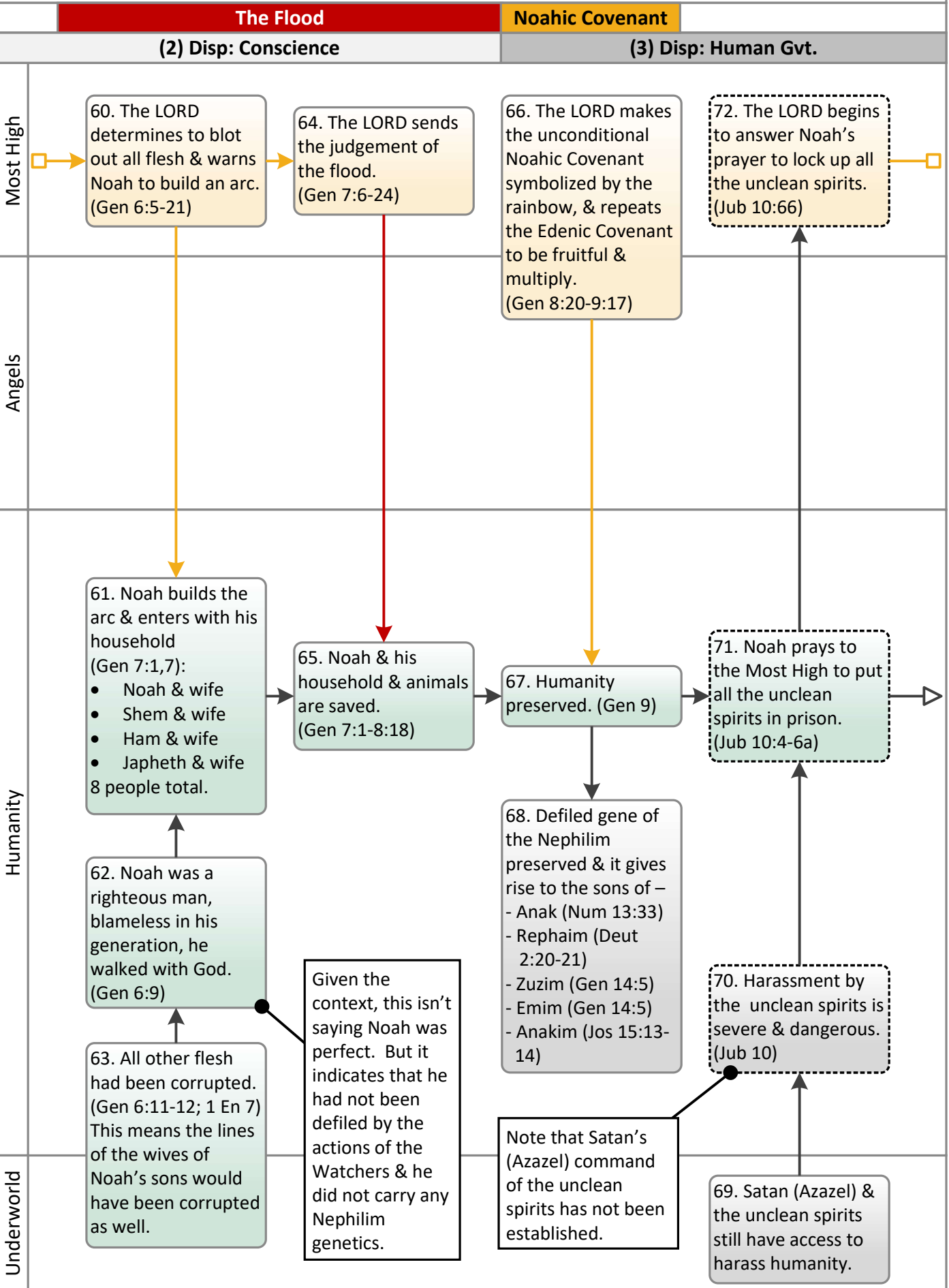


Second Fall Consequences for the Angels

(2) Disp: Conscience



§2: Spiritual Events Bible Flow: The Flood – Noachic Covenant



(3) Disp: Human Gvt.

Most High

74. The LORD accepts Azazel's petition, & only locks up 9/10 of the most dangerous unclean spirits. (Jub 10:7-9)

Angels

76. Angels teach Noah remedies made from roots of the earth to treat illness caused by the unclean spirits. (Jub 10:11-13)

This links the unclean spirits left on earth with illness & physical ailments, which in turn aligns to the descriptions of demonic oppressions in the NT.

Humanity

77. Noah writes these remedies down in a book. (Jub 10:11-13)

78. Instead of filling the earth (Gen 9:1), humanity settles in the land of Shinar. (Gen 11:2)

Underworld

73. Azazel petitions the LORD to leave 1/10 of the unclean spirits on earth & under his command, otherwise he would not be able to fulfill his purpose (Jub 10:11-13)

75. 1/10<sup>th</sup> of the unclean spirits remain, now under the control of Satan (Azazel). Archangels round up & bind 9/10<sup>ths</sup> in judgment so they cannot harass humanity. The unclean spirits are prevented from following the sons of Noah. (Jub 10:11-13) But harassment of other humans must have been permitted.

Satan (Azazel) is now in control of 1/10<sup>th</sup> of the unclean spirits. This explains the hierarchy of the NT. Satan & his demons in the Book of Jubilees as Azazel & the unclean spirits.  
 The imprisonment of 9/10<sup>ths</sup> is also important because it provides the backstory to the demons released during the Tribulation, the first woe, per the Revelation of Jesus to John. (Rev 9:1-11)  
 We can set these stories aside if that provides comfort. These don't affect doctrine at the end of the day. But this is connecting dots between text that would otherwise be 'weird' & unexplained.

(3) Disp: Human Gvt.

Most High

80. The LORD has His heart broken. He comes down, destroys Babel & the tower, confuses language & disperses the people. (Gen 11:5-9)

Angels

81. We see the participation of the divine council. (Gen 11:7) But the Most High God (the LORD) does the work. (Gen 11:8)

I've been using the term LORD for Yahweh, the Almighty God, the Trinity... There are so many Good names. Here I'm including a reference to the Most High, or Most High God. This is intentional to highlight the placement of administrative lesser gods over allotted groups of humanity. This explains the philosophical issue referred to as the many gods problem. But more importantly this underscores that the Most High God is incomparable & absolutely species unique.

Humanity

82. The disinheritance of humanity by the Most High God & His dispersing of the 70 nations (Gen 11:8). The nations are allotted to lesser gods (sons of God, angels) & the lesser gods are allotted to the Nations. (Deut 32:8)

84. Seventy of the sons of God are placed over the Nations. They are expected to rule with justice. This implies they are not fallen sons of God – yet. (Gen 10; Ps 82)

85. The seventy sons of God rebel, keeping worship for themselves & rule unjustly. (Ps 82:2)

83. The nations are allotted to lesser gods. (Gen 11:8; Deut 32:8)

86. The nations are now held hostage by the lesser gods. (Ps 82:3-5)

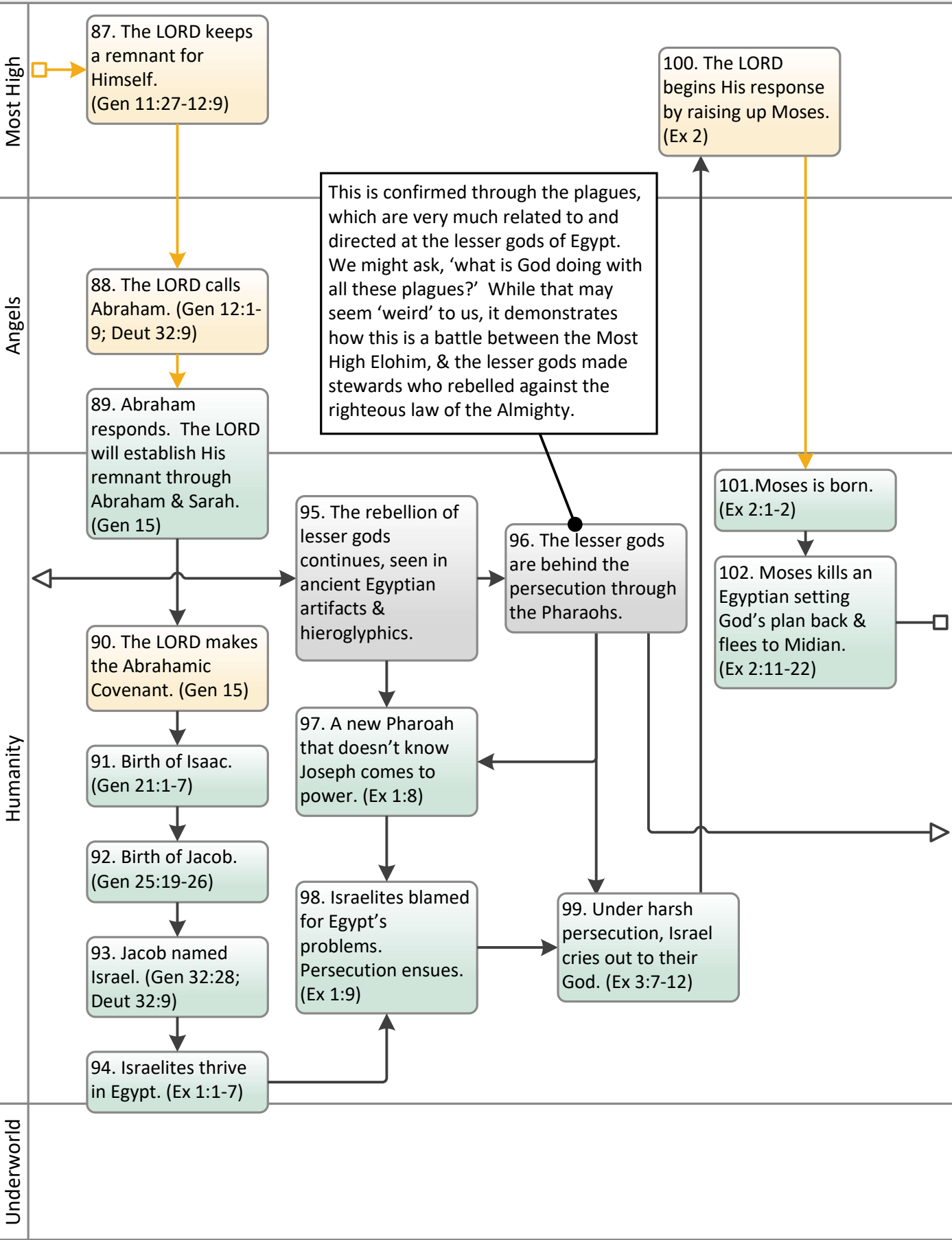
Underworld

79. Tower of Babel built. (Gen 11:4) A ziggurat, the purpose of which was to bring a deity to the humans.

This event establishes cosmic geography, and determines which of the lesser gods have dominion over what land. We know this because the Most High God (the LORD) 'fixed the borders of the peoples according to the number of the sons of God. (Deut 32:8)

**Abrahamic Covenant**

**(4) Disp: Promise**





§2: Spiritual Events Bible Flow: Rescue from Egypt

Plagues in Egypt

Mosaic Covenant

(4) Disp: Promise

(5) Disp: Law

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

103. 'I AM' (the LORD) calls Moses from the burning bush. (Ex 3)

107. The LORD (the Most High God) does battle against the lesser gods. (Ex 7-14)

109. The LORD makes covenant at Mount Sinai (Ex 20-24)

112. The LORD dwells among His people. Building the tabernacle & the Holy artifacts. (Ex 25-30, 36-40)

104. Moses encounters 'I AM' (the LORD) in the burning bush & is called to lead God's people out of Egypt. (Ex 3)

108. Our view is Moses vs. Pharaoh. But a spiritual battle is behind the scenes. (Ex 7-14)

110. Mosaic Covenant established. The Ten Commandments (Ex 20), more laws. (Ex 21-23)

113. Israelites travel toward Canaan.

114. Spies report giants in the land. Israelites don't trust the LORD. (Num 13-14:19)

105. Another Pharaoh comes to power. The severity of persecution of Israel increases. (Ex 2:23-25, 3:7-10, 4:19)

111. Israel confirms the covenant. (Ex 24)

106. Moses can return to Egypt, because all who seek to his life are dead. (Ex 4:19)

This is particularly egregious as these people were the people who saw the LORD bring the plagues of Egypt, lead them in their escape from Pharaoh & his army, part the Red Sea, & appear at the Mountain of Sinai where they were terrified by the presence of the Almighty God.

119. Harassment by Satan (Azazel) & the unclean spirits in his control continues. We see this is the mistrust & rebellion of Israel, but also in stories with the Nations with whom they come in contact.

(5) Disp: Law

Most High

116. The LORD sentences Israelites to 40 years in the wilderness. (Num 14:20-38)

We know this is Jesus because the Angel of the LORD allows Joshua to worship Him.

123. The LORD anoints Joshua to lead His people, and to take them into the Promised Land. (Deut 31:14-29; Jos 5:13-15)

Angels

115. The lesser gods have dominion of the land Israel will be traveling through, as defined by the LORD in the Table of Nations. (Gen 10; Deut 32:8)

124. The Angel of the Lord (Jesus) says He leads the Army of the LORD. Thus, the conquest of Canaan likely involved Michael & his warrior angels under the command of Jesus. (Jos 5:13-15)

Humanity

117. Now all Israelites must wander in the desert until all who came out of Egypt are dead, except for Joshua & Caleb.' (Num 14:20-38)

118. The Most High is with Israel. This is critical from a cosmic geography perspective. He maintains His dominion. His presence ensures Israel is on ground allotted to the LORD, regardless of where they travel, they are under the wings of the Almighty God. (Deut 32:10-14)

125. Joshua becomes the anointed leader of the Israelites. He encounters & worships the Angel of the LORD, the pre-incarnate Jesus. (Jos 5:13-15)

120. This explains the goat for Azazel. It puts the sin of the first on the second, & sends it out of the camp to where it belongs. (Lev 16:6-10)

122. At the end of the forty years in the wilderness, Moses sees Canaan, then dies. (Deut 34)

Underworld

121. The 'wilderness' is literal, but also symbolic language for the cosmic geography belonging to Azazel and the things that are dead.

These scriptures are also important because the name Azazel is identified as the fallen god over the wilderness & all things dead. This coheres with the NT identity of Satan. Thus, we have made a Biblically based connection between these names.

This is where Israel sends their sin – to where it belongs. Recall the banishment of Azazel by Raphael under the orders of the Most High.

(5) Disp: Law

Most High

126. The LORD sends prophets to help, warn, & guide the people.

132. The LORD uses the princes of Assyria & Babylon to deal with the wickedness of Israel.

Angels

127. The lesser gods rule the nations surrounding Israel in rebellion & with injustice. (Ps 82)

128. The nations surrounding Israel are hostile to God's people & lure them into idolatry & worship of the lesser gods.

Humanity

129. Israel struggles to keep the covenant & follow God's Law.

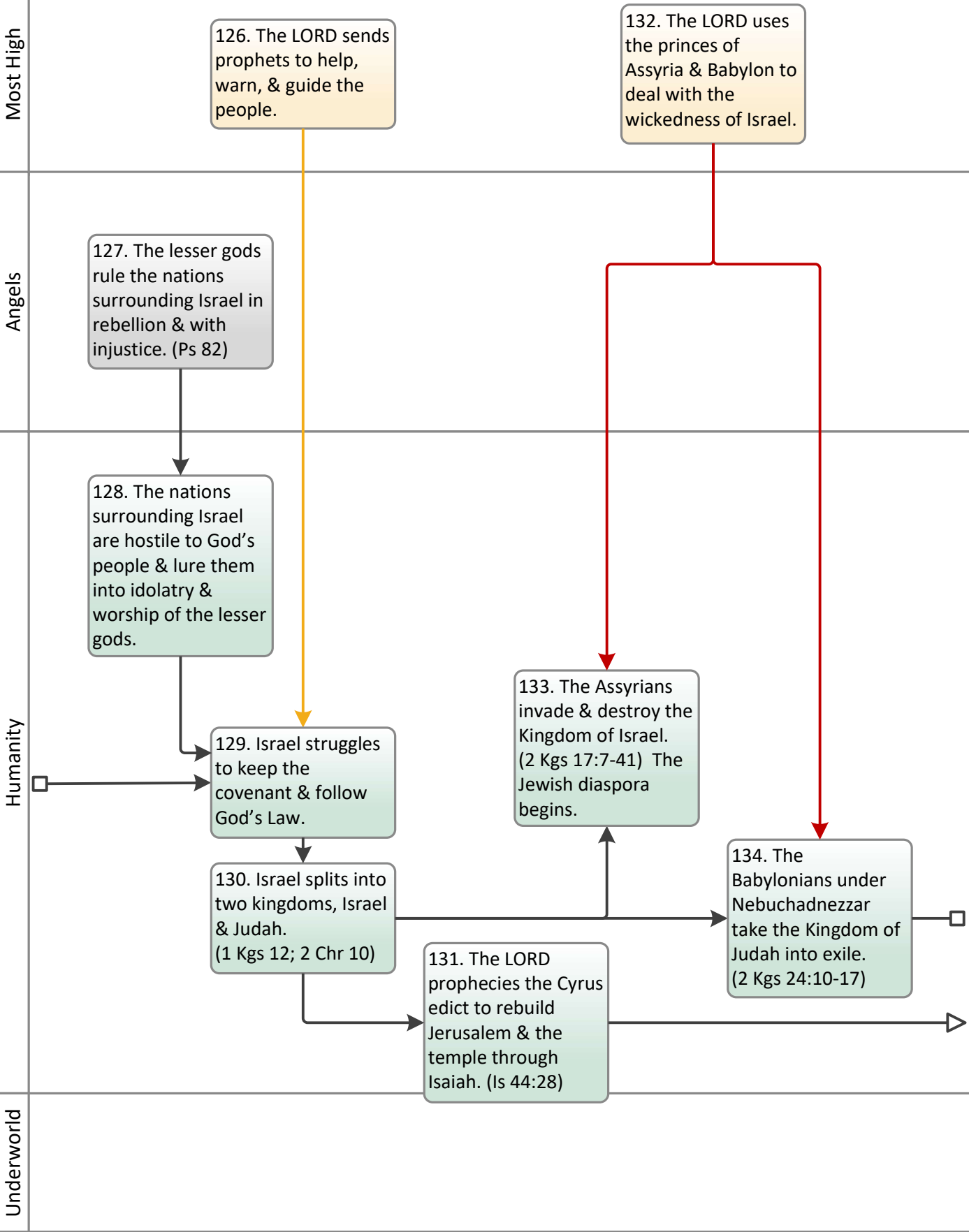
133. The Assyrians invade & destroy the Kingdom of Israel. (2 Kgs 17:7-41) The Jewish diaspora begins.

130. Israel splits into two kingdoms, Israel & Judah. (1 Kgs 12; 2 Chr 10)

134. The Babylonians under Nebuchadnezzar take the Kingdom of Judah into exile. (2 Kgs 24:10-17)

131. The LORD prophesies the Cyrus edict to rebuild Jerusalem & the temple through Isaiah. (Is 44:28)

Underworld



Judah's Exile Continues

(5) Disp: Law

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

136. The LORD hears & dispatches Gabriel to help Daniel. (Dan 10:10-13)

141. The LORD moves on Cyrus the Great to fulfill the prophecy ending Babylonian Exile. (2 Chr 36:22-23)

137. Gabriel is restrained by the Prince of Persia for 21 days, but Michael the Archangel comes to help. (Dan 10:12-14)

138. Gabriel reaches Daniel & explains the interpretation of the visions. (Dan 9:20-23)

142. Time of Judah's exile fulfilled. Cyrus made King. (Ezra 1:1)

139. Gabriel gives the proper interpretation of the 70 week timeline, the beasts, etc. (Dan 9:24-12:13)

135. Daniel prays & humbles himself before the LORD to understand the visions given to him. (Dan 9:1-19)

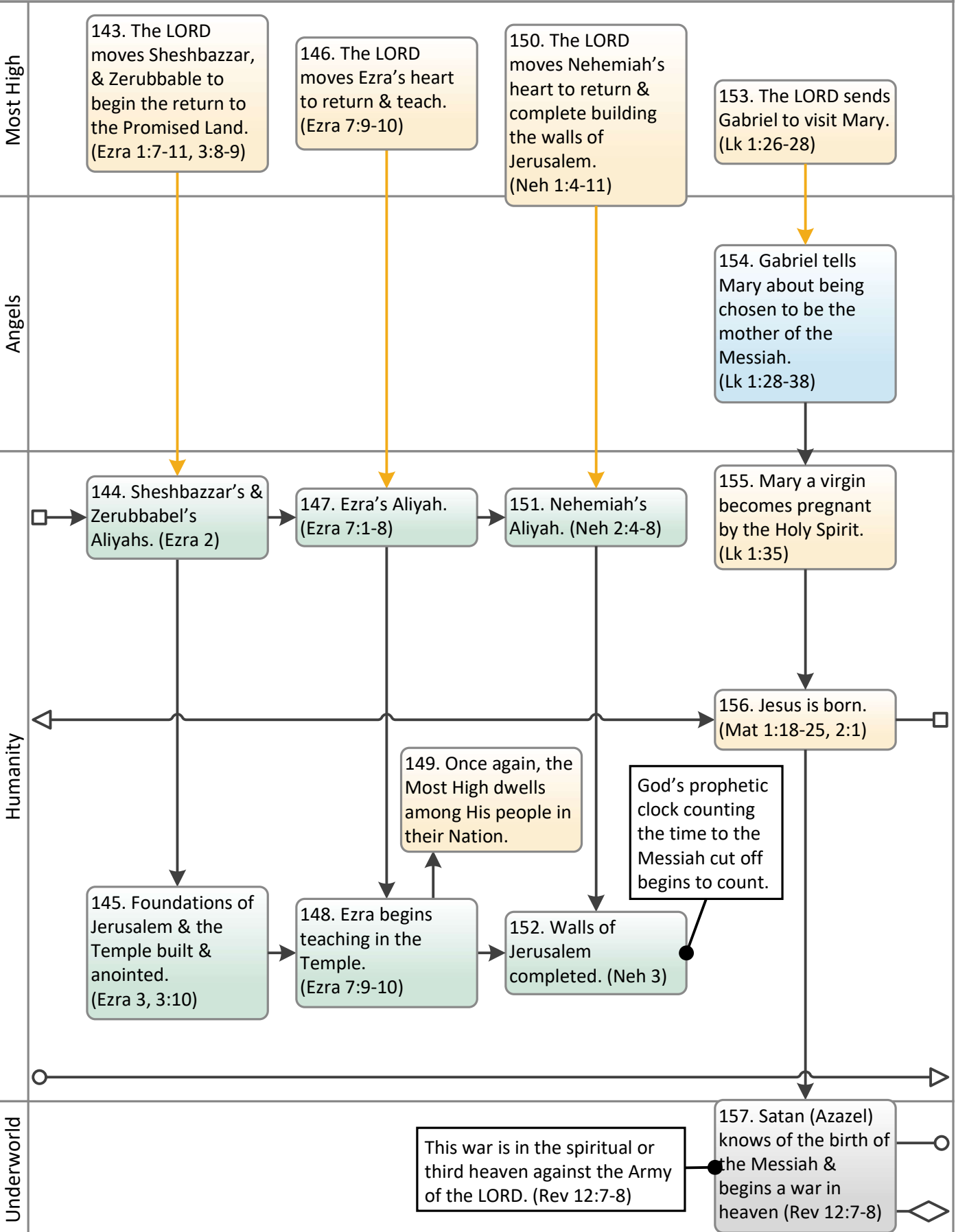
140. Daniel teaches the Magi of Babylon the teachings of the LORD. (Num 24:15-17; Jer 39:3; Dan 2:48; Dan 9:26)

Like we did with the 70 nations, the number 70 shows up again here with the '70 week' prophecy given to Daniel. God's timeline allotted to mankind is complete, & bears that number. We will see starts & stops on this prophetic clock showing up.

Jesus mentions Daniel in Mat 24:15

§2: Spiritual Events Bible Flow: Aliyah, Return to the Promised Land – Birth of Jesus

(5) Disp: Law



(5) Disp: Law

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

This war continues until the midpoint of the last week.

158. Michael & the Army of the LORD war against Satan (Azazel) in defense of heaven. (Rev 12:7-8)

165. The LORD gives the Magi a vision to return by a different way, & not return to Harrod. (Mat 2:12)

167. The LORD gives Joseph a dream to go to Egypt where Jesus, Mary, & Joseph will be safe. (Mat 2:13-15)

166. The Magi return to their homeland following the instruction of the LORD. (Mat 2:12)

159. Angels appear to shepherds singing the Glory of the Son, born on earth. (Lk 2:8-20)

168. Joseph told in a dream to flee with Mary & Jesus to Egypt until it is safe. (Mat 2:13-15)

160. Shepherds visit & worship the baby Jesus in the manger. (Lk 2:15-20)

164. The Magi visit ~ 2 year old Jesus, bestowing on Him the gifts of Gold (Kingship), Frankincense (Deity), and Myrrh (used for embalming, signifying the resurrection). (Mat 2:9b-11)

169. Without information from the Magi, Harrod kills all boys 2 years old & younger in an attempt to kill King Jesus. (Mat 2:16-18)

161. The Magi, 'Wise Men' from the East recognize the signs in the stars & travel to Jerusalem to pay homage to the Begotten Son & King of Most High. (Mat 2:1-6)

163. Harrod lies to the Magi asking they return & tell him where Jesus is so he can worship Him. (Mat 2:7-9a)

171. Demonic oppression rises throughout the earth.

162. Azazel influences King Harrod to intercept the Magi & use them to get information about the location of King Jesus.

170. With the veil between the spirit world & the physical world pulled back, harassment by Azazel & his unclean spirits increases.

(5) Disp: Law

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

172. The Father & Son manifest with Jesus on earth. One of the few times in Scripture the three persons of the Trinity are present all at once. (Mat 3:13-17)

As Christians we normally focus on the story of Jesus, His ministry with humanity, & the work on the cross. But if we pay attention to the spiritual implications of the events we can see where Jesus is also playing an incredible game of strategy with the spiritual enemies of the LORD. While Satan (Azazel) has been condemned from when he fell, & the unclean spirits have been sentenced to destruction due to their evil character, the LORD now removes the administrative Sons of God from their authority over the Nations – which is ultimately undone by Christ Jesus work on the cross.

180. Satan (Azazel) & the gods of Nations are provoked by the spiritual implications of Jesus ministry. His actions send clear messages to them that their time is coming to an end.

173. Jesus is baptized by John the Baptist. A manifestation of the Father, Son, & Holy Spirit occurs. (Mat 3:13-17)

This sends a clear message to the powers of darkness that Jesus will be the faithful Israelite. Where they failed, He will succeed.

174. Jesus fasts in the desert (wilderness, i.e., dominion of Azazel) for 40 days, replicating the 40 years Israel spent in the wilderness. (Mat 4:1-17)

Satan (Azazel) has authority to give the Nations, confirming that the fallen sons of God (sons of disobedience in Eph 2:2) are under his dominion, as are the Nations which he offers to Jesus.

176. Jesus is tempted by Satan at the end of His 40 days of fasting.

In this & other examples we see that Jesus is taking back cosmic geography.

175. Satan (Azazel) offers Jesus all the nations, if Jesus will only bow down & worship him. (Mat 4:8-11; Eph 2:2)

177. Ministry of Jesus.

179. Jesus encounters 'Legion' who has control of a man living in the caves. These demons address Him as 'Jesus, Son of the Most High God' in verse 7. They also confirm they know of the coming time of their destruction. (Mk 5:1-20)

178. Unclean spirits also recognize Jesus.

Judgement Against the lesser gods in Rebellion

(5) Disp: Law

Most High

183. The Trinity manifests at the Mount of Transfiguration, likely Mount Hermon. (Lk 9:28-36)

The location is a provocation to the enemy, connecting dots for us, & underscoring that Jesus is here to delegitimize the enemy & take back the nations.

Angels

182. The gods of nations do not misunderstand this message from Jesus, that the end of their authority over the Nations is near.

187. Satan (Azazel) & the sons of God would have taken this for what it was, a call to war.

185. Mount Hermon, second rebellion meeting spot of the sons of God. (1 En 6)

189. The enemy knows the prophecy & that Jesus is the Messiah, come to destroy them.

Humanity

181. Jesus sends out the 70 apostles (Lk 10:1-12, 17-20), a clear provocation to the 70 lesser gods of Nations & their (now) leader Satan (Azazel). (Gen 10; Ps 82)

184. Jesus provokes His enemies by revealing His Glory at Mount Hermon (Lk 9:28-36).

188. Jesus rides into Jerusalem fulfilling prophecy. (Mat 21:1-11)

186. Jesus tells Peter the He will build His church on this rock at the foot of Mount Herman where the large rock, cave, & temple of Baal (later Zeus) was located. (Mat 16:18)

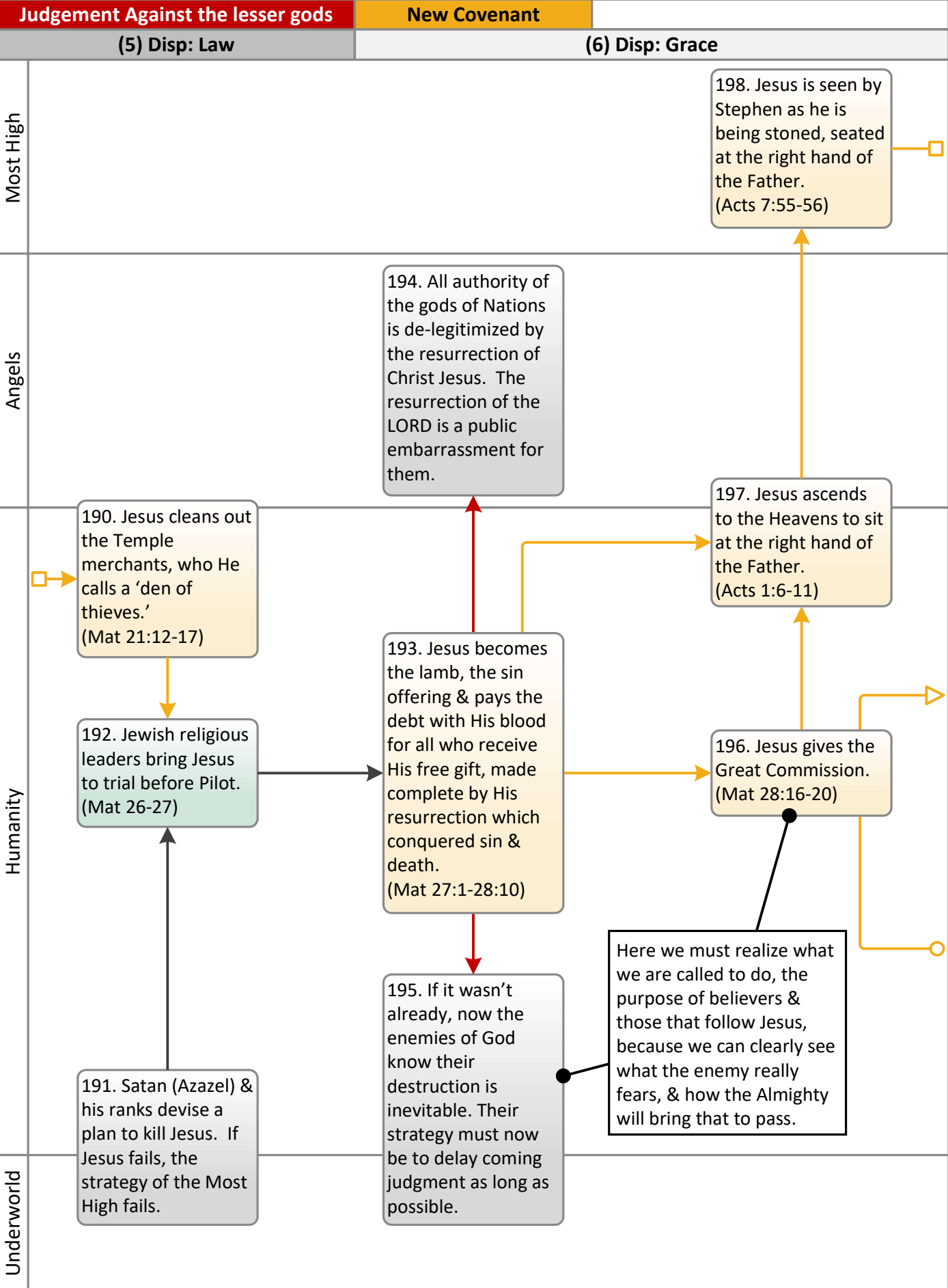
Whether it is 70 or 72 misses the point. The LORD is drawing a comparison to the prophetic relevance of 70 (or 72) [complete disinherited] nations.

Given the location & the original language, many believe Jesus was saying, 'His church [the church of Jesus] would \*give\* Azazel (Baal) a beating.

Underworld



§2: Spiritual Events Bible Flow: The New Covenant



(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

Compare the OT Tabernacle that moved with Israel through the wilderness for 40 years. Similarly, in the New Covenant we have the presence of the LORD dwelling within us as we move throughout the 'world that hated Him first' as Jesus taught us. But with His authority within us, we are able to move as sacred ground in alignment with Him.

199. The LORD dispatches the Holy Spirit. (Acts 2:1-13)

200. The Holy Spirit is the Paraclete Jesus said He would send. (Jn 15:26-27)

201. The Holy Spirit comes on the day of Pentecost to permanently live with believers. (Acts 2:1-13)

202. The Holy Spirit bonds to believers as their life force to God. This creates the 'new man,' or the Tabernacle. (Jn 14:15-17)

203. As a Tabernacle of the LORD, the believer is Holy cosmic ground under the dominion of the Most High. (Jn 14:18-21)

204. Believers at the day of Pentecost, & ever since, receive the Holy Spirit when they accept Jesus as their Lord & Savior. (Acts 2:1-13)

This happens when we are saved. Our salvation is not based on works.

The presence of the Holy Spirit is essential to the believer, a reality confirmed by cosmic geography. Without the Holy Spirit, we are in enemy territory. Humanity's ability to operate in partnership with the Almighty requires this direct connection to the Holy Spirit of the Most High.

205. The job of every believer is to partner with the LORD as His ambassadors here on earth. Our mission today is the fulfilling of the Great Commission. (Mat 28:16-20; Jn 14:23-26)

This is our work. Time with the LORD, church... it is all to prepare us to do this mission.

206. Satan (Azazel) & his horde realize that the longer it takes to fulfill the Great Commission, the longer they survive. That is their goal.

(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

212. Through the Holy Spirit the Father & Son provide prophetic revelations to believers. (Jn 14:26)

208. Great harassment & chaos come upon governments & groups, even the church itself, by the rulers, authorities, & powers (the lesser gods) to disrupt the Great Commission. (Eph 6:12)

It isn't that corporate harassment is only fulfilled by fallen angels, & individual harassment is only by unclean spirits. Harassment occurs in a complex way by the spirits over this age of current darkness.

207. The Holy Spirit powers the Great Commission. (Mat 28:16-20; Jn 14:23-26)

209. All the functions of the church support this mission.

211. God partners with individuals to find & save the elect.

214. Revelations of the return of King Jesus in Scripture include the conditions of the world just before the return of King Jesus. (Jn 14:26)

215. The forces of darkness know the Scripture, & the prophecy, & their judgements. The NT confirms prophecies in the OT.

216. Satan (Azazel) & his forces quicken their pace because they know their time is short. (Rev 12:12)

210. Great harassment comes to individuals from demons (the unclean spirits). The goal is to inhibit participation of believers & blind the hearts of non-believers.

217. The condition of the world 2,000 years from Christ reveals a desperation by the enemy. (Dan 7:9-12)

The Coming Day of the LORD is Near (Zeph 1:4)

(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

**Note: Condition of the World**

- Creation groans (Rom 8:19-23)  
global warming, intensified weather, earthquakes...
- Signs in the sun, moon, & stars (Lk 21:25-26; Joel 2:30-31)  
blood moons on consecutive sukkot, pass over 2014-2015
- Rising demonism (1Tim 4:1-6; Mat 7:15-23)  
degradation of Godly values & the institution of worldly values
- Civil decay of government (Dan 2:27-45)  
global political environment tense and contentious
- Conflict between capital & labor, rampant fraud (James 5:1-6)
- global economic, trade, supply, & market issues; fraud at all time highs

Angels

**Note: Time Line**

- Parable of the Good Samaritan (Lk 10:35)  
a denarius is a day's wage  
Jesus says He will return on the third day
- For Yahweh, 1,000 years is like a day (2 Pet 3:8)  
It's been 2,000 years since Jesus & the New Covenant
- Birth pains signal beginning of the end (2 Chron 15:4-6; Mat 24:4-8; Is 19:2)  
Balfour Declaration, WW1, WW2...
- The born one: Israel (2 Chron 20:3-4; Joel 1:14)  
Israel becomes a Nation end of the 2<sup>nd</sup> day; 1948 prepared for 3<sup>rd</sup> day
- Age of Gentiles over when Israel recaptures [old city] of Jerusalem (Lk 21:24)  
this happened in the final hours of the Six Day War in 1967
- When Israel is living securely as a nation (Zeph 2:1-2)  
Israel is a secure nation, remarkable given its size & location
- When Israel has no shame [Messianic longing] (Jer 3:2-3; Zeph 2:1-2)  
Jews have said Israeli culture has followed Europe, culture without God
- This generation (~ 80 yrs.) will not pass away before the end (Is 66:7; Lk 21:29)
- Israel was born in 1948. Add 80 years to get 2028
- Isaiah 66:7 prophesied that this is the sign of the season
- In Luke 21:29 Jesus prophesied the fig tree putting forth it's shoots
- the literal generation shall not pass away until the fulfilling of the Word

Humanity

**Note: Condition of Humanity**

- Major / global travel (Dan 12:4)  
planes, trains, & automobiles – an advent of the last 120 years
- False teachers (Eph 5:11; 2 Cor 6:14-18; 2 Tim 3:5-9)  
religion of science, atheism, false religions, & false 'Christian' teachers
- An unthinking world (2 Tim 3:4b-7)  
people have lost interest in learning & critical thinking
- Knowledge shall increase (Dan 12:4)  
internet, global telephony, Smartphones, computer networks
- Those who call good evil & evil good (Is 5:20-21)  
"post truth" culture, "my truth," "my feelings / reality"
- People who are lovers of themselves (2 Tim 3:1-5; Judg 17:6; Prov 21:2)  
people who define their value by likes, followers, trending, etc.

Underworld

§2: Spiritual Events Bible Flow: The Last Week Begins

Signals Beginning

The Last Week

(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

322. Through the Holy Spirit, the LORD brings His Two Witnesses to find the elect. (Rev 11:1-14)

Angels

287. The lesser gods lead an attack on Israel, influencing the leaders of their nations to a war on Israel. (Ezk 38:15-16)

Humanity

288. The Nations surrounding Israel corporately attack under the leadership of Persia (modern day Iran) & in partnership with Magog (modern day Russia). (Ezk 38:15-16)

293. The Most High defends Israel from the attacking Nations. It takes 7 years to bury the destruction. (Ezk 38:17-23, 39:1-6)

323. The Two Witnesses, the two olive trees, the Messianic Jews & Gentile believers minister the Gospel of Jesus Christ. (Deut 19:15-21; Rev 11:3-6; Zech 4:1-3, 11-14)

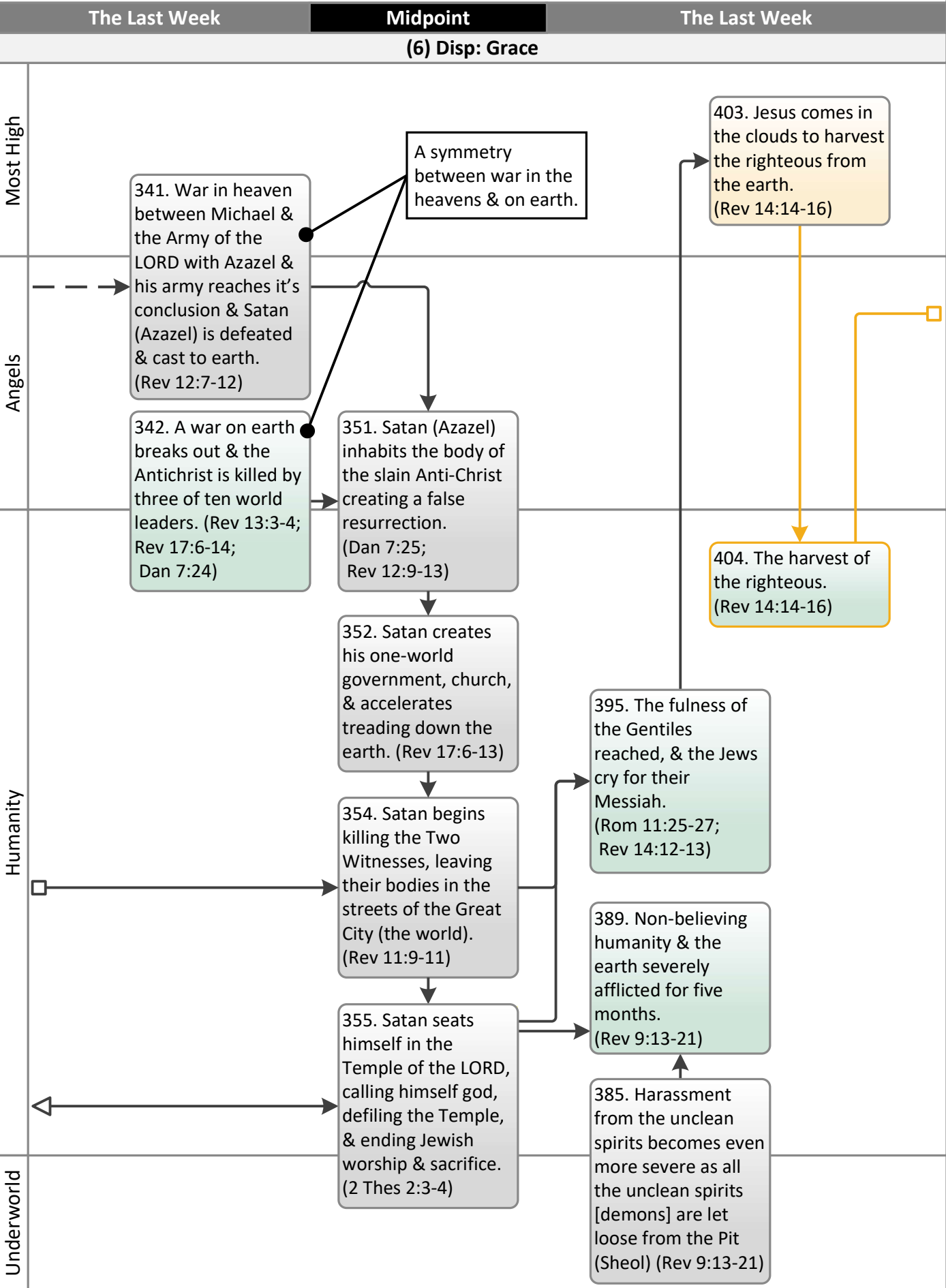
Underworld

338. The Anti-Christ identifies himself by brokering the prophesied 7-year peace treaty between Israel & it's enemies. (Dan 9:27)

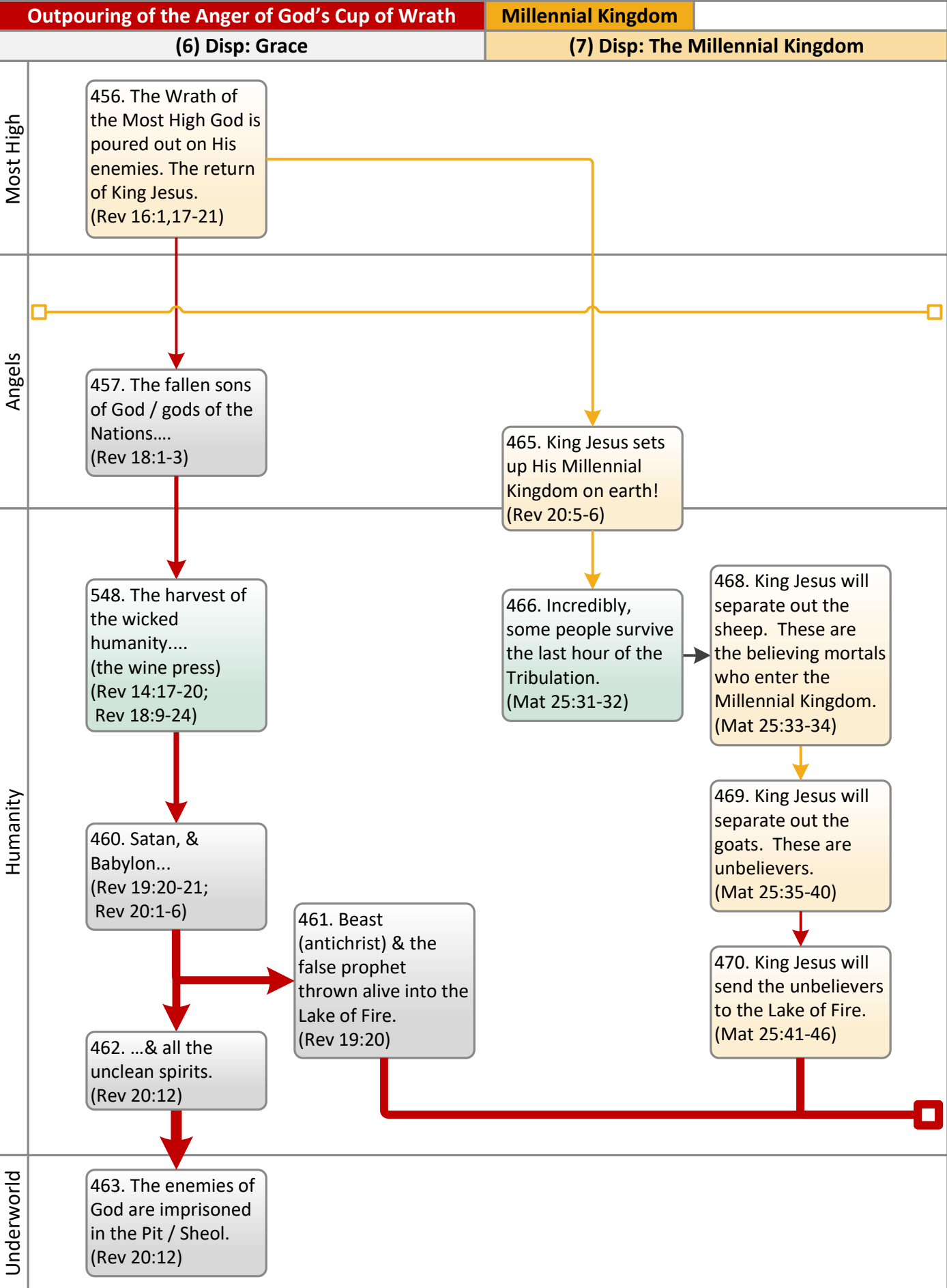
339. The Jews are allowed to rebuild the Temple & resume Temple sacrifice. (Is 66:1)

By comparison, the LORD calls His church "those who are humble with contrite spirits." (Is 66:2) In other words, the time of the Temple in this sense is over, yet in Judaism they are still working to get back to the Dispensation of the Law.

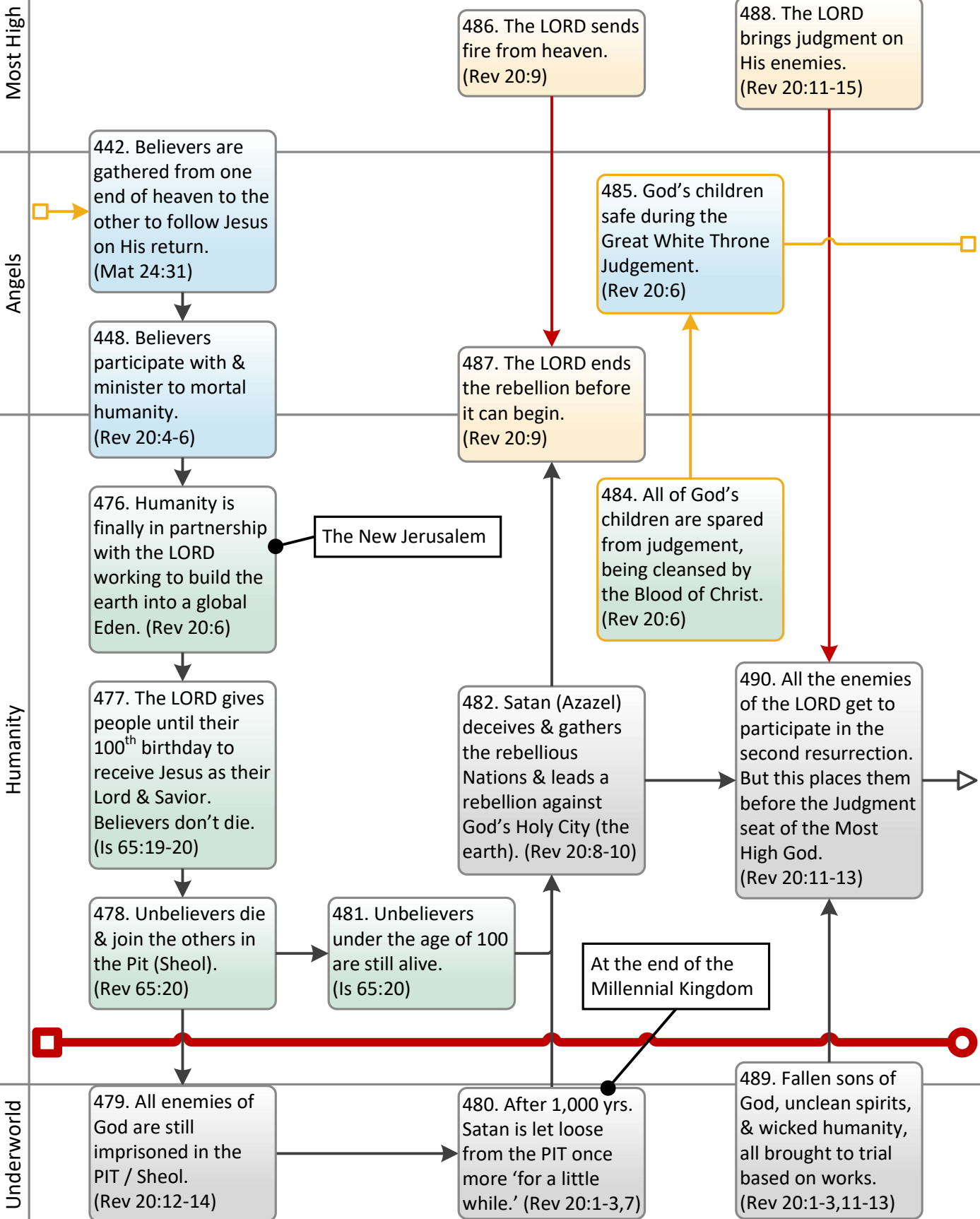
§2: Spiritual Events Bible Flow: The Last Week



§2: Spiritual Events Bible Flow: Cup of Wrath – Millennial Kingdom



(7) Disp: The Millennial Kingdom

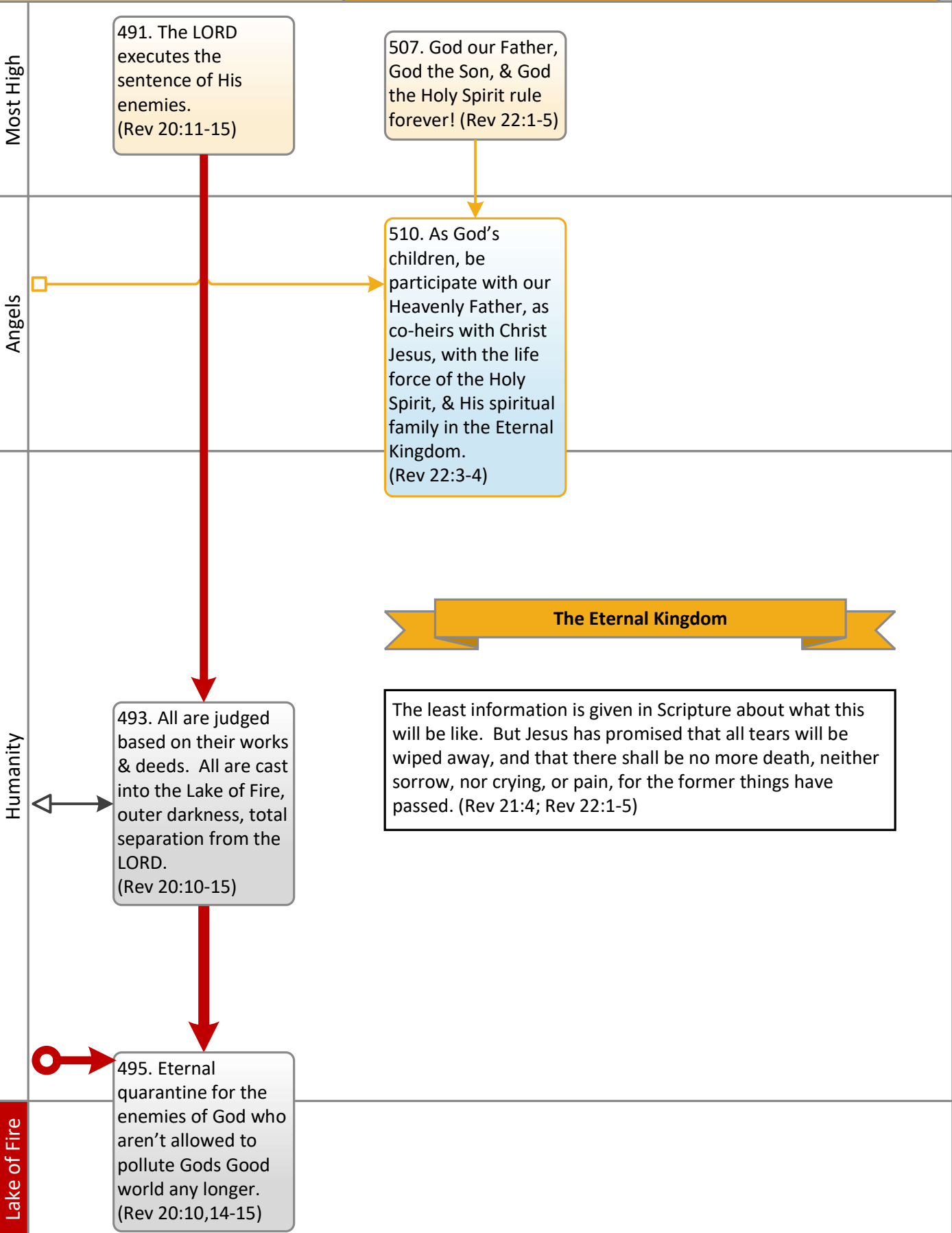




**The Great White Throne Judgement**

**(7) Disp: The Millennial Kingdom**

**(8) Disp: The Eternal Kingdom**





## Section 3

### The Trinity

“For I know the plans I have for you, declares the LORD, plans for welfare and not for evil, to give you a future and a hope. Then you will call upon me and come and pray to me, and I will hear you. You will seek me and find me, when you seek me with all your heart. I will be found by you, declares the LORD.”

The Most High God  
Jeremiah 29:11-14

Image

3b

Names for the Personalities of the Trinity

§3: The Trinity: Names for the Personalities of the Trinity

Name Meaning

The Father

The Son

The Holy Spirit

Beginning & Eternal God

Elohay Kedem (Beginning, Deut 33:27)

El Olam (Eternity, Gen 21:33)

Alpha & Omega (Rev 22:13)

Eternal Spirit (Heb 9:14)

Spirit of the Father (Mat 10:20)

Faithful God

El HaNe'eman (Deut 7:9)

Faithful & True (Rev 19:11)

Free Gift

Indescribable Gift (2 Cor 9:15)

Free Spirit (Ps 51:12)

Glory of God

Spirit of Glory (1 Pt 4:14)

God is with us

Immanu El (Is 7:14)

Immanuel (Is 7:14)

God of Forgiveness

Elohay Selichot (Neh 9:17)

Spirit of Grace (Zech 12:10, Heb 10:29)

God of gods

Elohay Elohim (Deut 10:17)

King of kings (Rev 17:14)

God of Heights / Heavens

Elohay Marom (Heights, Mica 6:6)

El HaShamayim (Heavens, Ps 136:26)

Elah Sh'maya V'Arah (Heaven & Earth, Ezra 5:11)

God of Israel

El Yisrael (Ps 68:35)

Elah Yisrael (Ezra 5:1)

God of Jerusalem

Elah Yerush'lem (Ezra 7:19)

God of Justice

Elohay Mishpat (Is 30:18)

Judge (Acts 10:42)

Spirit of Burning (Is 4:4)

God of Knowledge

El De'ot (1 Sam 2:3)

Spirit of Understanding (Is 11:2)

Spirit of Knowledge (Is 11:2)

God of my Praise

Elohay Tehilati (Ps 109:1)

This is not intended to be an exhaustive list. But it is more than most followers of Jesus know, so this should get you started.

God of my Salvation	Elohay Yishi (Ps 18:46)	El Yeshuati (Is 12:2)	Savior (Lk 2:11) (Job 19:25)	Deliverer (1 Ths 1:10)(Jn 1:41)	One Who Sets Free (Jn 8:36)	Spirit of Christ (Rom 8:9, 1 Pt 1:11)
God of my Strength	Elohay Mauzi (Gen 1:1, Ps 43:2)	Mighty One (Is 60:16)	Almighty One (Rev 1:8)	Mighty God (Is 9:6)	Spirit of Might (Is 11:2)	Breath of the Almighty (Job 33:4)
God of Truth	El Emet (Ps 31:6)	Truth (John 8:32)	Spirit of Truth (Jn 14:17, 15:26)			
God Who is Near	Elohay Miikarov (Jer 23:23)					
Great God	El HaGadol (Deut 10:17)					
He grafts us to God's Family	Bridegroom (Mat 9:15)					
He Who beat sin & death	Risen Lord (1 Cor 5:3-4)	Resurrection & the Life (Jn 11:25)	Victorious One (Rev 3:21)			
Holy God	Elohim Kedoshim (Lev 19:2, Jos 24:19)	El HaKadosh (Is 5:16)	Spirit of Holiness (Rom 1:4)	Good Spirit (Neh 9:20, Ps 143:10)	Holy Spirit (Ps 51:11, Lk 11:13)	
I Am Who I Am	YHVH (Ex 3:14-15)		I AM (Jn 8:56-59; Rom 10:9,13; Joel 2:32)			
Inspiration of our awe	Spirit of the Fear of the LORD (Is 11:2)	YHVH: Tetragrammaton 4 letters, pronounced Yahweh or Jehova				
Knowing Spirit	Spirit of Prophecy (Rev 19:10)	Spirit of Revelation (Eph 1:17)	Spirit of Wisdom (Is 11:2, Eph 1:17)			
Lion of Judah	Lion of the Tribe of Judah (Rev 5:5)					
Living God	Elohim Chaiyim (Jer 10:10)					

### §3: The Trinity: Names for the Personalities of the Trinity

LORD God	YHVH Elohim (Gen 2:4)	Spirit of God (Gen 1:2, 1 Cor 2:11, Job 33:4)	Spirit of the Lord (Is 11:2, Acts 5:9)	Spirit of the Lord God (Is 61:1)
Most High God	EI Elyon (Gen 14:18)	Lord of All (Phil 2:9-11)	Supreme Creator Over All (1 Cor 1:16-17)	Authority (Mat 28:18)
Only Way to the Father	The Door (Jn 10:9)	The Way (Jn 14:6)	True Vine (Jn 15:1)	
Our Leader	Good Shepherd (Jn 10:11)	Light of the World (Jn 8:12)		
Our Measure, Example	Chief Cornerstone (Ps 118:22)	Rock (1 Cor 10:4)	Bread of Life (Jn 6:35)	The Word (Jn 1:1)
Our Spiritual Leader	Great High Priest (Heb 4:14)	Head of the Church (Eph 1:22)	Prophet (Mk 6:4)	
Paraclete, Advocate	Advocate (1 Jn 2:1)	Advocate (Jn 14:16 AMP)		
Paraclete, Comforter	Comforter (Jn 14:16, 15:26 AMP)			
Paraclete, Helper	Holy Servant (Acts 4:29-30)	Helper (Jn 14:16 AMP)		
Paraclete, Intercessor	Mediator (1 Tim 2:5)	Intercessor (Jn 14:16 AMP)		
Paraclete, The Seven Personalities	Seven Spirits of God (Rev 1:4)			
Paraclete, Standby	Standby (Jn 14:16 AMP)			
Paraclete, Strengthener	Strengthener (Jn 14:16 AMP)			Power of the Highest (Lk 1:35)

Paraclete, Counselor

Wonderful Counselor (Is 9:6)

Counselor (Jn 14:16 AMP)

Sacrifice for our sin

Lamb of God (Jn 1:29)

Sacrifice for our sins (1 John 4:10)

Son of God

Beloved Son of God (Mat 3:17)

Son of the Most High (Lk 1:32)

Spirit of the Son (Gal 4:6)

Son of Man

Son of Man (Lk 19:10)

Spirit that adopts us

Spirit of Adoption (Rom 8:15)

The Christ

Jesus (Mat 1:1 & all over NT)

The LORD Makes Holy

YHVH M'kadesh (Ez 37:28)

Author & Perfector of our faith (Heb 12:2)

The LORD my Banner

YHVH Nissi (Ex 17:15)

The LORD of Peace

YHVH Shalom (Jud 6:24)

Prince of Peace (Is 9:6, Eph 2:14)

The LORD our Maker

YHVH O'saynu (Ps 95:6)

Spirit of Life (Rom 8:2, Rev 11:11)

The LORD our Righteousness

YHVH Tzidkaynu (Jer 33:16)

The LORD Who Sees / Provides

YHVH Yireh (Gen 22:14)

Our Hope (1 Tim 1:1)

The One God

El Ehad (Mal 2:10)

The Spirit (Mat 4:1, Jn 3:6, Tim 4:1)



Image

3c

LORD's Redemption Plan

§3: The Trinity: The LORD's Redemption Plan

Edenic Covenant

(1) Disp: Innocence

12a. The LORD creates mankind as His imagers in the Garden of Eden & gives the Edenic Covenant 'be fruitful & multiple & subdue the earth.' (Gen :28)

12b. The LORD partners with humanity, helping us grow through challenges as His children, His human family on the earth.

13a. Adam & Eve in the Garden of Eden, the Mountain of God. (Gen 2:7-24; 3 En 5:1)

13b. Humanity partners with the LORD to fulfill the Edenic covenant.

The LORD's plan at the beginning was a good plan. But this was interrupted by rebellions that created a terrible mess.

Falls

Satan's Fall

9a. Satan (Azazel) rejects the LORD of Light (2 En 18:3) fall to pride – his '5 I wills'. (Is 14:12-17, Ezk 28:11-19)

First Fall

15a. Adam & Eve both eat the fruit. Mortality & fear enter humanity. (Gen 3:6-13)

Second Fall

33a. The sons of God descend (Gen 6:1-4) & rape women.

Judgements

9b. Satan (Azazel) is cast into the wilderness & placed over all things sin & death. (Lev 16:6-10)

9b. Satan (Azazel) leads other sons of God (angels) into rebellion.

15b. Adam & Eve are evicted from the Garden of Eden.

15c. The serpent to be destroyed by the woman's offspring.

15d. Satan steals dominion of the earth from Adam.

New Covenant

193a. Jesus becomes the lamb, the sin offering & pays the debt with His blood for all who receive His free gift, made complete by His resurrection which conquered sin & death. (Mat 27-28)

193b. Jesus removes the authority of Satan to bring suit against those who receive Jesus.

193c. Jesus removes Satan's dominion stolen from Adam.

Millennial Kingdom

Eternal Kingdom

12c. The LORD partners with humanity, helping us grow through challenges as His children, His human family on the earth.

86e. Humanity that receives Jesus as their Lord & Savior are reconciled to God, made part of His family. (Rev 20:4-6)

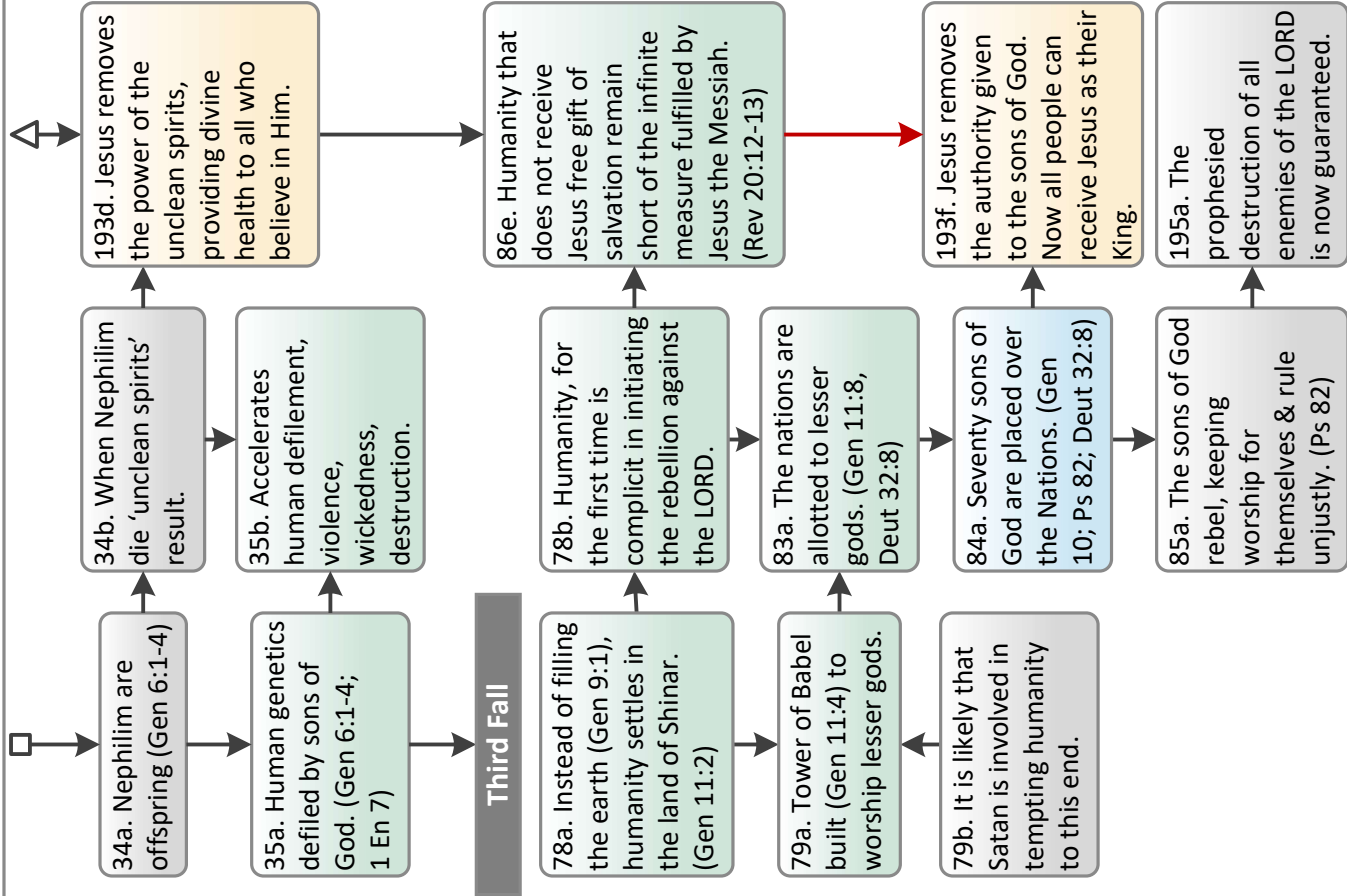
The plan, in the end results in God's original good plan.

Satan's fall, & the three falls of humanity pollute God's good world.

The LORD teaches Satan a lesson in futility, giving him what he wants, a chance to rule. But this won't be successful.

The LORD teaches humanity a lesson through the dispensations, giving opportunities to be successful on our own. Each time humanity drifts into apostasy, judgement comes, & our desperate need for the LORD is made abundantly clear.

The LORD's plan from the beginning is one of Divine Salvation for all that choose Him. With the price paid by Christ Jesus, the stage is set for final judgement & cleansing of God's Good world.



## The LORD's Redemption Plan

### **Plan A**

In Genesis 1-2 we come to understand that the LORD made the heavens & the earth, all the creatures & plants, & made a good world. He created mankind & put them in Eden, described as the Garden & Mountain of God. The LORD made covenant with Adam, the only condition of which was to not eat from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good & Evil. From this meeting place, humanity was given a mission, to go & be fruitful & multiple & subdue the earth (Gen 1:28).

The plan was on track. The LORD wanted a human family. He gave them an environment to live, with a goal to accomplish, & struggles to work through as they develop toward accomplishing that goal.

As the imagers of the LORD, people were created to interact with each other with His Character. The LORD created time so that their character could begin from a position of innocence, & develop over time into His Character. It's a plan for partnership. It's why being productive & having meaningful purpose driven work resonates with humanity.

### **Initial Cracks**

It is difficult to understand why an angel would reject the Lord of Light. Then again, we also covet things like power, money, success, fame, sex... worship. So maybe it isn't so hard to understand.

Regardless, Azazel (Satan) thought himself enough to be 'like the Most High God' (Is 14:12-17; Ezk 28:11-19). With that initial desire, 'Satan's five I wills,' rebellion happened. Now a root of evil that was against the LORD existed in God's good world.

Something that isn't answered by any text is when angels were made. We know that they were made, & given the binding of Satan to the atmospheric heaven of this planet, it stands to reason that they are subject to time. In fact, time, as it applies to the fallen angels makes sense because 'he knows his time is short.' (Rev 12:12)

The implications of this are that Azazel & the other angels, while having access to the heavens & learning things from beyond this terrestrial environment, are still operating in a limited understanding compared to the LORD. Also, it explains their lustful desire for women, which ultimately drove God's good world into a state of rebellion. Note that Hebrews 13:2 tells us how some have entertained angels & been unaware. The point is that some angels are made in kind similar to humans. The LORD has not given unto them wives, but choosing sins like pride & lust for strange flesh explain motivations for their rebellion.

### **Breaking the Good World**

I've called out in several places that I lean on apocryphal, & second period texts known to the authors of the NT. This is true of the Books of Enoch, which is referenced by both Jude & Peter, & Enoch who is mentioned by Jesus. My reason for this isn't to change anything about the Bible or doctrine, but to help explain what happened. How did we get where we are, who is responsible, & how do we go forward?

Genesis 3:1 brings our focus to the serpent. Revelation 12:9 connects the great dragon, the age-old serpent, who is called the devil & Satan who 'deceives & seduces the entire inhabited world.' I understand the interpretation where this is a singular individual. I also think NT Satan is the OT Azazel (Lev 16:6-10) who is the leader of the bunch of rebels, & the subject of Isaiah 14:12-17 & Ezekiel 28:11-19.

### §3: The Trinity: The LORD's Redemption Plan

In Christian teaching we are comfortable saying things like 'Satan fell with a third of the angels.' This is a loose interpretation based only on Revelation 12:4, where a third of the stars (angels) are cast down from the sky by the tail of the dragon. Frankly, I don't think the number or percentage of angels is all that important. What is more critical is that there are angels in rebellion, that they have a leader, & they have been up to no good for a very long time – speaking in the human sense of time – millennia. How long & how many seems to be a superfluous point. The key point is that they are the root cause.

#### **Initial Defilements of Humanity**

As the writer of Enoch details, the first fall of humanity began in Eden. Azazel (Satan) & a couple of his angels saw Eve, & possibly the daughters of Eve. Eve is important because she is the wife of Adam, & Adam has dominion of the earth. Remember that Azazel (Satan) has already had his fall to pride at this point, so acting in rebellion he would have desired both dominion & lusted after strange flesh (which would have been women to him).

In the OT we see language for sex like, "2 he [Judah] took her and went in to her, 3 and she conceived and bore a son" (Gen 38:2-3). From the LORD's perspective, this is a covenant event between a man & his wife. This is also described as "he lay with her" (Gen 19:33-35). Genesis 6:2 reads, "the sons of God saw that the daughters of man were attractive. And they took as their wives any they chose." There's not a lot of consent on the part of the women here, as they are taken by the angels. This is rape.

#### **Rebellions Continue**

Regardless of whether the rape of women happened in the first fall, it is a Biblical fact in the second. Moreover, the deception of the first isn't mentioned directly in the second, but the teaching from angels about sins, mysteries of the heavens, the use for things in the environment, & the making of implements of war are evident in the wickedness & violence that ensues. It becomes so bad, that the LORD determines to blot it all out, saving only Noah & his family from the flood.

After the flood we see a petition by Noah in the book of Jubilees, & what explains how the unclean spirits (demons) were placed under the command of Azazel (Satan).

In the third rebellion humanity rejects the LORD, so He disinherits them completely. Then when the administrative sons of God (not yet in rebellion) are placed over humanity ultimately rebel, the nations of people are held hostage. At some point these now rebellious sons of God (angels) are placed under the command of Azazel (Satan) as well. Note that the original Watchers (angels) have been locked up in 'chains of gloomy darkness' by this point (Jude 1:6; 2 Pt 2:4).

The LORD saves a remnant for Himself in Abraham. But as the story of Israel goes, they are not the example the LORD was wanting. Of course, the LORD knew this, & planned for the Messiah to come through this line. Nonetheless, we arrive at the time of Jesus with a world that has been ravaged by evil.

#### **Salvation Established – Time for Grace**

The accomplishment at the cross satisfies the covenants, removes the authority of the rebellious spirits, & allows a path to Salvation for all who receive Jesus as their Lord & Savior. Then Jesus ascends, but says He is coming back.

Now, it's been almost 2,000 years since the ascension, so... what about that coming back stuff? The Bible gives us answers that enable us to determine the season of His return. Many theologians sort of brush this off with 'well, you never really know' kind of answers. While we can't know the day or time, we can know the season. I am among those who believe the return will be a literal event that is coming soon. That will require another study.

#### **Still on Plan A**

The next judgement will remove evil from this world. King Jesus will set up His Millennial Kingdom here on earth. This will teach humanity how to rule according to the justice of the LORD.

It will also be a time when the earth will be subdued, bringing back the mission of the Edenic Covenant.

Followers of Jesus, & those faithful to the LORD prior to Jesus, will participate in the first resurrection of the saints. We will all participate in the Millennial Kingdom, serving with our King Jesus now on His Throne in Jerusalem!

At the end of the Millennial Kingdom comes the Great White Throne Judgement, with the judgement of all those who did not participate in the first resurrection, or who rejected King Jesus during the Millennial Kingdom & died. The purpose for the containment in the Pit until the second resurrection is to allow for free will & free choice in the Millennial Kingdom. At its end, the second resurrection of the wicked will resurrect all in the Pit so they can be judged by their works, which no individual will pass, & all will be cast into the Lake of Fire, the eternal death, in order to quarantine them from God's good world. The one He wanted. The one with a human family in partnership with Him.

Image

3d

Daniel's 70 Weeks

# Daniel's Prophecy of Seventy Weeks

## The Prophecy

### Period 1: 7 Weeks

### Period 2: 62 Weeks

### New Covenant

### Period 3: 1 Week

(5) Disp: Law

(6) Disp: Grace

#### Period 1: 7 Weeks

134a. Babylonians & Nebuchadnezzar take Judah into exile. (2 Kgs 24:10-17) ~ 587 / 586 B.C. Ptolemy ~ 423 B.C. Rabbinic

135a. Daniel prays to the LORD for help with the visions given to him. (Dan 9:1-19)

136a. The LORD hears & dispatches Gabriel to help Daniel. (Dan 10:10-13)

137a. Gabriel is restrained by the Prince of Persia for 21 days, but Michael the Archangel comes to help. (Dan 10:12-14)

142a. Judah's exile fulfilled. Cyrus made King. (Ezra 1:1-4) ~ 539 B.C. Pty

142b. Cyrus decree issued. (Ezra 1:1-4) ~ 538 B.C. Pty 450 B.C. Bib

143a. The LORD moves Sheshbazzar, & Zerubbable to return. (Ezra 1:7-11, 3:8-9)

144a. Sheshbazzar & Zerubbabel's Aliyas. (Ezra 2) ~ 538 B.C. Pty 450 B.C. Bib

145a. Foundations of Jerusalem & the Temple built & anointed. (Ezra 3) ~ 535 B.C. Pty ~ 448 B.C. Bib

145b. Building stops. (Ezra 4:24) ~ 530 - 520 B.C. Pty ~ 443 - 436 B.C. Bib

150a. The LORD moves Nehemiah's heart to return & complete building the walls of Jerusalem. (Neh 1:4-11)

151a. Nehemiah's Aliyah. (Neh 2:4-8, Dan 9:25-26) ~ 453 B.C. Pty 401 B.C. Bib

The clock keeps counting, going from the first period immediately into the second.

#### Period 2: 62 Weeks

152a. Walls of Jerusalem completed. (Neh 3) ~ 453 B.C. Pty 401 B.C. Bib

152b. Alexander the Great conquers Judea ~ 332 B.C. Pty

152h. Maccabean period of revolts & autonomy continues. ~ 167 - 141 B.C. Pty

152i. Roman Emperor Pompey captures Judea. ~ 67 B.C. Pty

152j. Herod defeats Persian invaders with Roman help, appointed Governor of Galilee. ~ 67 B.C. Ptolemy

156a. Jesus is born. (Mat 1) ~ 3 B.C. Pty ~ 1 B.C. Bib

164a. The Magi visit ~ 2 year old Jesus. (Mat 2:9b-11) ~ 1 B.C. Ptolemy ~ 1 A.D. Biblical

196a. Jesus gives the Great Commission. (Mat 28:16-20)

196b. The mission given by King Jesus to His followers is to go out & witness the Gospel of Christ Jesus to the people of all nations.

224a. The Anti-Christ identifies himself by brokering the prophesied 7-year peace treaty between Israel & it's enemies. (Dan 9:27)

196c. When all who will believe do receive Jesus as their Lord & Savior, this constitutes the fullness of the Gentiles coming in to the Kingdom of God. (Rom 11:25-27; Rev 14:12-13; Dan 12:1; Zech 12:9-14; Hosea 5:14-6:3)

239. The Wrath of the Most High God is poured out on His enemies. The return of King Jesus. (Rev 16:1,17-21)





138a. Gabriel reaches Daniel & explains the interpretation of the visions. (Dan 9:20-23)

139a. Gabriel gives the proper interpretation of the 70 week timeline, the beasts, etc. (Dan 9:24-12:13)

140a. Daniel teaches the Magi of Babylon the teachings of the LORD. (Num 24:15-17; Jer 39:3 Dan 2:48; Dan 9:26)

Pty: Ptolemy  
Bib: Biblical



145c. Building starts again. (Ezra 5:2, 6:6-12, Hag 1:14) ~ 520 - 519 B.C. Pty ~ 433 - 432 B.C. Bib

145d. Temple complete. (Ezra 6:13-15) ~ 517 - 516 B.C. Pty ~ 430 - 429 B.C. Bib

145e. Esther made Queen in Babylon. (Esther 2:15-18) ~ 479 B.C. Pty

146a. The LORD moves Ezra's heart to return & teach. (Ezra 7:9-10)

147a. Ezra's Aliyah. (Ezra 7:1-8) ~ 458 B.C. Ptolemy

148a. Ezra begins teaching in the Temple. (Ezra 7:9-10) ~ 458 B.C. Pty



Next Col.



152c. Seleucid kings regain control of Judea ~ 201 B.C. Ptolemy

152d. Antiochus Epiphanes, the Seleucid (Greek) king dedicates the Jewish Temple to the Greek Gods. ~ 167 B.C. Ptolemy

152e. This pagan dedication incites the Maccabean revolts. ~ 167 B.C. Ptolemy

152f. Jews regain control of the Jewish Temple & rededicate it to the LORD. ~ 165 B.C. Ptolemy

152g. Eight-day rededication of the Temple & miracle commemorated by the menorah. (1 Mac 4:36-4:59 CEB) ~ 165 B.C. Ptolemy 148 B.C. Biblical



Next Col.



193. Jesus becomes the lamb, the sin offering & pays the debt with His blood for all who receive His free gift. (Mat 27-28) ~ 33 A.D.

God's prophetic clock stops counting to make time for the Gentiles to come in. This is the Dispensation of Grace, or the Church Age that we are currently in. Blood moons on Pesach (Passover) & Sukkot (Booths) 33 - 34 A.D. mark the year of the Crucifixion.



244. The enemies of God are imprisoned in the Pit / Sheol. (Rev 20:12)

245. The beast & the false prophet thrown in the Lake of Fire. (Rev 19:20)

The LORD's Prophetic Clock



Starts Counting



Stops Counting



Is Done Counting

## Daniel's Prophecy of Seventy Weeks

### Addressing the Dates

You may have noticed the variance in dates between those marked Pty (Ptolemy) & Bib (Biblical). Reading the Doc Beshore Study Bible (pg. 59-60) I learned about the issues with Ptolemy's Chronology. Ptolemy lived from 70 - 161 A.D. He was considered a genius who created the Ptolemaic System of Astronomy & was one of the founders of Geography. As part of his work, he compiled history into the most reasonable account possible given what he had to work with. But even he knew that the dates didn't all align. A further disconcerting thought is that these are the dates used by much of academia, which means that 'reliable' dates are perhaps not so reliable.

There are a few reasons why the Ptolemy timeline is so incongruent. First, most dates were given in the context to a king. 'In the second year of this king' or the 'tenth year of that king.' Second, the victor in war writes the history, so with many kings, many wars, and many events, the lines start to blur further. Third, the record keeping was distributed with each nation keeping its own records. As the Doc Beshore Study Bible points out, the timeline itself is contradicted by the national traditions of Persia, the Jews, the testimony of Josephus, and "the conflicting evidence of such well authenticated events as the Conference of Solon with Croesus, and the flight of Themistocles to the court of Artaxerxes Longimanus, which made the accepted [Ptolemy] Chronology impossible" (Doc Beshore Study Bible, pg. 59-60).

To really familiarize myself with the issue & the dates, I took up the challenge to try & reconcile the dates. I've found that one of the most frustrating things is to attempt to make the dates ascribed to many of these events reconcile between the Ptolemy & Biblical accounts. In the boxes here I've mostly included both dates. My disposition is to take the issue head on, rather than attempt to hide it. Moreover, I think this will assist you in your own wrestling with this issue.

### My Conclusion About the Dates

Before realizing Jesus as my Lord & Savior, I approached this issue from a worldly perspective. Issues like the date of the birth of Christ Jesus bothered me. Because I was ignorant regarding the issues of the Ptolemy Chronology, I assumed them to be correct. Of course, no professor in college ever mentioned these issues – although I didn't take a course where that would have been a key talking point. However, perhaps it is a foundational issue for every course that deals with these dates.

Regardless, I've found for myself that all dates B.C. are questionable at best, likely inaccurate, & completely false at worst.

Quick sidebar context for the Jewish holidays:

- Pesach [Passover] (<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Passover>)
  - Also called Pesach, is a major Jewish holiday that celebrates the exodus of the Israelites from slavery in Egypt, which occurs on the 15th day of the Hebrew month of Nisan, the first month of Aviv, or spring.
  - Passover is traditionally celebrated in the Land of Israel for seven days and for eight days among many Jews in the Diaspora, based on the concept of yom tov sheni shel galuyot.
- Sukkot [Booths] (<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sukkot>)
  - The names used in the Torah are *Chag HaAsif*, translated to 'Festival of Ingathering' or 'Harvest Festival', and *Chag HaSukkot*, translated to 'Festival of Booths'.
  - It is a Torah-commanded holiday celebrated for seven days from the 15th day of the month of Tishrei. It is one of the Three Pilgrimage Festivals on which those Israelites who could were commanded to make a pilgrimage to the Temple at Jerusalem.

### §3: The Trinity: Daniel's Prophecy of Seventy Weeks

Based on accounts like Josephus, & surrounding events we can have more confidence in like the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 A.D., I've come to think that the crucifixion of the Lord Jesus was between 30 & 33 A.D. I lean toward 33 A.D. in part because 33 – 34 A.D. was a year of blood moons on the Jewish holidays of Pesach (Passover) & Sukkot (Booths). The dates in the boxes reflect math that calculates into antiquity based on the prophecy given to Daniel from the LORD. I find this to be far more reliable than Ptolemy's Chronology as it relates to this specific timeline.

Even so, the consensus about the historical Jesus that even includes non-believers, gives me further confidence in the date span of 30 – 33 A.D. for the crucifixion. Because the Scripture stands on the fulfillment of so many prophecies that have nothing to do with this timeline, I have no personal doubt in its validity as God-Breathed in its entirety.

#### **Biblical Math**

I mark the following dates, which are reflected in the boxes.

33 A.D.      Crucifixion & resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ  
                 Blood moons on Pesach (Passover) & Sukkot (Booths) 33 – 34 A.D.

- 434    62 weeks of 7 years, or  $62 \times 7 = 434$  years

401 B.C.      The Walls of Jerusalem were completed.

- 49    7 weeks of 7 years, or  $7 \times 7 = 49$  years

450 B.C.      The Cyrus Edict is given

- less than a year

451 B.C.      Cyrus made King

About one hundred years prior to Cyrus, Isaiah 44:28-45 prophesies that king Cyrus will be the anointed king of the LORD who will send forth the decree to let the Israelites return to Israel.

Thus, counting forward, we arrive at the Crucifixion, the clock stops, & we enter a time where the LORD has made His truth known for all to receive it.

#### **Timeline & Dates**

In order to decipher the Daniel Prophecy, the following are necessary:

- To the LORD, each day is a year (2 Pt 3:8).
- Prophecy of Seventy Weeks (Dan 9:24-27).
- One week is seven years (Dan 9:24-27; 12:5-13; Lev 25:8).

#### **Daniel 9:25:**

69-week span: Know therefore & understand that from the going out of the word to restore & build Jerusalem to the coming of an anointed one, a prince [[Jesus](#)].

Period 1: there shall be seven weeks [[49 years](#)].

Period 2: Then for sixty-two weeks [[434 years](#)] it [Jerusalem] shall be built again with squares & moat, but in a troubled time.

### §3: The Trinity: Daniel's Prophecy of Seventy Weeks

#### **Daniel 9:26:**

Clock Stops: And after the sixty-two weeks [434 years], an anointed one [Jesus] shall be cut off & shall have nothing.

Destruction of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Temple in 70 AD: And the people of the prince [followers of Jesus] who is to come shall destroy the city & the sanctuary.

Destruction of Jerusalem, flood of blood: It's end shall come with a flood...

Christian dispensation: ...and to the end there shall be war. Desolations are decreed.

#### **Daniel 9:27:**

Period 3: And he [the antichrist] shall make a strong covenant with many for one week...

Last week midpoint: ...and for half of the week he [the antichrist] shall put an end to sacrifice & offering.

Satan's 3<sup>rd</sup> Abode: And on the wing of abominations shall come one who makes desolate [Satan cast down from heaven].

70 weeks end: until the decreed end is poured out [the full cup of God's wrath] on the desolator [Satan].

#### **Why Is This Prophecy Important?**

There are many prophecies in the Bible, why focus on this one? I believe the answer to that question is embedded in the time we live. The more I study eschatology (the study of end times) the more I am convinced that we are curiously close to the return of King Jesus. I believe His return to be a literal event that will manifest itself in a real & physical way.

I believe that the conditions of the earth & humanity depict the season prior to the last week. I also believe that based on the overall timeline provided to us in prophecy, we are very close.

A full view of the events leading up to, & moving through the last week, requires a specific study of its own. Nonetheless, the time to reach out & evangelize the Gospel of Jesus Christ as we follow the Great Commission given by Jesus is now. Time is getting short. The enemy is desperate. Conditions will become harder, especially for followers of Jesus. A strong knowledge of the Scripture is needed within the Body of Christ.

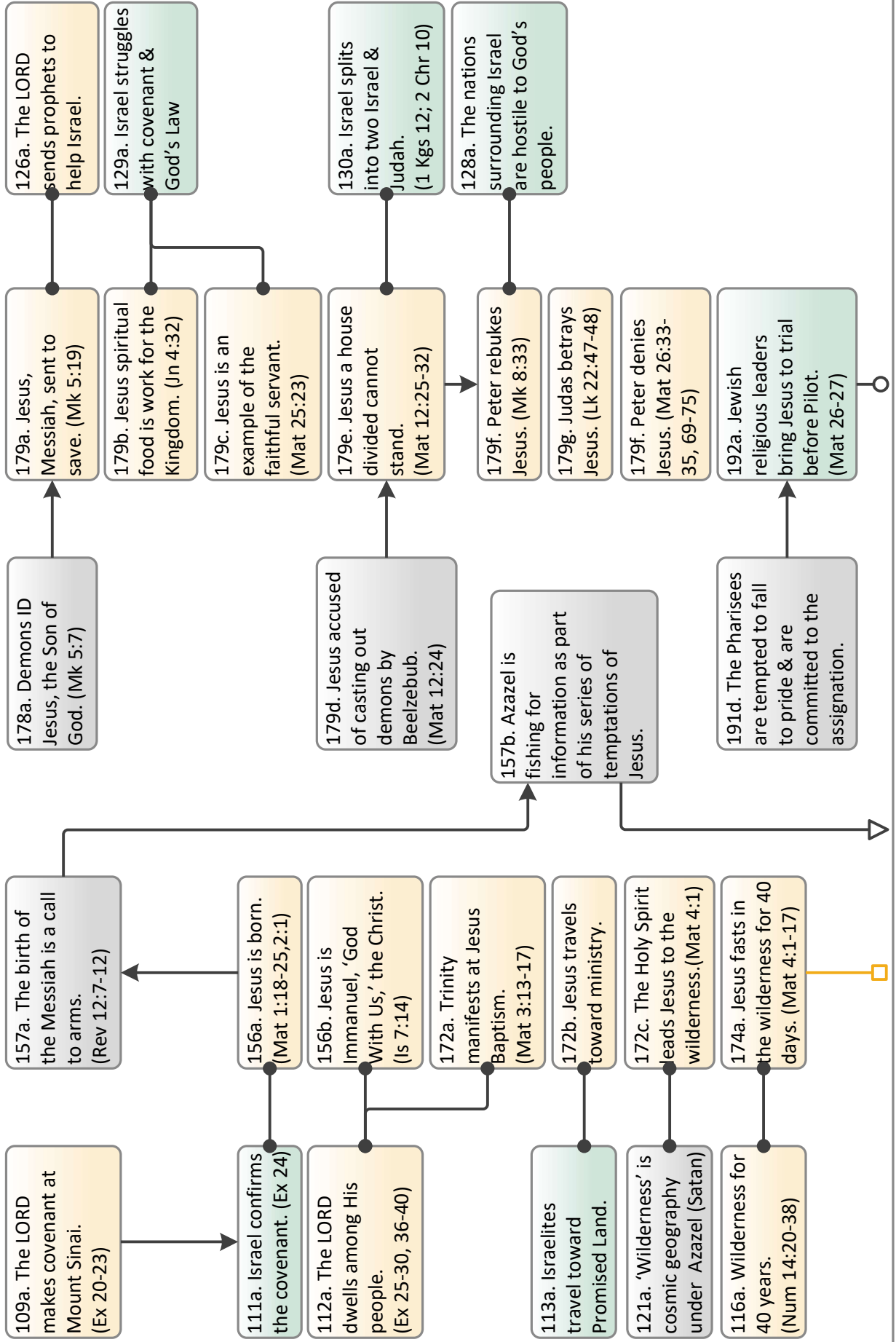
The prophecy given to Daniel outlining the Seventy Weeks of the LORD is like a map that helps us understand all of these things. Building on this, we can learn what the last week of this dispensation will look like, how to navigate that time, & be ready for when it begins.

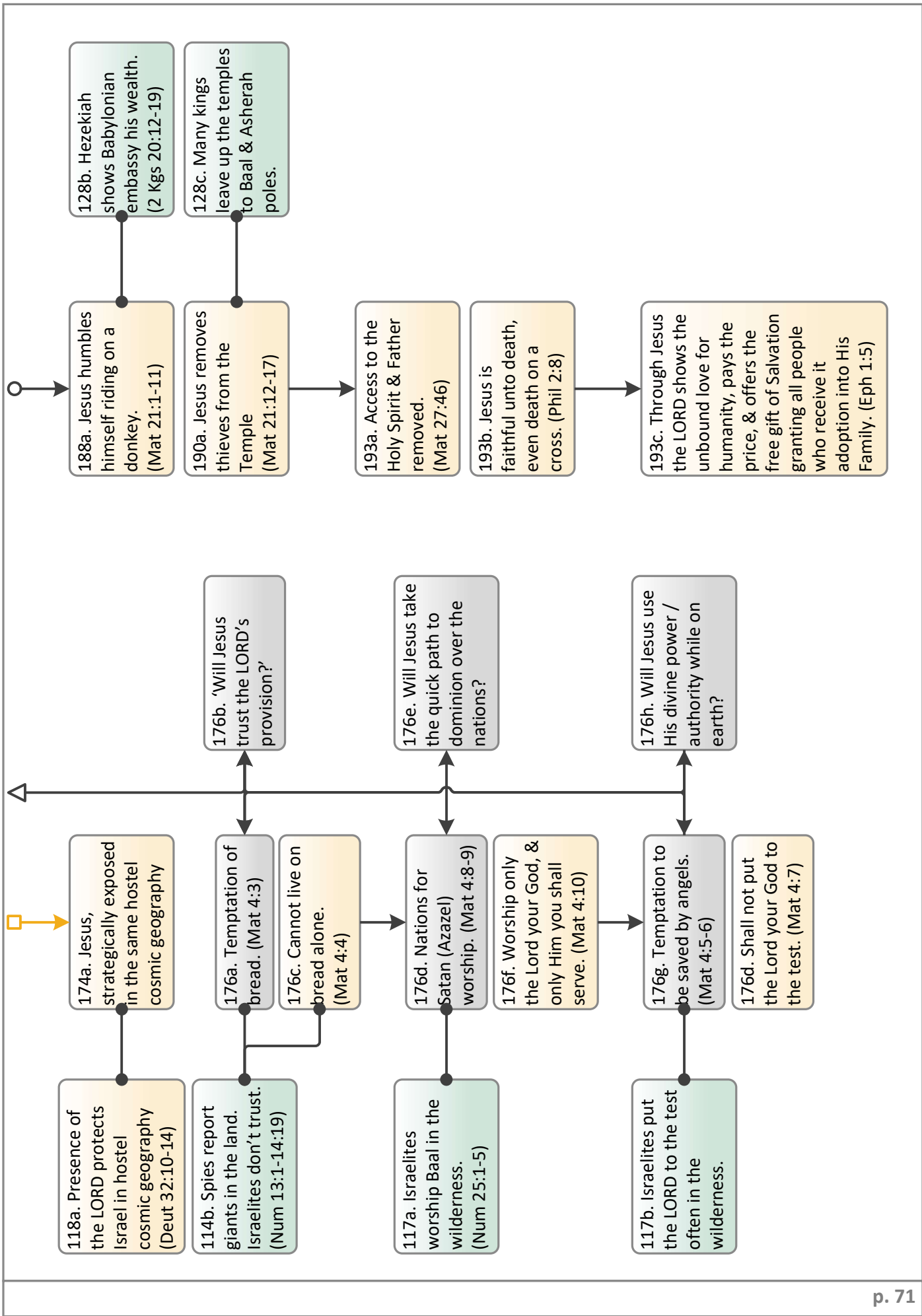
Image

3e

Jesus the Faithful Israelite

### §3: The Trinity: Jesus the Faithful Israelite





## Jesus the Faithful Israelite

### Comparison to Israel

There are definite parallels between what Israel was supposed to accomplish & what Jesus did accomplish. But to be fair, these parallels should also be something that extends into us as followers of Jesus, which is to say that drawing out these commonalities is a lesson that points at us, not inappropriate judgement that points back to the OT Israel.

Part of the Abrahamic Covenant was a promise from the LORD to bless all the nations through the line of Abraham (Gen 12:3). That the LORD was going to do that through Jesus was already the plan, but that couldn't have been known by humanity or the enemy yet. If we consider the timing of the Abrahamic covenant, none of the prophets were on the scene yet, so that information wasn't available – unless you take a careful read of the names in the Genesis 5 Genealogy for instance.

The flow in this study draws the parallels using the dotted lines. The pattern reveals itself, even if the timing & sequence have slight differences. A few examples:

- Parallels: The forty years in the wilderness for Israel are paralleled by forty days of fasting in the wilderness for Jesus.
- Asymmetries: The kings of Israel who leave up the Baal temples & Asherah poles are countered by Jesus the Good Servant cleaning out the thieves from the Temple of the LORD.
- Faithfulness: Israel struggles with the Mosaic Covenant & God's Divine Law, but Jesus lives a life through which the Law is Fulfilled.
- Service: Israel falls to pride, idolatry, & suffers as a result of their sin. But Jesus remains true to the LORD through His service & suffers on behalf of others.

While more features could be drawn out, these should be sufficient to consider how Jesus became an Israelite who demonstrated faithful service to the LORD, fulfilling the Covenant requirement.

### The Mosaic Covenant

In the study on the Covenants, you may have noticed that there are only two Covenants to date that were conditional: the Edenic & the Abrahamic.

A conditional covenant is one that requires something of humanity. An unconditional covenant is something where the LORD blesses without requiring something in return.

Given that the whole 'people in Eden' thing didn't work out all that great, you might ask, 'WHY would the LORD ever depend on any person to satisfy a covenant condition ever again!?' Looking back, we can now say that He didn't, because the LORD fulfilled the Covenant Himself by becoming the Faithful Israelite. Any thought that any person had a chance of doing this is pride. Because in our humility we can see that it needed to be the LORD Himself, made man, come to be with us, live like us, die the unblemished lamb, & resurrect to defeat sin & death, win back authority over the nations, dominion of the earth, & Salvation from the second death for all people who receive Him as their Lord & Savior.



#### **It Starts with the Bloodline**

Until Jesus, no person had ever been born without a natural father & mother. At the time the LORD made Covenant with Abraham you would suspect that the enemy identified an advantage. Since Adam, no person hasn't fallen to sin. The Mosaic Covenant only made this harder. Satisfying all 613 Laws would have been... impossible.

The LORD prophesies the virgin birth in Isaiah 7:14. That sounds crazy to us, but the LORD spoke (& continues to speak, instantiating the physical reality, the vibrations of which can be seen in sub-atomic particle physics for instance) everything into existence out of nothing, so He can certainly make this happen. Because sin follows the bloodline of the father, which is transferred at fertilization, the moment an egg becomes an embryo it already has the line of sin embedded in it. Because the birth of Jesus was of a virgin, with the fertilization by the Power of the Holy Spirit of the LORD, it allowed Jesus to go through the gestation process, be born as a person, while remaining also all God. This realizes the hypostatic union of Christ Jesus, which means He was all God & all man.

This also causes the doctrine of Gnosticism to fail. This is the idea that Jesus, by living a 'good life' became a God – & you can too. This is a deception made impossible by the reality that you have a human father & mother. In other words, you need Jesus!

#### **Development of Christ**

One of the only views into the childhood of Jesus is when He is twelve & stays behind at the Temple. Joseph & Mary find Jesus as He is asking the teachers & asking them questions, with everyone who heard being astonished at His understanding (Lk 2:46-47)! Then verse 52 reads, "and Jesus increased in wisdom and in stature and in favor with God and man" (Lk 2:52).

This is one of those short, weird, but important glimpses into the Bible. We can all relate to the academic process, because we've all gone through it. But none of us was also all God, being developed in the way Jesus was being developed, for the mission that Jesus had in front of Him.

We also see is that even as a child Jesus was obedient to the Divine Law, as demonstrated by his obedience to Joseph & Mary. We might posit that the enemy would be looking to trip Jesus up as a youth while He is more vulnerable. But even here we see Jesus exercising the Wisdom of the LORD. It's easy to say Jesus wasn't your average adult, but I think we can also say that He wasn't your average kid either.

#### **Preparation for Ministry**

We find John the Baptist out in the wilderness baptizing people in the Jordan river. I always imagine him having a really strong Dutch accent, but that was probably just the guy playing John the Baptist in my church growing up! I digress. John was not your average person, Jesus says that "among those born of women none is greater than John" (Mat 11:11). This is because this John was the final prophet sent by the LORD during the dispensation of the Law, he is the spirit of Elijah (Mat 11:13-15).

John's ministry centers on baptism. Baptism comes from the Jewish tradition of the Mikveh. The Mikveh was (& still is for current Jews) a bath used traditionally by both men & women to regain ritual purity through submersion. In Christianity, those that believe submersion baptism is a requirement pull this forward from this tradition. John the Baptist, as he was baptizing folks out in the desert in the Jordan (the river of death) wasn't following all the legalistic rules of the traditional Mikveh, which needs to be specific cubits, the right kind of water, & all sorts of stuff. To be sure, this would have ruffled the feathers of the Temple leaders of the day.

Jesus' baptism in the Jordan symbolically & prophetically points to His death & resurrection. The power of death represented by the Jordan River as Jesus was submerged takes His human life, & the resurfacing of Jesus was His becoming the Christ who conquered sin & death. As Paul teaches, our baptism is our sharing in His death & resurrection. We can learn about Paul's personal baptism in Acts 9:10-19, which didn't even involve water, meaning that our personal baptism has more to do with the condition of our heart, which is really the point.

#### **The Ministry of Jesus**

Jesus was the first Apostle, Prophet, Evangelist, Pastor, Teacher. He was awesome. He served the marginalized & the prominent – all of whom were spiritually sick. He demonstrated an example during His time, & through the God-breathed documentations of His service & teaching demonstrated an example for all times after. He laid down His life for those who did & would believe. And doing what no other could, by the long arm of the LORD He was raised bodily from the dead, conquering sin & death.

The enemy has worked hard to convince people that Jesus was 'only a good man, a good teacher, & a good prophet.' Voddie Baucham tells a story that rejects this (<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Cdtu8xleUDE> – min: 14:45 - 17:47). It is worth watching, but to paraphrase Pastor Baucham:

Do you believe that Jesus was God, the only way to Salvation, and that He is coming again? Because if you don't, then you have contradicted yourself. Jesus claimed to be God, which would make Him a liar and blasphemer if He wasn't. Since liars and blasphemers aren't good men, Jesus wouldn't be a good man. Jesus said he was "**the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except by me**" (Jn 14:6). If there is any other way to come to God apart from Jesus Christ, that means He's false teacher, and false teachers are not good teachers. Finally, Jesus prophesied that He would die, rise again, ascend to the Father, prepare a place for us, and come again and receive us unto Himself, and would judge the living and the dead. If that isn't true, then Jesus is a false prophet, which means He isn't a good prophet.

– Pastor Voddie Baucham

That Jesus was the Faithful Israelite was foundational for the entirety of the Messianic Mission. From fulfillments of Covenants to the making of the New Covenant. And truly for the rescue of each person He came with Love to save. It's everything to the LORD, & also personal to each of us. And He gives it for free. Incredible.

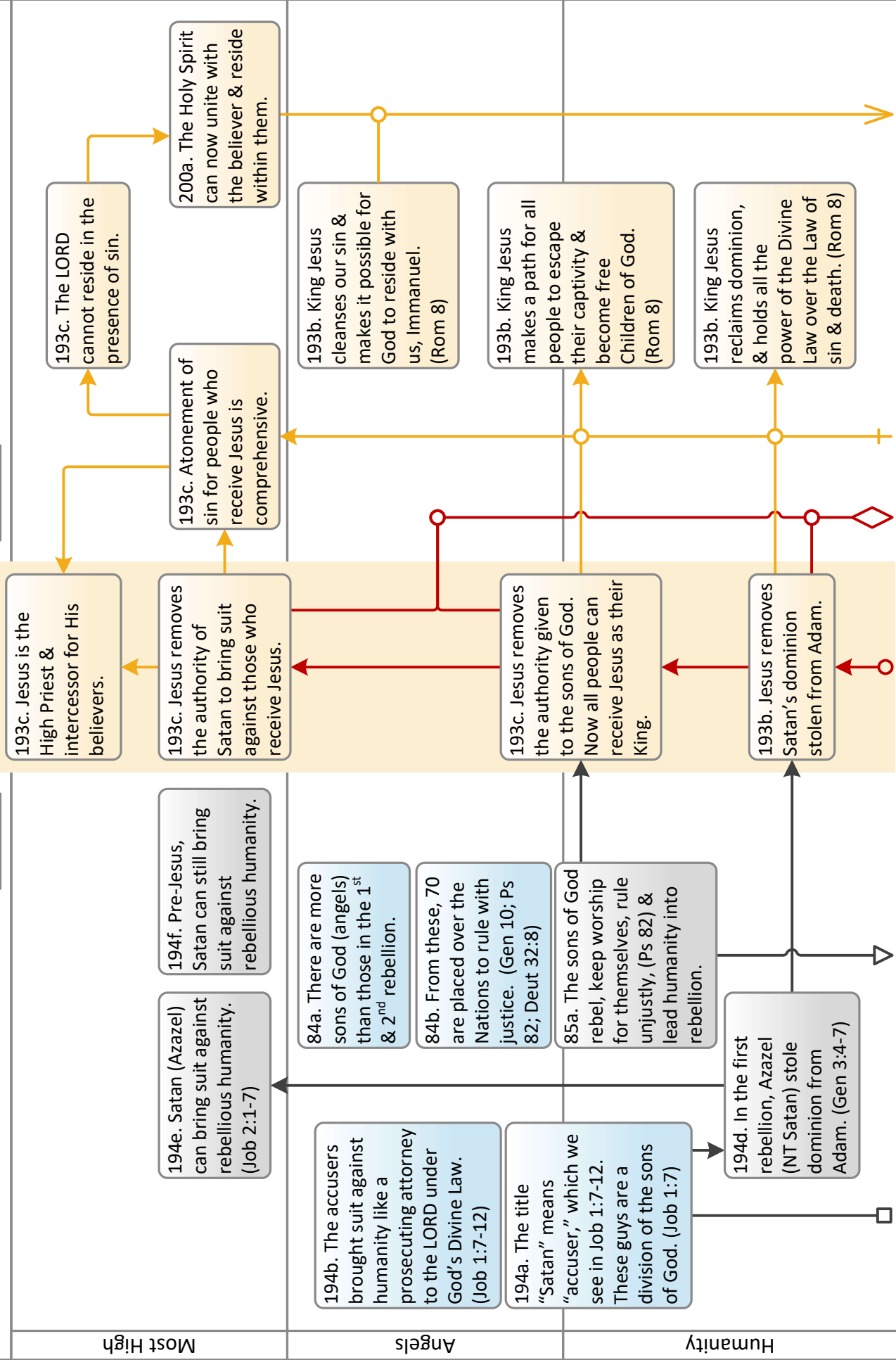
Image

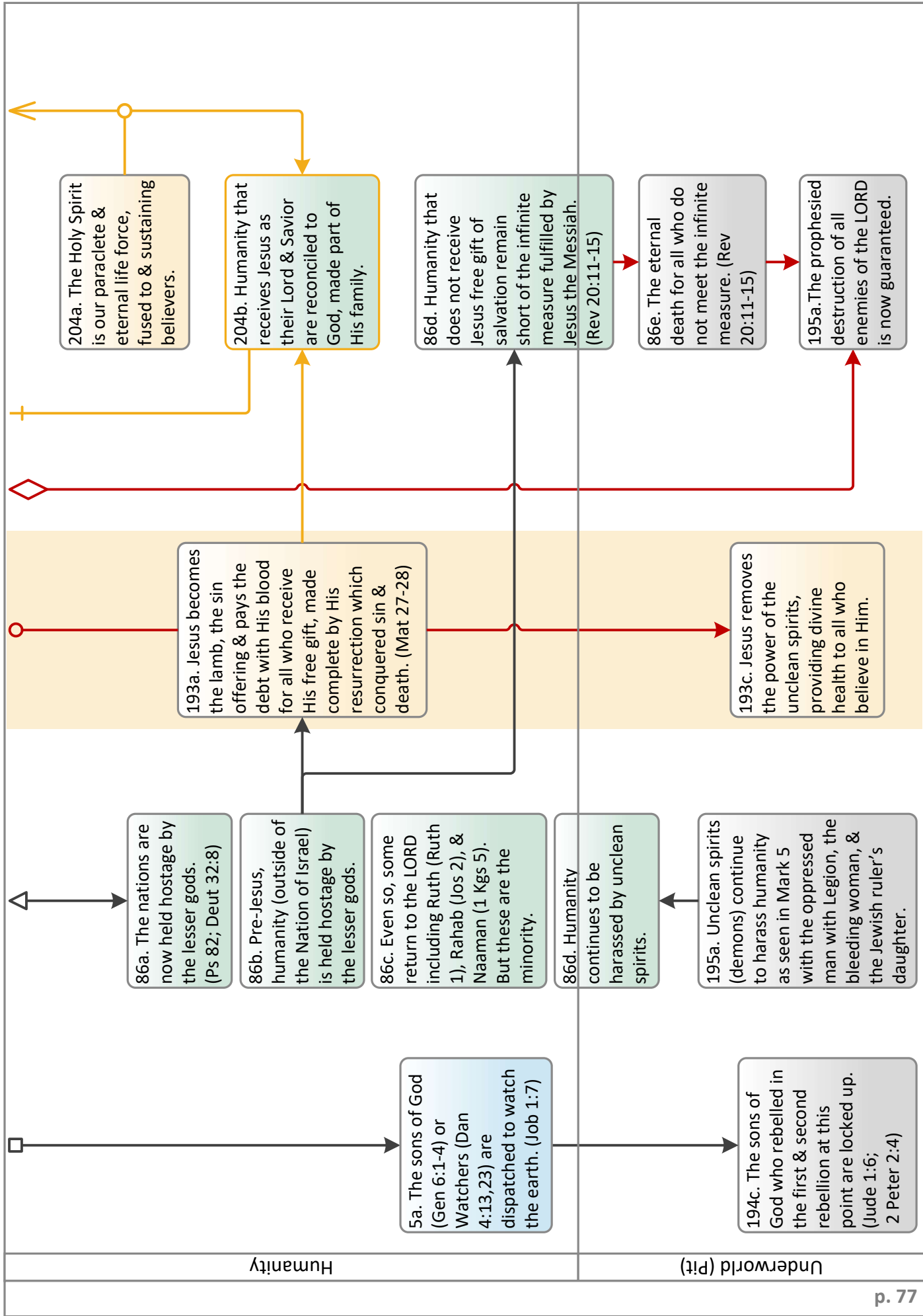
3f

Sufficiency of the Blood of Jesus

§3: The Trinity: The Sufficiency of the Blood of Jesus

The New Covenant





## The Sufficiency of the Blood of Jesus

### **Sufficiency**

On one hand, we could throw out all of this stuff about angels & demons & focus on what the Blood of Christ Jesus does for the believer. Not to diminish who we are as Children of God, & everything that comes with that. Romans 8 is an incredible chapter where Paul brings the gravity of this. More Bible teaching is available as it concerns these things.

Then there is Scripture like Ephesians 2, & 6:10-20. If there aren't enemies running around out there, why worry about the schemes of the devil (Eph 6:10-11), the rulers, authorities, & cosmic powers over the present darkness, spiritual forces of evil (vs. 12), & why bother with the full armor of God?

Some will explain these away as 'only human.' But saying that God is not Spirit is blasphemy. To call these evil spirits 'only human' diminishes the Scripture & gives a skewed view of the reality in which we live.

The Blood of Christ is called sufficient because at the cross Jesus accomplished a total & complete victory. That does include what He did for humanity, & the Salvation for every person who receives Him as Lord & Savior. But it also defeated all of the enemies of God. At a high level, this is what will be covered here.

### **Satan – Prosecuting Attorney**

Until the cross, Satan was able to make a case in the court of the Most High against everyone. We see this court in Job 1:6-12, 2:1-7. We can read about the defeat at Ai (Jos 7:10-26) because of the sin of Achan. We also read in 2 Mac 12:33-45 CEB an event where a few Jews died in battle (vs. 34) because they had charms & idols from Jamnia under their clothing (vs. 40). Judas Maccabee sends a collection to the Temple in Jerusalem as a sin offering which was a holy thought (vs. 45) because he was thinking forward to the resurrection of the dead (vs. 44).

### **Jesus – Defense Attorney**

Jesus paid the price. He covered it completely. For the person who receives the free Gift of Jesus this includes a payment for our sin. Satan has nothing to bring against the believer because the LORD won't hear it. This is why He sees us in glory, because it is His Glory! This is why all believers participate in the first resurrection, the harvest of the righteous.

The LORD allows humanity a choice. We can receive this gift if we want, or we can choose to live without Him. There are many choices that are contrary to Jesus. Other lesser gods, viewing ourselves as god, believing there is not god, or taking a position that we don't or can't know. While there is only one way to Salvation through Jesus, there are many options to eternal destruction. Everyone without Jesus gets to participate in the second resurrection reserved for the wicked. This is described as the great winepress. For godless humanity already dead, they wait in the pit, but all will eventually enter quarantine, eternal death, the Lake of Fire that is torment forever.

### **Dominion over the Nations**

The LORD's heart was broken in the third rebellion. This is the first rebellion where humanity was complicit in initiating the rebellion by choosing lesser gods to worship. So that the LORD wouldn't obliterate His imagers, He placed them under selected angels numbered from the sons of God (Ps 82; Deut 32:8). The expectation was to rule with the Justice of the Almighty. But that didn't happen. Therefore, we can understand the many gods problem, which ultimately is a problem for the many lesser gods.

After they rebelled, these gods of the nations earned the title sons of disobedience (Eph 2:1-5; Col 3:6). At some point they were assigned to Satan (Azazel) as his reports. We know this because Satan offered Jesus dominion over the nations in exchange for worship as the second temptation in the wilderness (Lk 4:5-8).

What Jesus accomplished at the cross was a legitimate & legally binding removal of this authority. Jesus the Messiah lived by the Law of the True God & laid His life down to fulfill the Law. His resurrection then was what conquered death because He was free of sin, so death could not hold Him.

With sin & death destroyed, Jesus earned the authority to extend Grace to whom He wants. This isn't left a mystery. We are told in plain language that He saves those of us who choose Him, & in return He gives the free gift of salvation. This gift requires removal of all sin, which is how followers of Jesus are saved from the second death. The enemy was left with nothing to bring against the followers of Christ Jesus. Effectively, Jesus posted an 'eviction notice' on their door. At His return, their time will be up.

#### **Harassment by Unclean Spirits (Demons)**

Harassment by unclean spirits had been happening for a long time. Associated with illness, it comes in many forms. This could be a physical illness along the spectrum from the common cold to a malignant cancer. It could be what we call a mental illness, from the average headache to something like multiple personality disorder or perhaps schizophrenia. Of course, the character of unclean spirits is to torment humanity, but I can only imagine that their ideal is when the afflicted blame the LORD for the ailment.

I do understand & believe in supernatural healings. I also understand & believe that the LORD allows things in our life which helps us develop through the struggle. Paul, who wrote much of the NT, pleaded with the LORD to remove the thorn in his side. Yet he tells us that he had received a 'messenger from Satan' to torment him so that he wouldn't be conceited (2 Cor 12:6-10). I fight the spirit of diabetes, from which I continue to learn discipline & patience among other things. But I won't tell you 'I am a diabetic' but that 'I fight diabetes.' My identity is not in the ailment, but in Christ Jesus. The common vernacular of today attributes our identity into these things. It is Satanic to think this & as believers we need to be careful about what we speak over ourselves.

In Scripture we read that even the disciples of Jesus had trouble casting out demons. They ask Jesus, "19b why couldn't we throw the demon out?" Jesus explains, "20a **Because you have little faith.**" He goes on to say, "20b **I assure you that if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you could say to this mountain, 'go from here to there,' and it will go. There will be nothing that you can't do**" (Mat 17:19-20). But as the instruction of the LORD goes, Jesus tells us, "**...don't rejoice because the spirits submit to you. Rejoice instead that your names are written in heaven**" (Lk 10:20).

This is hard from a perspective of healing, because it challenges us to think about our level of faith. Thus, going back to Paul who pleaded with the LORD, what the Almighty does & does not do is not something we manipulate. But know rather that we have been saved by His Grace, & that we will receive life everlasting in the Glory & Presence of the LORD. The unclean spirits & their rebellious leader will suffer eternal death.

Note that spiritual 'breakthrough' does happen as the Power of the LORD moves through us. He has equipped us with His Power, but we are dependent on Him to move. There is no amount of songs we sing or human will, or any other thing that will manipulate the LORD. He moves thorough our humble & contrite that are bold in faith. Be aware of both sides of this, & of teachers who take the growth of our spiritual power through Christ Jesus & His Holy Spirit & twisting it into a something with gnostic undertones as if it is we do of our own will. Our faith & power is His faith & power within us, remain humble brothers & sisters.

#### **Why are these guys still running around?**

It is hard in our humanity to understand why a child would receive a terminal illness, why a 'good person' would suffer a painful death, or why we ourselves would be afflicted with anything. The philosophical argument goes something like this: If God is all knowing, all loving, & all powerful then He would know about our problems, love us enough to take them away, & would have the power to do it. Since that isn't the case, then God must not exist.

My first philosophy professor was an atheist, & presented this argument in class. I didn't know enough to identify this as a simple view of God. It fails to see that the LORD is a loving Father who wants His children to grow up. He knows it will take us time, & that He can't do it for us. We are all given the ability to choose Him or not. But while we are here on this earth in our mortal bodies, we do not live in a safe environment. The LORD makes this point clear to Job (Job 38-41)

The point of our mortal life is to choose Him. Once we choose Him, the purpose of our life becomes to serve Him as we serve His Kingdom.

For the masses of people who have not chosen Jesus as their Lord & Savior, the LORD is longsuffering, waiting for those who will choose Him to make that choice. If there is a choice, there must be an alternative. Because of the rebellions, God's good world has been defiled into a terrible condition. But the fulfillment of all those to receive the LORD will be the fullness of the Gentiles (Rom 11:25).

While we deal with the current age of darkness, because of what Christ Jesus accomplished at the cross, we can rest assured that this will not last forever. While the LORD waits for His children to enter His Kingdom, we put up with the last days of the enemy. When the last of the Gentiles comes in, Israel will reawaken, King Jesus will return, & the full wrath of God that has been stored up for His enemies will be poured out.



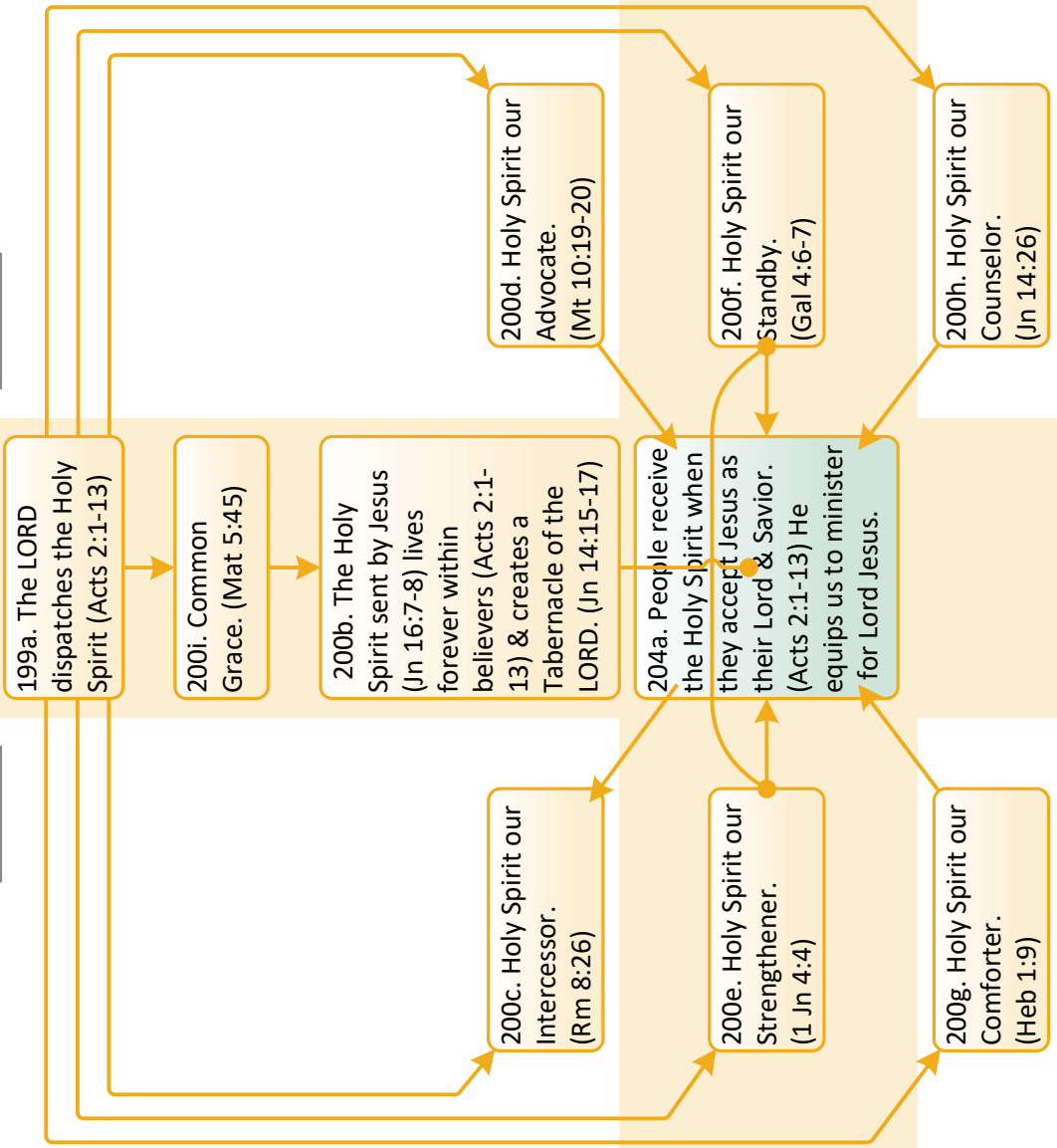
Image

3g

The Seven Personalities of the Holy Spirit

### §3: The Trinity: The Seven Personalities of the Holy Spirit

#### The New Covenant



## The Seven Personalities of the Holy Spirit

### Overview

It's a bit of a challenge to define perfection, or reduce an infinite God into a few categorical dimensions. Names in the language of the LORD relate to an identity, & the LORD is incomprehensible in His identities.

The Names used in Scripture for God are many. To understand these identities, I've included another study that gives a sampling of the Names for the Personalities of the Trinity. This study focuses specifically on the personalities described to us by John in his Gospel.

If you turn to John 14 in your Bible it probably reads similar like mine where Jesus teaches us: **“But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he will teach you all things and bring to your remembrance all that I have said to you.”** (Jn 14:26)

Instead of the word Helper, used in the ESV & some others, you might have 'Advocate,' 'Comforter,' or maybe 'Counselor.' The pain point being surfaced here is the inadequacy of the English language to convey some of the deeper meanings behind the Scripture. This is why some people are adamant about which translation of the Bible they use, & why seminary students study languages like ancient Hebrew & Greek.

John wrote his Gospel in Greek. The word he used here was *paraklētos* (or Paraclete) (Strong's G3588). If you have internet access you can go to [www.biblegateway.com](http://www.biblegateway.com) & look this verse up using an amplified version if you don't have a printed version. The amplified versions don't read as smooth, but the words in parenthesis are helpful in pulling meaning from the original language texts. All good scripture is rooted in the original language of the author, coming as close to the God-breathed meaning as we can get. This is why your pastor may spend time teaching with original language words – which is exactly what we will do in this study.

The word *paraklētos* embeds a number of roles into it. These roles or personalities help us understand the ways in which the Holy Spirit might function within believers. Here is the verse again in the amplified:

**“But the Helper (Comforter, Advocate, Intercessor-Counselor, Strengtheners, Standby), the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name [in My place, to represent Me & act on My behalf], He will teach you all things. And He will help you remember everything that I have told you”** (Jn 14:26 AMP).

### Introduction to the Personalities

Let's pull out these personalities: Comforter, Advocate, Intercessor-Counselor, Strengtheners, Standby.

You might ask yourself how we get to seven personalities. Here is how I've thought about it, but I encourage you to meditate on the Scripture for yourself.

### Helper

Helper is a 'catch all' that serves as a foundation for the others. If the Holy Spirit is doing anything for you, He is helping you. The Holy Spirit has been described as a gentleman, which as a metaphor should convey the ultimate level of chivalry.

I also think of the Helper role as a sort of 'connective tissue' between the various ways that may be happening concurrently (Col 3:14-17). Of course, the struggle to understand the Holy Spirit of the Most High God in any sort of way will probably be lackluster compared to how amazing He really is, but that is how I account for the 'Helper' role.

### §3: The Trinity: The Seven Personalities of the Holy Spirit

#### **Intercessor-Counselor**

I count this as two. It doesn't really matter how you want to count He will function the same way regardless.

As an Intercessor, He is interceding for us. You may recall that Jesus is interceding for us (Rom 8:34). We read in the amplified that the Holy Spirit is with us 'to represent Me (Jesus) & act on My (Jesus) behalf.' Thus, we have two personalities of the Trinity interceding for us with the third!

As a Counselor, He is guiding us in what we do. Some call this the 'leading of the Holy Spirit.' While that is true, the depth of relationship through the Holy Spirit can be so much more. It starts when we receive Jesus as our Lord & Savior & becomes deeper & wider as we are developed in the Character of Christ Jesus. This is not limited to the Counselor personality but is true for all of the personalities expand over time.

#### **Comforter**

The Spirit of God descends into the dark abyss, those times of trouble that feel to us to be complete despair. He is also with us during the troubles of each day. Jesus tells us not to worry about tomorrow, because each day has its own trouble (Mat 6:34). More than surviving through it, the Comforter helps us persevere. I especially like to call on this personality of the Holy Spirit to be with people & their families during times of duress.

#### **Advocate**

The Bible tells us to seek the LORD with all our hearts (Jer 29:13; Deut 4:29; Prov 3:5-6). The LORD gives us the best advice. Our flesh seeks to get council from other people, but as we develop as believers, we come to understand that the guidance of the LORD through the Advocate roots us in God's plan. Jesus told us to be like a wise man & build our house on the rock (Mat 7:24). He helps us do that.

#### **Strengthener**

What you can do with physical muscles, you can do with spiritual muscles. Spiritual strength looks like the Character of Christ Jesus, which is imparted to you through development. When I teach, I like to remind people that we are developed through the presence of the LORD. Time in prayer, praise, study & meditation on the Word of God, & service to the Kingdom of the Lord are all good ways to engage in this development. The Holy Spirit as our Strengthener is like a personal trainer.

#### **Standby**

We don't go into this world alone because He is with us. Supernaturally, He can bring super-human strength (physical & spiritual) miraculously into situations where the plan of the LORD is served. This may be because we are not yet developed to a point, but more likely because a situation is a God-Level situation. It is amazing to know that when we trust Him, & have faith in Him, our trust & faith are really His Trust & Faith.

As Jesus told us, "If you have faith like a grain of mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move, and nothing will be impossible for you" (Mat 17:20). Note the metaphor being used here. If people went around literally moving real mountains that would be a disaster. A 'mountain' can be a really big problem, which is a valid interpretation which is probably better for us on the daily. The term 'mountains' when used in prophetic language refers to kings or nations. Thus, when we have faith in the LORD, believers can affect leaders & nations, which is why we pray for our leaders to be influenced to follow the guidance of the LORD, whether the leader believes in the Most High God or not. The faith of the LORD working in us is powerful & can be used in situations that come upon us. The Holy Spirit in His Standby role is there, waiting, & is always ready.

#### **Balanced Power in the Holy Spirit**

To survive the world that Jesus told us will hate us because it hated Him first (Jn 15:18) we need the [internal] Peace, [external] Power & [Godly] Presence of the Holy Spirit. My interpretation of how these roles function, is a simultaneous multifaceted internal [within the believer] & external [exhibited through & by the believer to the world] power [supernatural show of force] of the LORD.

The Helper roots Himself within us. He is interceding on our behalf while giving us counsel about what to do. He is advocating for us [& Jesus through us] while providing comforting to us as we withstand the attacks of the enemy. As He develops us, He strengthens us in the Character of the Jesus, but is our standby who can jump in when we are in over our head. Consider the diagram where the personalities encircle us. Each personality is balanced across the diameter by the complementary personality. Each of the two personalities that flank every personality contribute to the success of the one, & the one flanks each of the other two, which themselves are flanked by two supporting personalities. Finally, they are all connected by the foundation of the Helper personality which allows them to all operate at the same time in their various capacities to bring the exact measure of the supernatural Power & Presence of the Most High God through the believer.

#### **More Presence of the LORD**

It would be heretical to suggest that the LORD is not always with us. The word 'invoking' is not correct in a Biblical sense. Moreover, 'invoking' seems to intimate something of the lesser gods & Babel, where by some sort of pride we have the capacity to beckon the Most High God.

Alternatively, humbling ourselves before the LORD & thanking Him for taking us deeper into His Presence can only be good for us. Corporately, petitioning the LORD bring a greater level of His Presence benefits us when two or more are gathered in His Name.

Image

3h

Rom 8 – How the LORD Adopted Us

§3: The Trinity: Romans 8 – How the LORD Adopted us into His Family

Sons of God Rebel

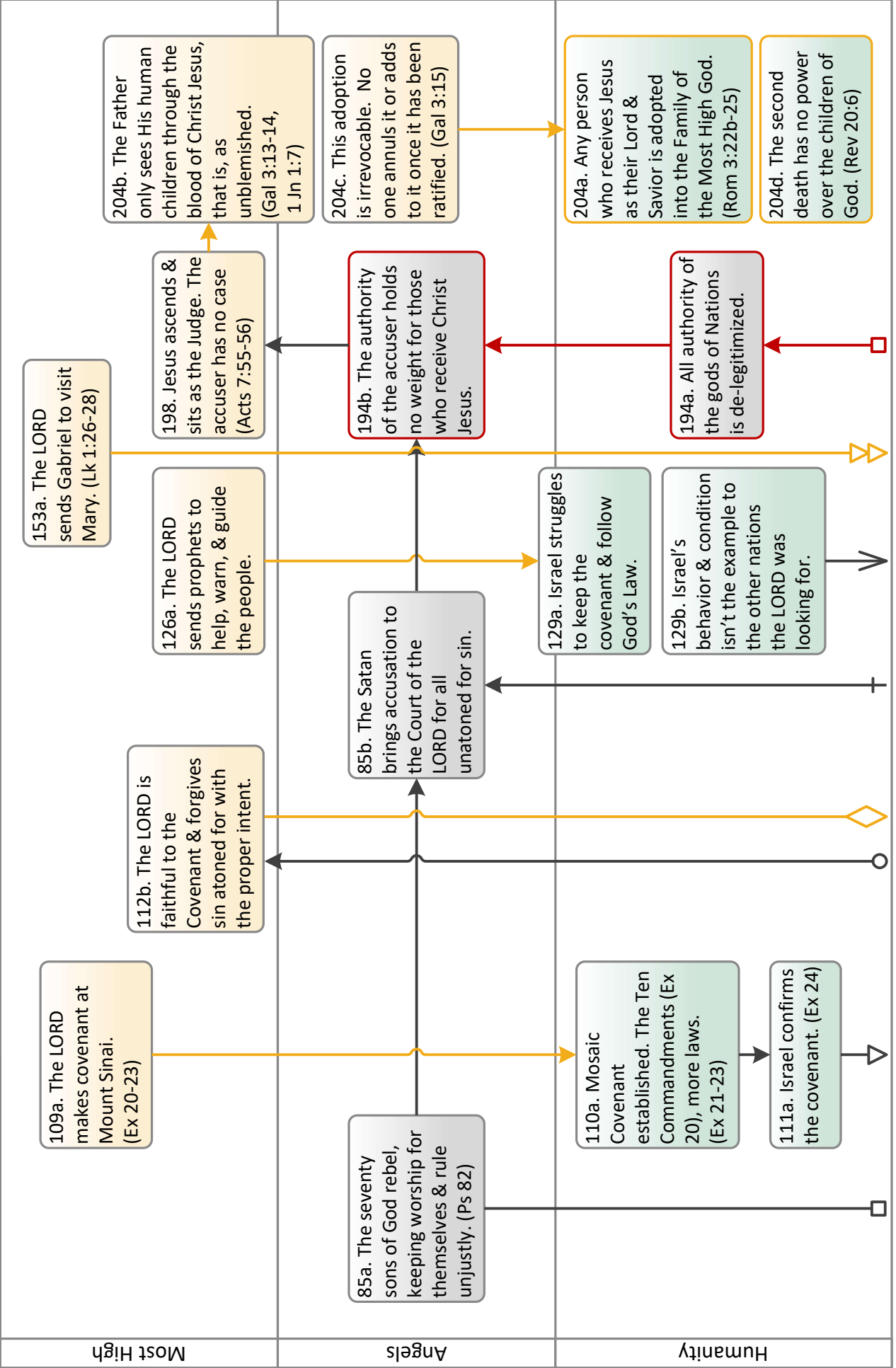
Mosaic Covenant

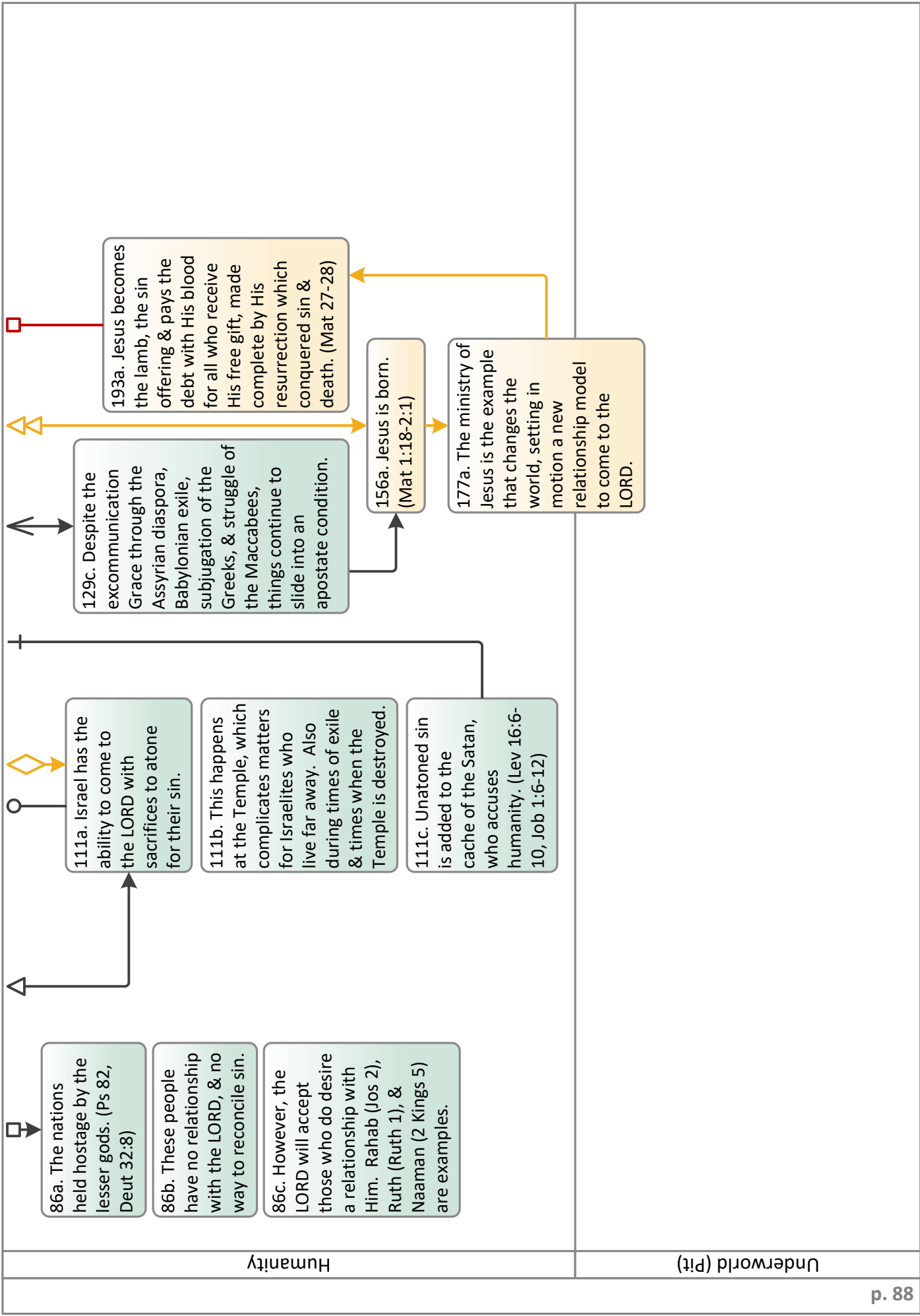
New Covenant

(4) Disp: Promise

(5) Disp: Law

(6) Disp: Grace







## Romans 8 – How the LORD Adopted us into His Family

### **Why a Relationship with Jesus Matters**

A recurring response I hear while evangelizing on the street is, 'I can't follow Jesus because I'm [\[add your sin here\]](#).' Of course, people with this response don't think of themselves as sinners. Also, I tend to suspect that people who give this reply have been hurt by someone who is a follower of Jesus. I won't pretend to know all of their reasons, God knows. But I will love them & pray for them. Through this I've come to believe strongly the following:

It is better to have a Jesus relationship with a sin problem,  
than have a sin relationship with a Jesus problem.

It isn't like Jesus loves sin, or that He & His Spirit aren't working through us to develop us into His Character. But He does know that it is a process. That tees up Romans chapter 8 for me reasonably well.

### **No Condemnation**

When you have a relationship with Jesus, He pays the price for all your sin. If you humble yourself to choose Him as your Lord & Savior, He adopts you. As Paul points out in Galatians 3:15, this cannot be annulled.

Jesus came to serve as the faithful Israelite because only He was able. He was not born from a line of sin & never committed sin, making Jesus the only unblemished human to satisfy the Divine Law of the Most High. This qualified Jesus to be the Christ.

### **Walking in the Spirit**

The process of walking in the Spirit is a refining of our mind by the Holy Spirit. Over time, He breaks every chain of the enemy, & grows us more & more into the Character of the LORD. This is a process that will take the remainder of our mortal life.

The question really is whether our mind is set on the things of the flesh, or the things of the Spirit. If the former, a person becomes hostile to the LORD. If the latter, a person realizes their desperate need for a relationship with Christ Jesus. A great example of this can even be seen in the order of the Name Jesus Christ vs Christ Jesus. The world has made the Holy Name 'Jesus Christ' into a swear word. But this is the humanity of Jesus taking things to the divine as the Christ or Messiah (Jesus Christ). The other order indicates the Mercy, Grace, & Blessing of the Most High coming through the Christ to humanity (Christ Jesus).

Thus, Paul brings us to a foundational truth in verses 9-11. Anyone without the Spirit of Christ [\[the Holy Spirit\]](#) in them, does not belong to Jesus. Anyone with Christ in them is alive because of righteousness. We are alive, truly alive, because the Spirit of the LORD that raised Jesus from the dead is now living within us!

### **Adoption into the Kingdom**

The LORD is still on His original plan that was derailed by rebellion in Eden. That is a good thing to know, because that plan was all about the LORD having a human family. For those who have received Jesus as their Lord & Savior, they are now part of this family.

Considering the descriptions of the Lake of Fire, escaping that would be enough. Many 'hell fire & brimstone pastors' have scared people into the faith based on that idea. But a relationship with Jesus is much richer & more rewarding than acceptance based in fear, works based judgement, or both. These are marks of religion, not relationship, & as such are hallmarks of the lesser gods & their false religions.

The LORD didn't stop at just a gift of Salvation. He made us His children. Which, you may have noticed that I capitalize all things that are divine. So let me write that again. He made us His Children – capital 'C.' This is not out of hubris, to be sure. As Ephesians 2:8-9 tells us, our Salvation & Adoption are not of our own works.

There is no way for us to earn an infinite standard. We are born from a line of sin – one of the things that makes me think about the defilement of our bloodline through the second rebellion. So right out of the womb we've already missed the mark.

Still, the LORD loves us, & sent His Son to die for us. As part of the deal, we receive a relationship through Jesus with our Heavenly Father. Paul connects it in Romans 8:15-17. If we are Children of God, then He is our Father, which means we are co-heirs with Christ, which is part of the gift He died on the cross for.

#### **Eternal Suffering**

After talking to people about Jesus, I sometimes think about when I was divided from the LORD. I think about their reasons for rejecting Jesus. I wonder if they think it all sounds crazy. There are days when I have to deal with people & systems that are not kind. I do my best to lament, asking the LORD how long the persecution will last.

It would be wonderful if all people were to come into relationship with Jesus. Even in our brokenness, we are better with Jesus. Also, I realize that I am forgiven based on how I forgive (Mat 6:14-15). There is no room for unforgiveness in the Body of Christ. I can't have a 'me / them' perspective, it has to be 'us.' That is to say, I don't wish for anyone to miss the Salvation gift Jesus has to offer.

#### **Hope for Future Glory**

I do hope for the future. I look forward to the return of King Jesus. I look forward to the Millennial Kingdom. I look forward to the Eternal Kingdom. It all seems so far away as I'm writing this, but I also think that when these things come to pass this age of darkness will seem so long ago.

In the meantime, the Holy Spirit is our paraclete. Our process of growth through edification has already begun. For more detail about this, I put together a study on the Seven Personalities of the Holy Spirit.

#### **Everlasting Love for His Children**

Much can be written about the Love of God, but look at Romans 8:

“For I am sure that neither death nor life, nor angels nor rulers, nor things present nor things to come, nor powers, nor height nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God in Christ Jesus our Lord.”

– Romans 8:38-39

#### **Applying Our Spiritual World View**

Many Scriptures in the Bible should begin to have words popping out with new meaning. As an exercise, let's look at the quoted Romans 8:38-39 ESV above.

Angels: Paul brings up angels. Why? I think this is a direct mention of the angels in rebellion that include Satan (Azazel) & the rebellious gods of nations [[sons of disobedience](#)].

Rulers: Some translations use 'principalities,' from the Greek 'archē' Strong's G746. When used in a definitive way it means 'chief' like a magistrate, power, prince, principle, rule.

Powers: The Greek word used here is 'dynamis' (doo-nam-is). Strong's G1410. it is a force (literally or figuratively); specifically, miraculous power. A worker of power, strength, violence, mighty [[wonderful](#)] work. Wikipedia defines it as 'powerful one,' as in an individual or personality.

Personally, I find it interesting how this well-known verse contains three references to angelic beings. Moreover, these would be rebellious angelic beings, because the angels in alignment to the LORD wouldn't attempt to separate us from the Love of God. But this is exactly the goal of the rebellious angels.

To humanize these references by counting them as people in rebellion dilutes Ephesians 6 where Paul writes that we "do not wrestle against flesh & blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the cosmic powers over this present age of darkness, against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly places" (Eph 6:12). How strongly does Paul have to underscore the point?

**The Accuser & the Wicked People**

In Job 1:6-12 & 2:1-7 we witness an event where one of the accusers (Satan) brings suit against Job. One of the reasons we are given access to read about this event is because it has a very personal implication. The accusers of humanity have brought suit against each of us in the court of the Most High.

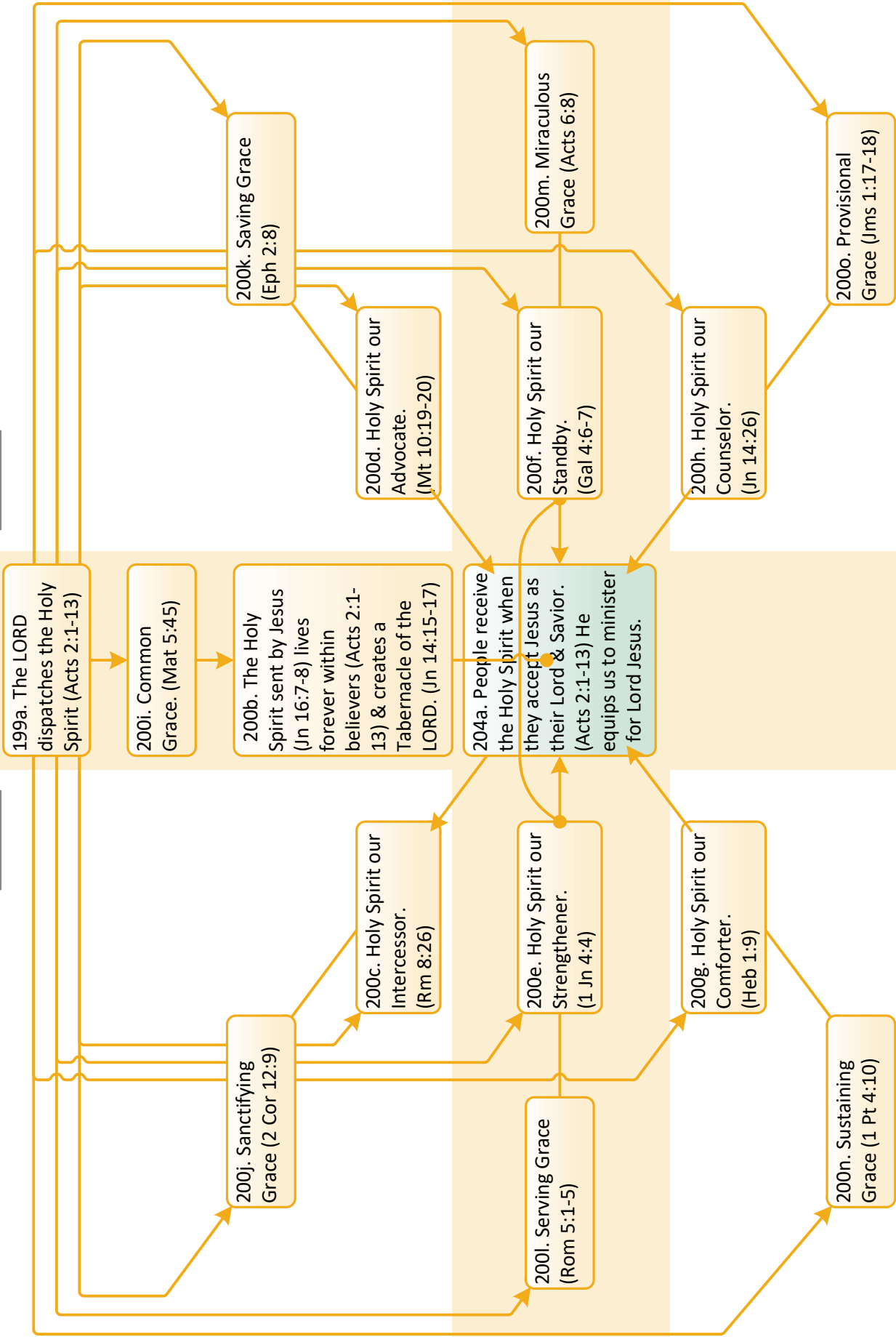
With Jesus sitting in the position of Judge, this doesn't happen for the Children of God. When an accuser brings suit against a believer, all that is seen is that Blood of Christ that cleanses sin. Amen!

Image

3i

Types of Grace

The New Covenant



## Types of Grace

### **Overview**

Grace is an interesting thing that comes from the LORD. Even when we exhibit grace, I'd argue that it is really the LORD showing Grace to others working through us. This is because all grace requires mercy first. Without diving to the depths of the philosophical concept of mercy, I'd make the argument that only the LORD can have mercy. This is because only He can judge. He is the only judge, because He is the only one that hasn't offended the Divine Law, & because He is faithful to it, only He can justly apply it. Therefore, He rightfully sits on the seat of judgement, applies Divine Justice, & is the only one who is authorized to extend mercy. And because mercy is a necessary predecessor of grace, only the LORD can extend grace. The natural conclusion then is that Mercy & Grace are both Divine extensions of the Law administered by the LORD to us & through us.

As a topic, grace is like a broad brush, everyone is aware of it but few really know it. And on that point, I'll tell you that this is an area that I, & I think many if not all people, require a lot of work. But it is an essential quality to the Character of the LORD that we rely on for our Salvation through Christ Jesus.

### **Personalities of the Holy Spirit**

On one hand it is amazing to me that the types of Grace map to the Personalities of the Holy Spirit. Then again, shouldn't we expect that since the Holy Spirit is one of the Personalities of the Trinity! God is just so good!

Moreover, I'd suggest that the types of Grace are delivered through the Personalities of the Holy Spirit. Like the functioning of the Personalities as roles within us, Grace is equally structured to act to us & through us as individual types, as balanced pairs, with flanked support, & multidimensionally as a unique blend of Divine Grace that is perfected in an instant for any specific application.

Because this Grace is administered by the Holy Spirit, acting as a representative for the Lord Jesus, in alignment with the Father, moving through us, the more we are willing to defer ourselves the greater He can flow through us into any situation.

### **Common Grace**

Jesus tells us that the LORD allows the sun to rise & rain to fall on the fields of the just & unjust (Mat 5:45). The reason for this is so all people can come to a relationship with the LORD. This Grace is extended to all people by the LORD who knows that only the few will decide to humble themselves & receive Christ Jesus as their Lord & Savior.

### **Saving Grace**

This is what most Christians are familiar with. Jesus died to save us, check the box, got my ticket, on my way to heaven. Having walked away from the faith myself, spending decades in agnosticism, I am acutely aware of the disaster Jesus saved me from. I think many of us relate to the woman in Luke 7:36-40 who anointed the feet of Jesus with her tears & perfume.

This Grace purchased with the blood of Jesus has a gravity that demands reverence & praise & gratitude. What's more, this Salvation Grace is permanent. We were saved through faith & not works (Eph 2:8-9). Salvation Grace cannot be annulled (Gal 3:15).

### §3: The Trinity: Types of Grace

#### **Sanctifying Grace**

The Sanctifying Grace cleanses our sin, transgressions, & iniquity. This is a necessary Grace once we have been saved & cannot be revoked. This is because the LORD cannot abide in an environment that is apart from Him.

Sin is missing the standard set by the LORD; it must be sanctified. Because transgression is choosing to sin, the Holy Spirit works with us to develop better Godly choices that eliminate this pattern before it becomes worse, sanctifying us along the way. And when sin is a habit that we are dependent on, or have integrated into our identity, the Holy Spirit works with us to break these bonds of sin as He displaces them with the Character of Christ Jesus. This, perhaps most of all from our perspective, requires Sanctification Grace to make it possible for the LORD to abide within us.

This doesn't give us license to wantonly pursue a debased lifestyle, but should chastise us to soften our soul so the Holy Spirit can develop us to a point of alignment where we are free from sin, transgression, & iniquity. Along the way, His Sanctifying Grace is sufficient.

#### **Serving Grace**

You might hear people in the Body of Christ talk about 'their calling,' or what 'the LORD has called the to do.' 1 Peter 4:10 teaches us that every person has received a gift to serve others. James 2:14-26 teaches that faith apart from works is dead. This isn't salvation by works, but works out of love for our Savior Christ Jesus. Therefore, being a follower of Jesus requires action, not standing in line with our ticket to heaven. The love of the LORD saved us, & now our love for the LORD motivates us to serve Him. It will probably be awkward & inconvenient at first, but the point is to learn to work through that. The more you work for the Kingdom of God the more natural it becomes.

I'm not a pastor, but I went to Bible School. I'm not a great singer, but I led a Praise & Worship team. I'm not an evangelist but I take the Gospel of Jesus to the streets. I'm not a lot of things, but the LORD is. I've decided that I may look foolish, ridiculous, & stupid to others, but if that's what it takes for the LORD to work through me to save people then I'm willing to do it.

#### **Miraculous Grace**

Not many of us would be forgiving people stoning us to death, but that is exactly what Stephen, one of the first martyrs for the cause of the church did. Acts 6:8-7:60 tells his story. You may notice in verse 7:58 a young man named Saul, who held the coats for those stoning Stephen. This Saul is known to us through his Greek name, Paul, or the Apostle Paul who wrote a bit of the NT for us. Never cease to be amazed at how the LORD can change lives. Paul died by decapitation, a sold-out believer to the Gospel & ministry of our Lord Jesus Christ.

These types of signs & wonders accompany followers of Christ Jesus who have sold out to Jesus so they can save the lost. I pray this work I'm compiling glorify Jesus Christ, bless many, & serve the Kingdom.

#### **Provisional Grace**

"Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation do to change" (Jm 1:17).

The point of this Grace is that it is Provisional Grace. It comes from God, & only God can administer it when He chooses. It is possible that the LORD can administer things when asked. It is also possible that the LORD can bring things unexpected & unasked for in order to direct a situation to the course the LORD would like – see Numbers 22:22-35.

#### **Sustaining Grace**

Like each of us, Paul has some sort of sin area. It isn't called out specifically other than he calls it 'his thorn.' Yet the LORD tells Paul that His Grace is sufficient (2 Cor 12:9). Despite this affliction from the messenger of Satan sent to harass Paul, he writes a significant portion of the NT. The endurance provided through the Strengthener allowed Paul to keep going. To absorb the punishments. To preach the Gospel of Christ Jesus.

We are not called to do the same mission that Paul was. But we do have a calling. Each of us do, as we learned above in 1 Peter 4:10. Tapping into this calling & allowing the LORD to sustain us with His Sustaining Grace is what holds us up as we too go into this world to serve our portion of the Great Commission.

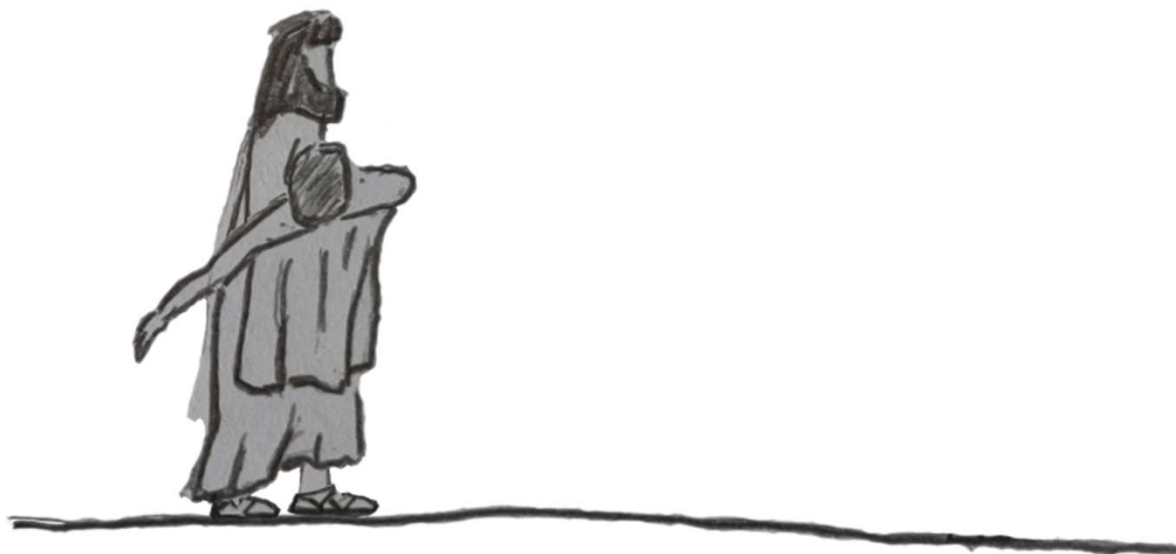
#### **A Body in Motion**

The first law of motion is that bodies at rest remain at rest, & a body in motion will remain in motion unless acted on by an external force. Jesus moved people, events, & circumstances to save us. Now we must participate in that motion to save lives.

If you don't know where to start, begin somewhere. Through that service Jesus by the leading of the Holy Spirit will refine your course. Keep looking to Him in prayer & He will guide your path.

Doing nothing is not going to accomplish the Great Commission (Mat 28:16-20). Its why faith without works is dead (Jm 2:14-26). We are called to be a Body in motion. 'Rest & vest' is outside of the LORD's plan. The enemy is attempting to be the opposite affecting force that stalls the motion of the Body of Christ. Therefore, meaningful Kingdom work is real spiritual warfare.





## Section 4

### The Enemy

“Be sober-minded; be watchful. Your adversary the devil prowls around like a roaring lion, seeking someone to devour. Resist him, firm in your faith, knowing that the same kinds of suffering are being experienced by your brotherhood throughout the world.”

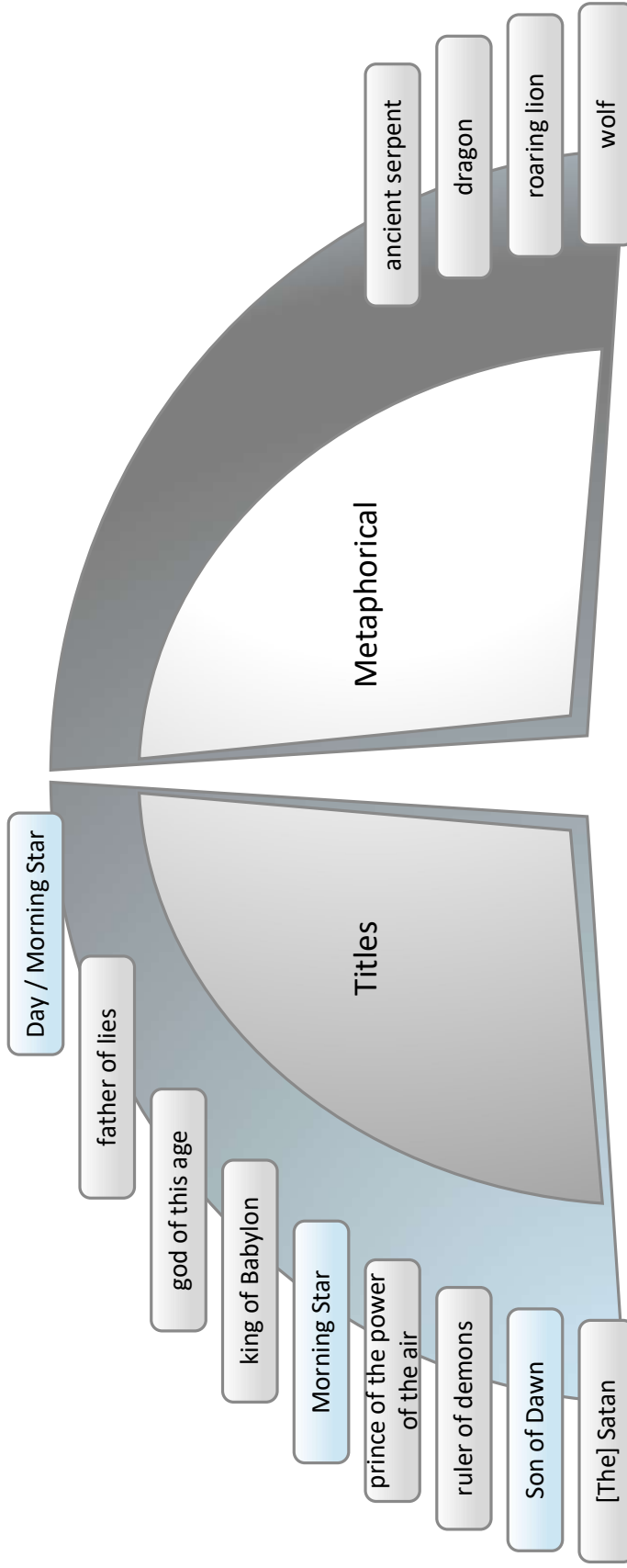
Peter  
Apostle of Christ  
1 Peter 5:8-9

Image

4b

Names for Satan

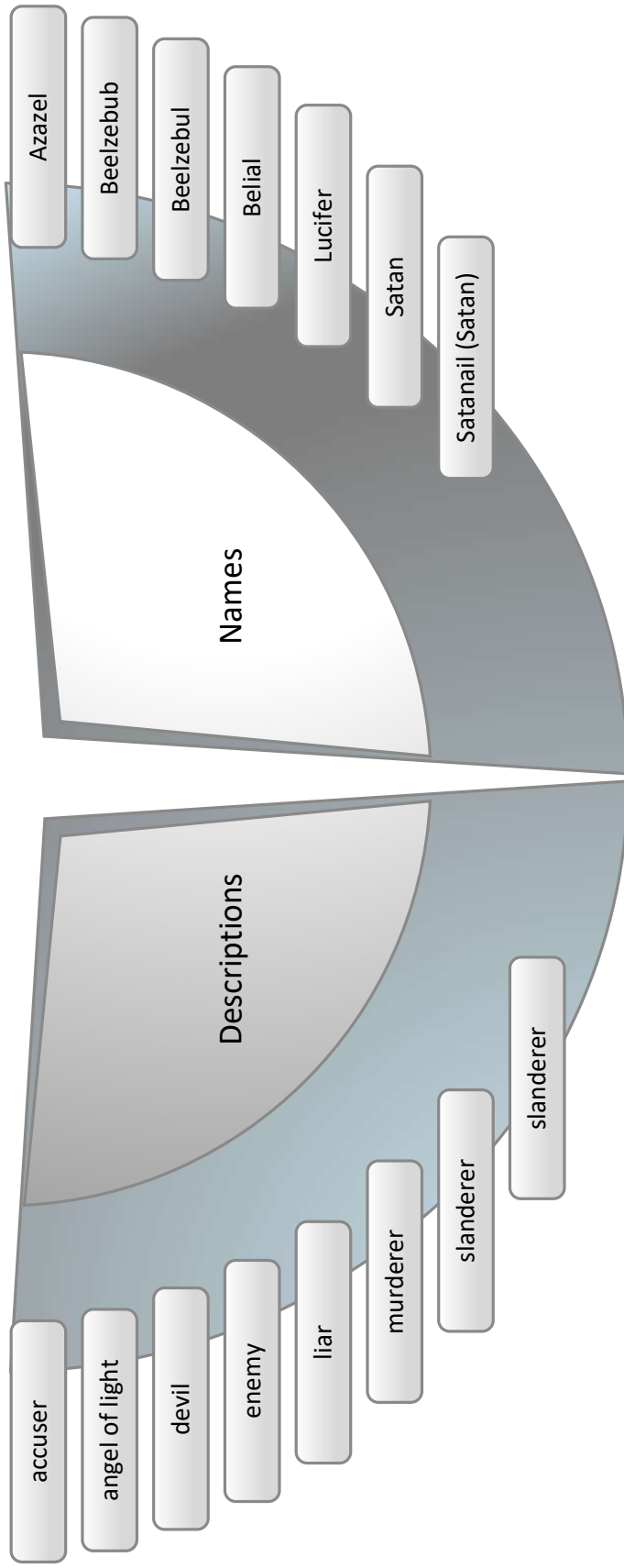
§4: The Enemy: Names for Satan



“Any kingdom that is divided against itself is being laid waste;  
and no city or house divided against itself will stand.”

- Jesus (Matthew 12:25)

“And the devil who had deceived them was hurled into the lake of fire and burning brimstone, where the beast and false prophet are also; and they will be tormented day and night, forever and ever. (Revelation 20:10)



## Names for Satan

### What's His Name??

While the world uses the Name of our Lord as a swear word, we don't even know the name of the enemy. If you ask most people, they will tell you things like 'Satan,' 'Lucifer,' 'the devil,' & maybe 'the serpent' or 'the talking snake in Eden.'

For a while I wondered if the name of Satan was left out of the Scripture. Part of my thinking about this is that for the LORD, Names are very important. For instance, the family redeemer who doesn't want the land if it comes with Ruth (Ruth 4:6) is unnamed – but Boaz, which means 'strength of God in him' participates with Ruth in the lineage of King David, & ultimately Christ Jesus (Ruth 4:17-21; Mat 1:5-6).

However, a deep dive in this area reveals four types of 'names' for the devil.

### Titles, Metaphors, Descriptions, & Names

'Satan' is a title that means 'an accuser.' We learn that there are more than one of these 'satans,' & that their job is to bring reports to the Most High. See the beginning of the Book of Job (Job 1:6-12, 2:1-7).

'Lucifer' means 'morning star' & is applied based on Isaiah 14:12 NKJV which reads '...Day Star, son of Dawn!' It converts this metaphoric description of the devil into a proper name. Job 38:7 shows us that there were many 'morning stars,' but only one rejected the Lord of Light.

'The devil,' 'the serpent,' 'dragon,' & other descriptive names are also in Scripture. Look at Revelation 12:9 which includes several of them: dragon, ancient serpent, called the devil & Satan, the deceiver of the whole world.

Abaddon in Hebrew, & Apollyon in Greek, we are told in Revelation 9:11 is the name for the enemy which means 'destroyer.' But this is not the leader of the rebellion – something we learn from the context.

### Applying a Name

It may feel awkward to give the leader of the enemies a name. For the most part the Bible uses titles, metaphors, & descriptions to teach us about his fallen character. I've found this to be true, that in my study of this topic & others I've learned things about the enemy that have helped me mature in my relationship with the Lord.

### Why this is Important

The Satan is the leader of our enemy today. He is in rebellion to God. And he & his agents war against God, which means they also war against the brethren without cease. Thus, to offer anonymity to such a foul being seems to me to be too kind. The enemy made a curse word out of our Lord & Savior's Holy Name. As a result, I view his name to be even worse.

### Name Source for Azazel & Satanail

In part I'm pulling the names Azazel & Satanail from the Books of Enoch. While this is not Scripture, I do know that the authors of the NT read & referenced this text (Heb 11:5; Jude 1:6,14; 2 Pt 2:4). Also, Leviticus 16:6-10 references Azazel as the recipient of the second goat carrying Israel's sin (literally as blood from the first goat on it). Because 'the Satan' is ascribed all sin, this helps connect the dot to the name Azazel. Finally, the Books of Enoch were authored during the Second Temple period & the use of Satanail in the 3<sup>rd</sup> Book of Enoch demonstrates a linguistic pivot to the making of the title 'Satan' into a proper name for \*the\* Satan.

## §4: The Enemy: Names for Satan

### List of Titles

- day star (Is 14:12)
- father of lies (Jn 8:44)
- god of this world / age (2 Cor 4:4)
- king of Babylon (Is 14:4)
- lord of the flies / flying ones (from Beelzebub) (Mat 12:24)
- morning star (Is 14:12)
- prince of power of the air (Eph 2:2)
- prince of demons (Mat 12:24)
- ruler of the authority of the air (Eph 2:2)
- ruler of demons (Mat 12:24)
- ruler of this world (Jn 12:30, 14:30)
- son of dawn / morning (Is 14:12)
- the Satan (Lk 10:18)

### List of Descriptions

- adversary (1 Pt 5:8)
- accuser: (of the brethren) (Rev 12:10)
- angel of light (2 Cor 11:14)
- devil (Mat 4:1)
- enemy (Mat 13:39)
- evil one (Mat 13:19)
- liar (Jn 8:44)
- murderer (Jn 8:44)
- slanderer (Gen 3:2-5)
- tempter (1 Thess 3:5; Mat 4:3)
- thief (Jn 10:10)
- Wicked one (Mat 13:19, 38)

### List of Metaphors

- dragon / great dragon (Rev 12:9)
- roaring lion (1 Pt 5:8)
- Serpent / ancient serpent / serpent of old (Gen 3:1; Rev 12:9)
- wolf (Jn 10:12)

### List of Names

- Azazel (Lev 16:6-10)
- Beelzebul or Beelzebub (Mat 12:24)
- Belial (2 Cor 6:15)
- Lucifer (from 'morning star' used as proper name) (Is 14:12)

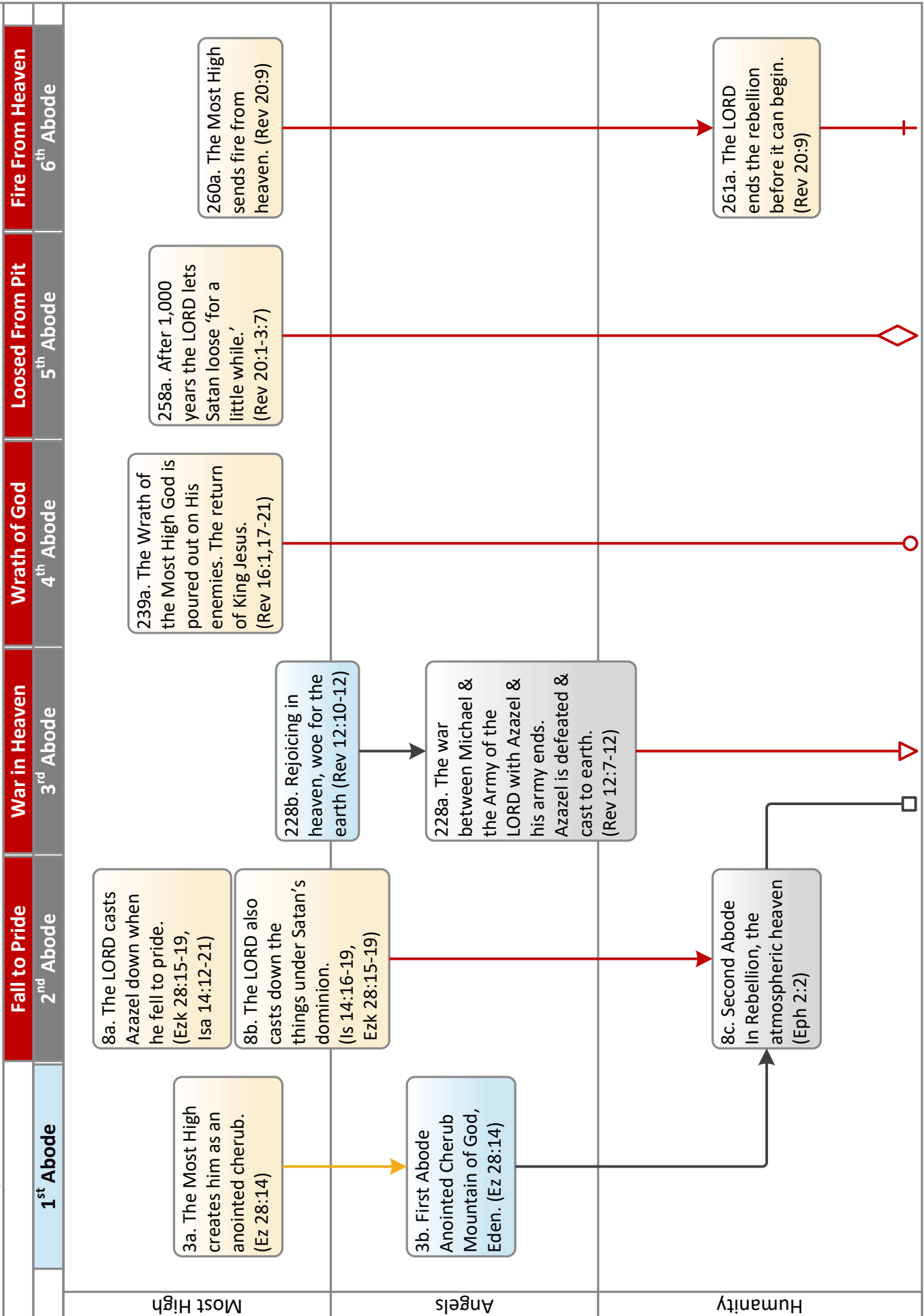
Image

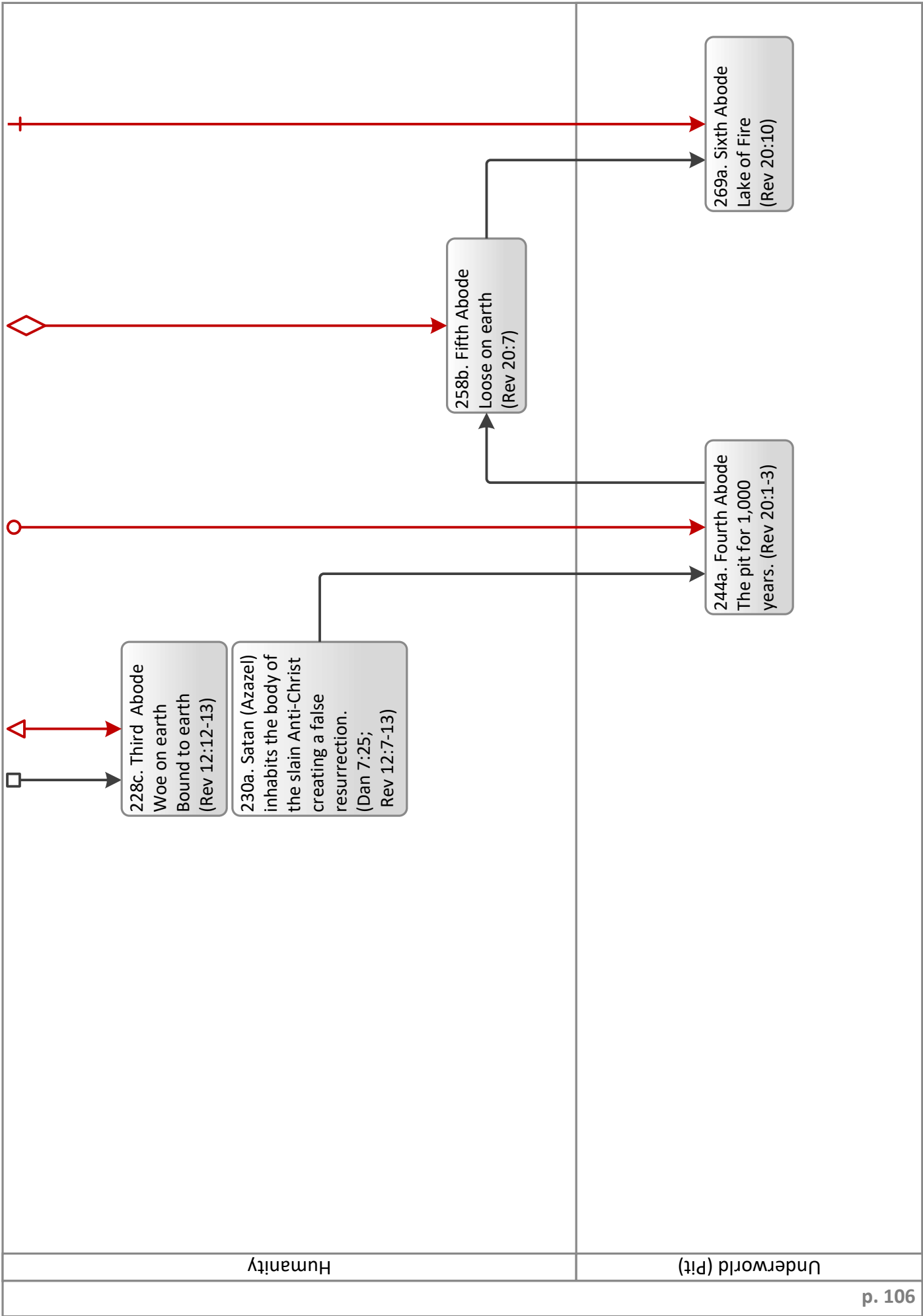
4c

Abodes of Satan



**\$4: The Enemy: Abodes of Satan**





Humanity

Underworld (Pit)

## Abodes of Satan

### About the Abodes

As the relationship between Satan & the Most High changes, so do things about Satan. These 'abodes' essentially translate to the conditions or environments & operational controls for Satan, & in some cases the subordinate spirits in rebellion that have been placed under his dominion.

### First Abode – Mountain of God, Eden – History

At this point Satan is in alignment with the Most High. Made perfect, full of wisdom & beauty, serving as one of the Angels in Eden, one of the leaders of the sons of God (Ezk 28:12b-14). Some split this out into two abodes. However, a look at where he was placed reveals that what changes isn't his placement, but that Eden, the Mountain of God is on the mineral earth & over time develops into a vegetative garden. Thus, these aren't two different abodes, but rather the development over time of the same abode.

It is in this abode that the 'five I wills' of Satan from Is 14:13-14 occur & unrighteousness is found in him (Ezk 28:15-17) that caused his fall. See the 'Fall of Satan' section.

### Second Abode – 1<sup>st</sup> & 3<sup>rd</sup> Heaven & Underworld – Current

Now in rebellion to the Most High, Satan & his reports act as accusers of humanity (not accuser of the brethren which weren't until adoption through Christ Jesus). Satan has his original troop of fallen angels under his command. Initially unclean spirits (demons) didn't exist until the death of the Nephilim, an upshot of the Second Fall of Humanity.

In this abode Satan & his reports have access to:

- The underworld [[Sheol](#)] & the earth [[ground](#)] (Is 14:11-12; 1 En 10:4-7).
- The Throne Room of the Most High (Job 1:6-12, 2:1-7).
- The third heaven, where God & His angels are (Rev 12:7-12).
- The first (atmosphere of earth) heaven (Eph 2:1-2).

### Note About Space:

The Biblical 'second heaven' is what we call space. It houses the physical (non-metaphorical) stars, galaxies, etc. While Satan (Azazel) & his horde have access to the earth's atmospheric heaven (the first heaven) they do not have access to this second heaven (what we call space), & therefore, cannot travel through space.

On July 16, 2019, Ivan De Luce published an article with the research firm Insider Intelligence where he studied the experience astronauts have in orbit & space. He writes, "this state of mental clarity, called the 'overview effect,' occurs when you are flung so far away from Earth that you become totally overwhelmed & awed by the fragility & unity of life on our blue globe. It's the uncanny sense of understanding the 'big picture,' & of feeling connected to & yet bigger than the intricate processes bubbling on Earth." Scientists have found physiological reasons that help explain this, but it begs the question about the spiritual reasons. Could this partly be explained by the absence of the enemy spirits?

### Third Abode – Bound to Earth – Next

Revelation 12:7-12 is important here, because Satan & his Angels who started a war in the third heaven lose the war. Michael & the Army of the LORD defeat the serpent & permanently evict Satan, throwing him to the earth. The LORD has told us that this will happen at the midpoint of the last week. (Dan 7:24-25; Rev 12:7-12; Rev 13:14) Where the first & second abode were long by comparison, this will only last for three & a half years.

### **Fourth Abode – The Pit – To Come**

When the Wrath of God is poured out, Satan will be imprisoned in the pit for one thousand years (Rev 20:1-3). This timeline coincides with the Millennial Kingdom of King Jesus here on earth.

One of our jobs during the Millennial Kingdom will be to minister to those who are still mortal (Rev 20:6). Choosing Christ Jesus as their Lord & Savior is still an essential step. Otherwise, they will die at the age of one-hundred (Is 65:20). It seems that this would be an easy decision. Today people choose Jesus with faith, as He told Thomas (Jn 20:29). In the Millennial Kingdom the reality of Jesus will be evident. Also, it would seem that people dying at the age of one-hundred would be evidence. We will have to wait & see what the next dispensation will be like to understand this.

Sin will be much less because Satan, the fallen angels, & the unclean spirits will be locked in the Pit. This also means that illness will be greatly reduced as well, which are often brought as oppressions by the unclean spirits. Believers today will have participated in the first resurrection, but mortals at this time will enjoy these blessings.

### **Fifth Abode – Back on Earth – To Come**

We are told at the same time that after the thousand years, Satan will be released for a little while (Rev 20:3). We don't know how long this 'little while' will be. However, the greatest danger is that he will deceive people into a rebellion against God. We already know the fate of the evil one, but these people in choosing him over the Almighty will partake in the eternal death of the Lake of Fire.

When Satan is released, he will deceive the nations at the four corners of the earth, Gog & Magog, & gather them for battle. This is metaphorical language. The 'four corners' indicating the entire earth, & Gog & Magog representing the 'rebellious nations.'

Scripture reads that they will camp around the beloved city, which could be Jerusalem, & could also be the entire earth (just as the great city is metaphorical for the whole fallen earth the New Jerusalem could also be the newly restored earth), prepared to wage war. However, fire from heaven will consume them. This fire could be literal, but it could also be metaphorical language indicating the Truth of God. (Rev 20:7-10)

### **Sixth Abode – Lake of Fire – Final**

The Most High God has said that the pollution of His good world will not last forever, but His Kingdom will – even to when the first heaven & first earth have passed away (Rev 21:1).

Satan & all those who have followed him will be judged by King Jesus based on their works. Their debt not being paid by the sufficiency of the Blood of Christ Jesus will have missed the infinite standard. Theirs will be an eternal suffering in the Lake of Fire. This will be a quarantine of evil & rebellion against the Most High.

Image

4d

Fall of Satan

Satan's First Abode

Fall of Satan

Satan Cast Down

Most High

3a. The Unmade God creates the angels.

4a. The LORD creates the physical universe & the earth. (Gen 1)

Angels

3b. Angels & their groups are dispatched in service to the LORD.

5a. Satan & the sons of God (Gen 6:1-4) or Watchers (Dan 4:13,23) are dispatched to watch the earth. (Job 1:7, 2:1)

Humanity

3c. Satan is created an anointed guardian cherub. (Ezk 28:14)

As an anointed cherub angel (Ezk 28:14), he would have had other angels under his leadership.

5b. Satan is placed on the Holy Mountain of God (Garden of Eden) (Ez 28:12-15)

6a. One of the leaders of the Watchers is Azazel (Lev 16:6), Asael (1 En 6:8), Satanail (Satan) (2 En 18:3).

9b. [I will] 'Ascend to heaven,' go into the 3<sup>rd</sup> heaven as the Most High does.

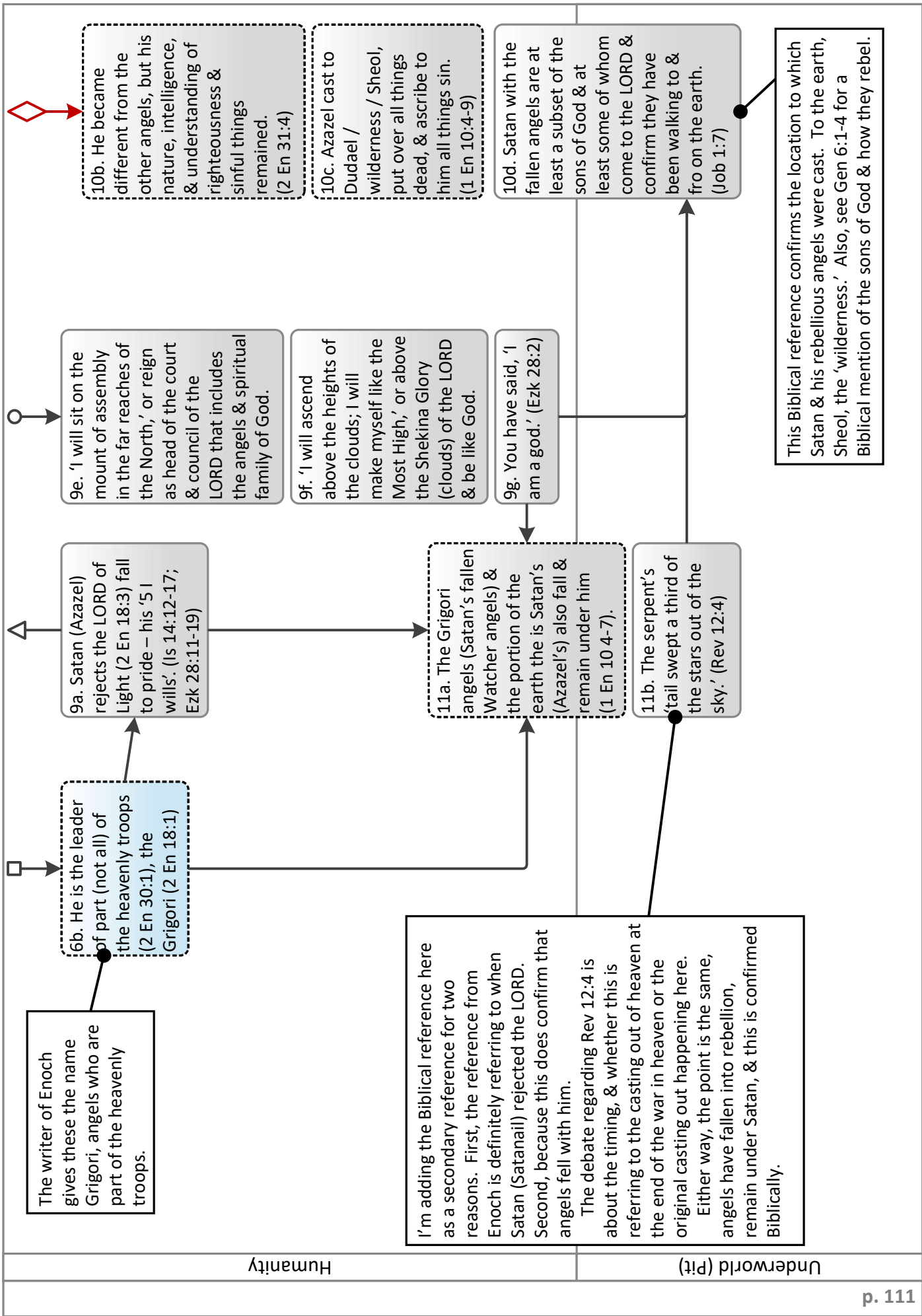
9c. [I will go] 'Above the stars,' or above the angels of the Most High.

9d. [I will] 'Set my throne on high,' or above the throne of the Most High.

8a. The LORD casts Satan down. (Ezk 28:11-19; Is 14:12-21)

8b. One from the order of the angels, conceived an impossible thought, to place his throne higher than the clouds (Shekina Glory of the LORD) above the earth, that he might become equal in rank to my power. I through him out with his angels & he was flying above the bottomless. (2 En 29:3-4)

10a. The devil, evil spirit of the lower places, a fugitive, made Sotona as his name is Satanail (Satan). (2 En 31:3)



The writer of Enoch gives these the name Grigori, angels who are part of the heavenly troops.

6b. He is the leader of part (not all) of the heavenly troops (2 En 30:1), the Grigori (2 En 18:1)

9a. Satan (Azazel) rejects the LORD of Light (2 En 18:3) fall to pride – his '5 I wills'. (Is 14:12-17; Ezk 28:11-19)

9e. 'I will sit on the mount of assembly in the far reaches of the North,' or reign as head of the court & council of the LORD that includes the angels & spiritual family of God.

9f. 'I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High,' or above the Shekina Glory (clouds) of the LORD & be like God.

9g. You have said, 'I am a god.' (Ezk 28:2)

11a. The Grigori angels (Satan's fallen Watcher angels) & the portion of the earth the is Satan's (Azazel's) also fall & remain under him (1 En 10 4-7)

11b. The serpent's 'tail swept a third of the stars out of the sky.' (Rev 12:4)

10d. Satan with the fallen angels are at least a subset of the sons of God & at least some of whom come to the LORD & confirm they have been walking to & fro on the earth. (Job 1:7)

10b. He became different from the other angels, but his nature, intelligence, & understanding of righteousness & sinful things remained. (2 En 31:4)

10c. Azazel cast to Dudael / wilderness / Sheol, put over all things dead, & ascribe to him all things sin. (1 En 10:4-9)

This Biblical reference confirms the location to which Satan & his rebellious angels were cast. To the earth, Sheol, the 'wilderness.' Also, see Gen 6:1-4 for a Biblical mention of the sons of God & how they rebel.

I'm adding the Biblical reference here as a secondary reference for two reasons. First, the reference from Enoch is definitely referring to when Satan (Satanail) rejected the LORD. Second, because this does confirm that angels fell with him.

The debate regarding Rev 12:4 is about the timing, & whether this is referring to the casting out of heaven at the end of the war in heaven or the original casting out happening here. Either way, the point is the same, angels have fallen into rebellion, remain under Satan, & this is confirmed Biblically.

Humanity

Underworld (Pit)

## Fall of Satan

### Azazel, Satanail, & the Biblical Satan

Azazel & Satanail & Satan appear to be the same character. As their prince [leader], it also looks that he ultimately bears responsibility for initiating the first fall (even though the others bear responsibility for their role), & participation in the second fall, Azazel (Satanail, Satan) receives the greatest punishment from the LORD.

Reading 2 Enoch 18:1-7, Satanail is the leader of the Grigori, who are soldiers. Thus, Satanail would know & could teach the making & use of weapons. But in 1 Enoch 8:1-3 we learn that this was done by Azazel, who would have known this.

That Azazel is handed the harshest punishment would indicate that he is, at the time of judgment, the leader of those harassing humanity. In 1 Enoch 55:4 we learn that the LORD's Elect One [Jesus] shall judge Azazel & all his (Azazel's) associates. Note that those not under the authority of Azazel are already imprisoned in the Pit awaiting either their role in the tribulation of the last week of this dispensation, or final judgement, or both.

Yet we see that Satanail is described similarly to the 'signet of perfection, full of wisdom & perfect in beauty' in Eden, the garden of God from Ezekiel 28:12, & the Day Star, who laid the nations low in Isaiah 14:12. 2 Enoch 31:3-5 refers to "Satanail (Satan)" as the devil, who became different from the other angels, but his nature, intelligence, & understanding of righteous & sinful things did not change. In 2 Enoch 18:3 we see that Satanail was the prince that rejected the Lord of light (& led the Grigori to do the same) which deepens the connection between Ezekiel 28:12 & Isaiah 14:12.

In 2 Enoch 29 we get a better description of the heavenly troops created by the Most High. They are not called Grigori here, but the description of their order seems to concur with the description of the Grigori warrior angels. Out of this order "3 one turned away with the order that was under him, conceived an impossible thought, to place his throne higher than the clouds above the earth, that he might become equal in rank to my power. 4 And I threw him out from the height with his angels, and he was flying in the air continuously above the bottomless" (2 En 29:3-4). Which runs us right back into the Scriptures from Ezekiel & Isaiah again.

In 2 Enoch 31:4-6 it tells us that the devil is the evil spirit over the lower places, a fugitive, & made Sotona from the heavens as his name was Satanail (Satan). That he became different from the other angels, but his nature, intelligence, & understanding of righteous & sinful things did not change.

Finally, when Jesus is tempted in the 'wilderness' in Matthew, we learn that the devil was the tempter. The 'wilderness' context is relevant, because it is Dudael, where Azazel was cast. This is further confirmed by Leviticus 16:6-10, in the sending of sin to Azazel.

All of this seems to indicate that the names Azazel & Satanail are both references to the same character, & are who we colloquially refer to as 'the satan' or 'the devil' from the NT.

### Satan's Fall to Pride

In passing we will say something like 'Satan fell to pride.' But the audacity of his pride & level of rebellion to the Lord of Light becomes apparent when we unpack the fall from Is 14:12-17)

The Grigori with their prince Satanail (Satan) rejected the Lord of light, & are those held in great darkness on the second heaven (2 En 18:3).



### **What God thought**

Lament in Isaiah 14:12-21

- Cut down to the ground (earth) (vs. 12)
- You fell to your own pride (vs. 13-14)
- But you are brought down to Sheol (earth) (vs. 15)
- To the far reaches of the pit (earth) (vs. 15)
- Those who see you will be astonished (vs. 16-18)
- Cast out, clothed with the slain, pierced by the sword (vs. 19)
- Go down to the stones of the pit (earth) like a dead body trampled underfoot (vs. 19)
- Prepare slaughter for his sons, lest they rise & possess the earth (vs. 21)

Lament in Ezekiel 28:11-19

- You were the signet of perfection (vs. 12)
- Full of wisdom & beauty (vs. 12)
- Were in Eden, the garden of God (vs. 13)
- An anointed guardian cherub (vs. 14)
- Placed on the Holy Mountain (vs. 14)
- Blameless in your ways (vs. 15)
- Until unrighteousness was found in you (vs. 15)
- Filled with violence, & you sinned (vs. 16)
- Your heart was proud because of your beauty (vs. 17)
- You corrupted your wisdom for your splendor (vs. 17)
- I cast you to the ground (earth) (vs. 17)
- I exposed you before kings (vs. 17)
- By the multitude of your iniquities, in your unrighteousness, you profaned the sanctuaries (vs. 18)
- All people are appalled at you (vs. 19)
- You have a dreadful end (vs. 19)
- And shall be no more forever (vs. 19)

### **LORD's Judgement: Azazel**

From these passages in Isaiah & Ezekiel we know that

- Satan 'fell,' (Is 14:13-14)
- The LORD 'cut [him] down to the ground,' & he was 'brought down to Sheol, to the far reaches of the pit' (Is 14:12-15). That the LORD cast him down 'to the ground' (Ezk 28:17).

This concurs with passages regarding Azazel & Satanail. In 1 Enoch 10:4-7 the LORD commands Raphael to bind Azazel & cast him out into Dudael, which is the wilderness & agrees with Azazel in Leviticus 16:6-10. In 2 Enoch 18:3 Satanail rejects the Lord of Light & in 2 Enoch 29:4 is cast out flying continually above the bottomless which agrees with the far reaches of the Pit in Isaiah 14:12-15. Because the passages are all describing the same event & agree with each other the reasonable conclusion is that Azazel, Satanail, & Satan are all names for the same character.

### **Impacts to Satan (Azazel)**

The Bible uses metaphorical language quite often. It also uses many terms & names for the same places & characters. Nonetheless, the Scripture always agrees with itself. Unpacking these terms coheres with what we know of Satan in the NT:

- Fell: the falling of Satan is the unrighteousness that was found in him.
- Cut down, brought down, & cast him down: the judgement actions of the LORD.
- The ground, Sheol, the pit: these are all an area in the earth.

In Leviticus 16:6-10 we see the sacrifice of the two goats. The second is sent to the 'wilderness,' which takes the sin of Israel to Azazel, where sin belongs. The insight here for the ground, Sheol, & the pit, is that it is the same place metaphorically referred to as the 'wilderness' in Leviticus.

All of this agrees with the idea that [\[the\]](#) Satan is cast out of Eden, demoted, & has sin & the 'things that are dead' attributed to him which we see in Leviticus, & ultimately the NT.

### **Impact to Angels**

We learn that this affected the angels that reported to him as well. Many rely on Revelation 12 where it reads that the serpent's "tail swept a third of the stars out of the sky" (Rev 12:4). Most believe this happened at the same time as Satan's fall.

This agrees with 2 Enoch 18:1-7 which describe the Grigori Angels, which were warrior angels that reported to Satanail (Satan) who rejected the Lord of light. His Grigori also rejected the Lord of light (vs. 3).

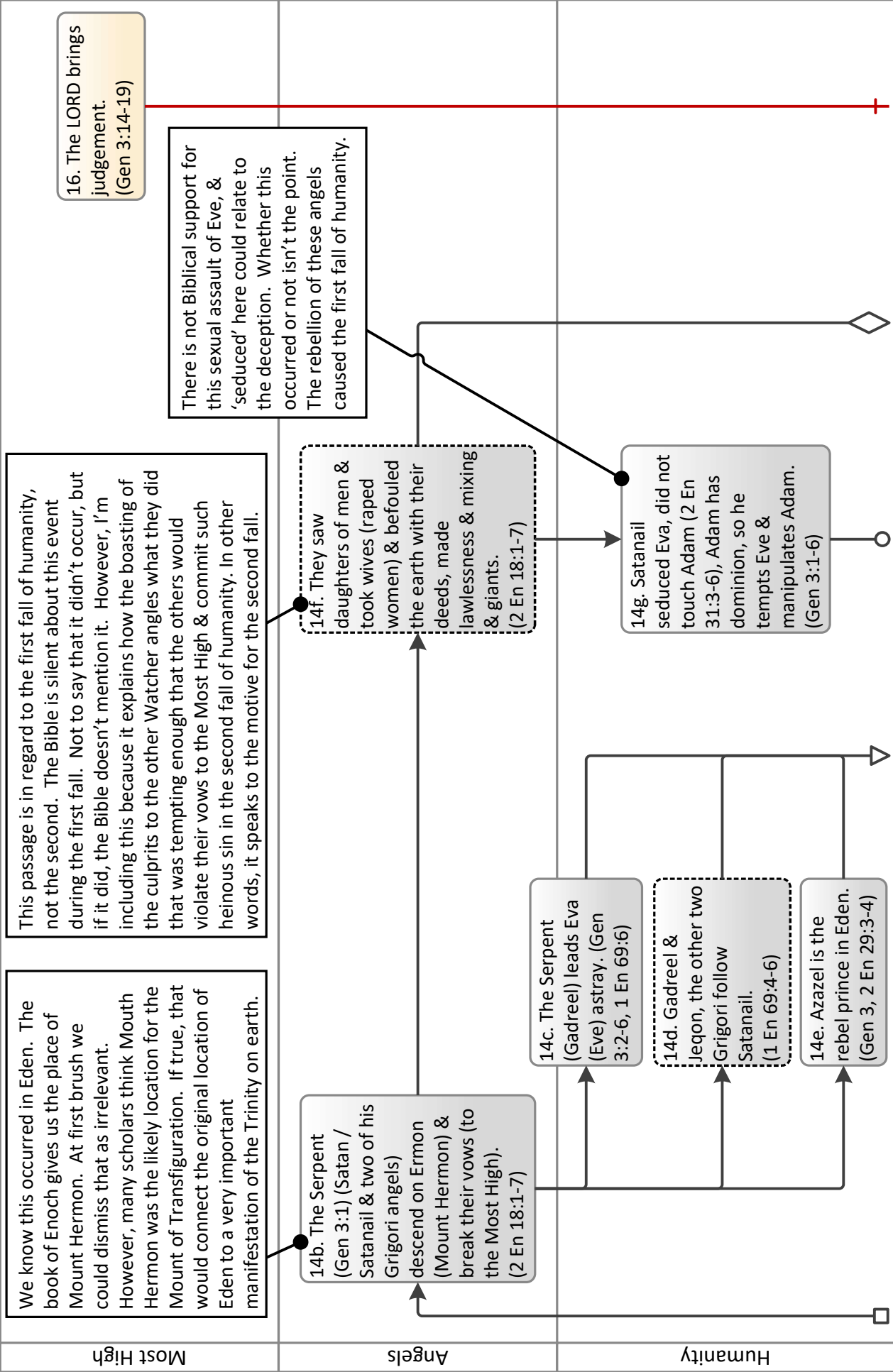
The bottom line is that the fall of Satan also involved a fall of those under his dominion, impacting these angels as well. As they are also 'fallen,' these are (at least some of) the 'fallen angels.' But even though used widely in Christian rhetoric, the term 'fallen angels' is not a Biblical term.

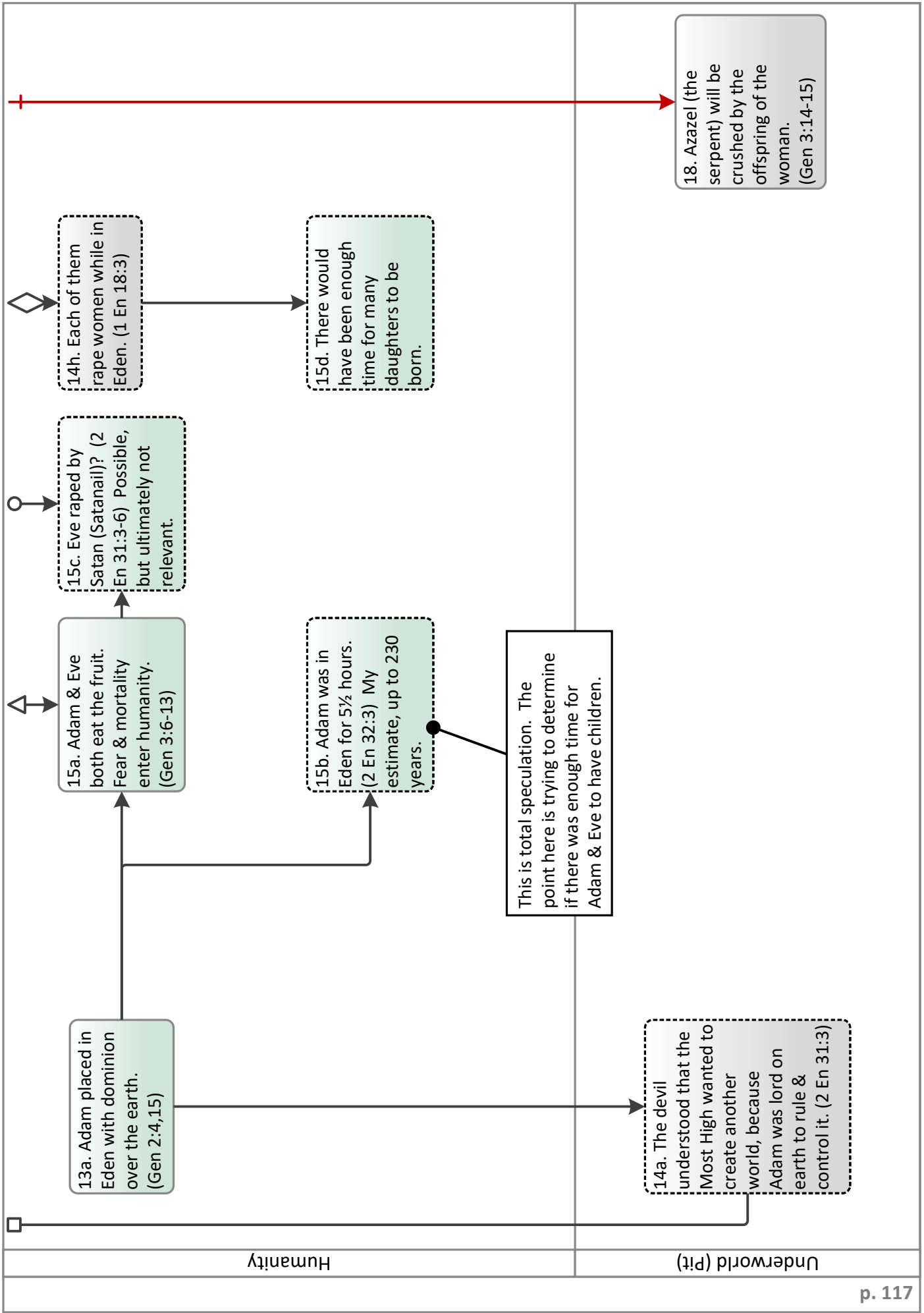
Image

4e

First Fall of Humanity

(1) Disp: Innocence





## First Fall of Humanity

### Adam, time in Eden, & daughters

If Adam was in Eden for 5 ½ hours (2 En 32:3), if this is year to day time, that would put Adam in Eden for ~ 230 years. In that time, Eve would have been made (Gen 2:21-23; 2 En 30:16), & there would have been many offspring, making it possible for daughters to have been born, & the rebels to see, lust, & rape them.

Adam was 130 years old when Seth was born (Gen 5:3). While the genealogy in this chapter follows Seth, that does not mean that other siblings were not born prior to Seth, with Cain & Abel being cases in point.

Adam lived 930 years (Gen 5:5), which would easily support the ~ 230 years in Eden. Of course, this amount of time in Eden is purely speculative based on year to day math.

It also makes it possible for the second fall to more closely follow the first. Meaning that once mankind sinned, the Watchers could have initiated the second fall.

### Fury of Azazel

Azazel is jealous & hates mankind who not only replaced his position of dominion over the earth (Ezk 28:13; 2 En 31:3), but was created to be a child of the Most High God (Gen 2:15-16; 3 En 5:1).

### First Fall Rebels: Azazel, Gadreel, Jegon

According to the Book of Enoch, three of [the Grigori] went down to Ermon [Mount Hermon], saw the daughters of men, raped them, & taught them secrets of heaven, & created the Nephilim.

- Satanail (Satan) seduced Eva, did not touch Adam (2 En 31:5)
- Gadreel led Eva astray & showed weapons of death to mankind (1 En 69:6)
- Jegon led the sons of God away (1 En 69:4)

### Deception of Eve

In contrast to the sexual defilement, terms like 'seduced' & 'led astray' appear to relate to the deception. Regardless, it appears that both deception & rape took place.

Traditional teaching for the first fall (Gen 3) focuses on the deception, with the taking of wives (Gen 6:1-4) being the rape of women. That is sufficient, & certainly supported by the Bible.

### Taking Wives = Raping Women

Per Heiser's original language study, my understanding here is that the language we see related to sexual defilement or rape is the 'taking of wives.' Thus, I see 'seduced' & 'led astray' in the first fall of humanity relating to deception.

### Interesting Correspondences

There is an interesting correspondence between the three that went to Eden first, & the end times characters the false prophet, the antichrist, & Satan.

Also, between Satan, & DUBBIEL the Prince of Persia, & SAMMAEL the Prince of Rome (3 En 26:12).

### What God thought

Rebellion by the angels has messed up God's good plan & His good world. He sees the end from the beginning, & it is still worth it to get to His human family. God has a plan to rebuild, & will use the circumstances to allow humanity to choose Him with their own free will.

## §4: The Enemy: First Fall of Humanity

### **LORD's Judgement: Mankind**

Genesis 3:16, for women

- The Lord will multiply pain in childbearing
- A woman's desire will be contrary to their husband
- But husbands will rule over their wives

Genesis 3:17-19, for men

- Cursed is the ground because you ate from the tree
- In pain you shall eat from the ground all the days of your life
- Thorns & thistles the ground will bring forth
- You shall eat from the plants of the field by the sweat of your face
- You shall eat bread till you return to the ground
- You are dust, & to dust you shall return

2 Enoch 31:6

- Does not curse what He had previously blessed
- But cursed man's evil fruit & his works

### **Impacts to Humanity**

- Mankind is now mortal & their bodies will die.
- They are estranged from God.
- Women will have painful childbirth & be ruled over by their husbands.
- Men are required to work hard labor to produce from the ground.
- Fear enters the human condition, brought by their circumstances & the enemy

### **How the LORD helps humanity**

Teaches making of clothes, worship, etc...

It's time to grow these people up.

### **LORD's Judgement: The Serpent**

It is possible that the Serpent could mean the collection of the leaders of the sons of God, a subset of them, like the three that first saw the daughters of man, or Santanail by himself. The last of these seem seems the most likely, & is supported in Revelation 12 where it reads, "And the great dragon was thrown down, that ancient serpent, who is called the devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world – he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him" (Rev 12:9).

Genesis 3:14-15

- Cursed above all livestock, & more than the beasts of the field
- Shall crawl on their belly & eat dust (metaphorical language)
- The Lord has put enmity (opposition) between the serpent & the woman
- Enmity between your (the serpent's) offspring & her offspring
- he shall bruise your head, & you his heel

### **Impacts to Azazel & the Serpent**

- The serpent is cast out of Eden, down from the Mountain of God
- Cursed
- Will have opposition with humanity
- Is prophesied to have this strange encounter with the offspring of humanity, a prophecy referring to the defeat of the enemy, sin, & death by Christ Jesus.

### **What this means for us**

We still live in a dangerous world. While we are in a different dispensation, the harassment of the enemy is violently at work attempting to destroy all of humanity, the image bearers of the Most High.

Notice that there is enmity (contention) between the serpent's offspring & the woman's offspring. The serpent is part of the sons of God who defile themselves with women, father the Nephilim (which are destructive by themselves), & become the unclean spirits (NT demons) which harass humanity until the day of the Great Day of Judgement of the Lord. This enmity between the offspring of the serpent & the woman is still very active today & affects all of humanity.

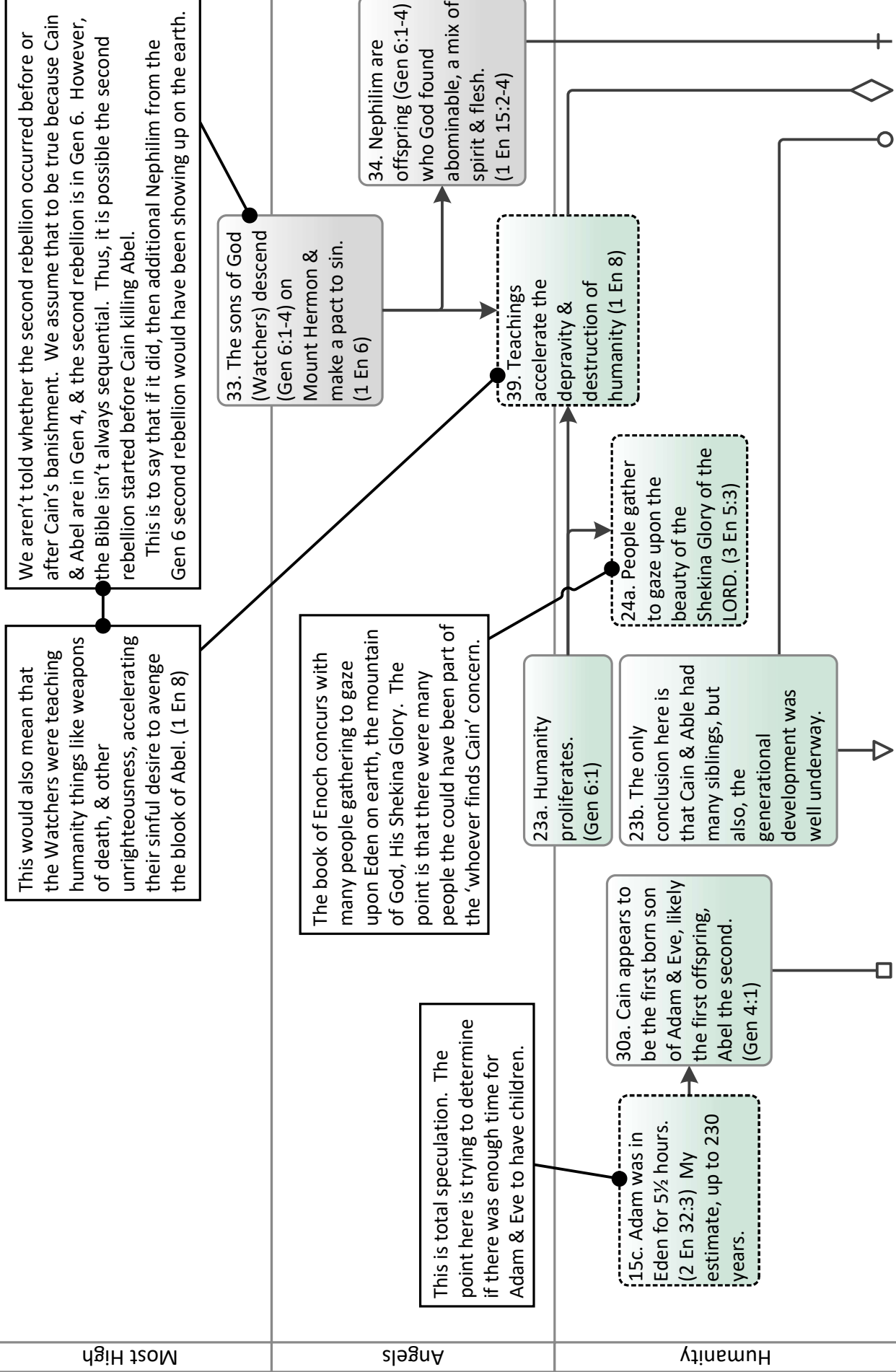


Image

4f

Cain's Concern

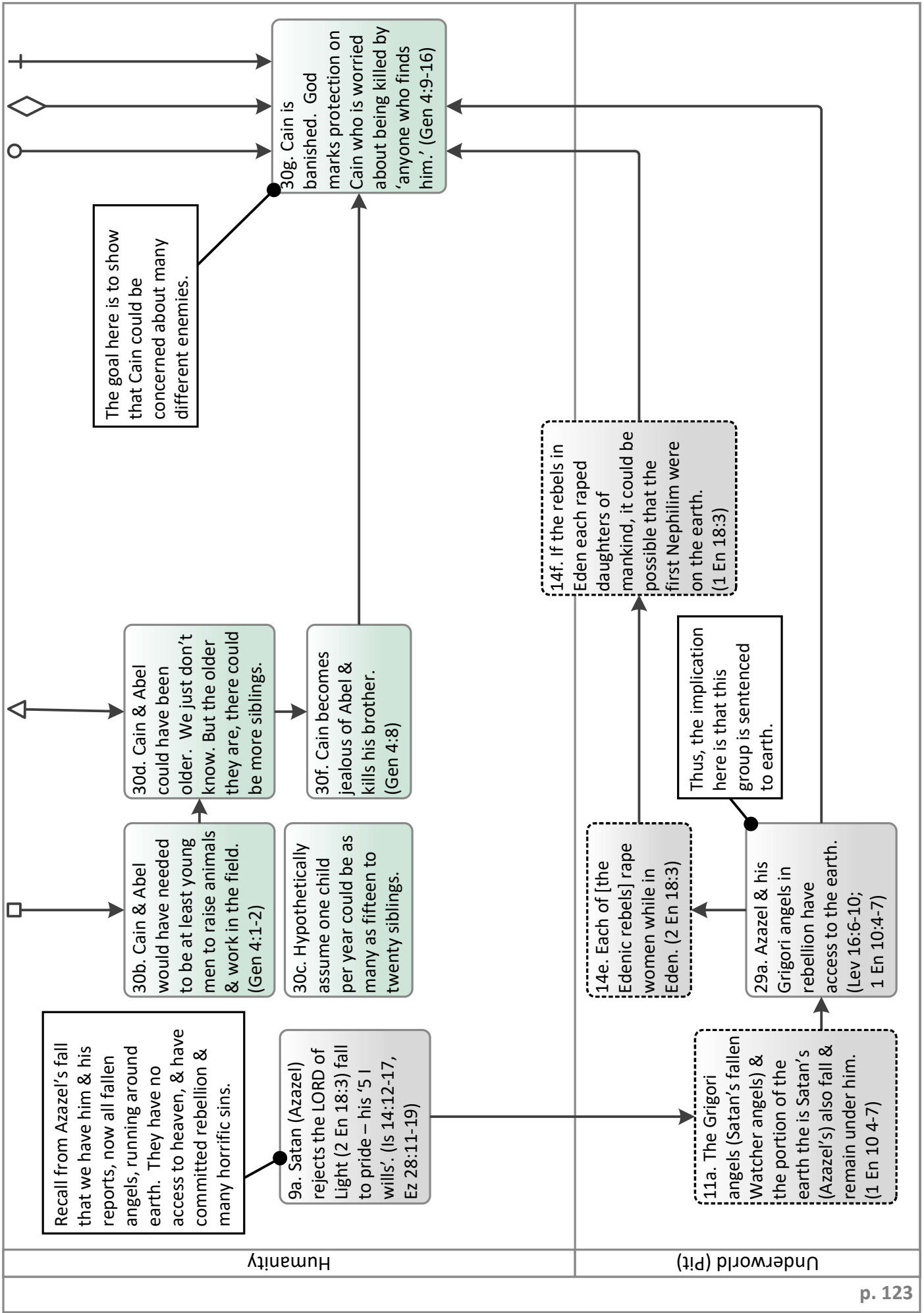
(2) Disp: Conscience



Most High

Angels

Humanity



## Cain's Concern

### Cain's Concern: Siblings

While the Bible does not tell us how long Adam & Eve were in the Garden of Eden, it also does not tell us how old Cain & Abel were at the time of Genesis 4. However, given the work they were doing, it is reasonable to expect they were at least young men.

That Adam could have been in Eden for as much as (again speculative) 230 years; & that we don't know how old he was when the LORD made Eve; & we don't know how many siblings were born during the time in Eden, or after the eviction from Eden...

At the end of the day, it is still reasonable to expect that Cain & Abel had many siblings. That Seth is mentioned as a 'replacement' for Abel has no impact on this theory. At the earliest & most likely, Seth was the first son born after Abel's death.

Because I'm investigating for plausibility, it meets that standard to expect that many siblings were around that could have been upset with Cain for murdering Abel.

### Cain's Concern: Fallen Angels

At the time of the eviction from Eden, other beings were running around the earth. At the very least there is Azazel. Probably there are his two associates that the writer of Enoch describes as being involved in the first fall of humanity. And further, there were probably the order of the heavenly guard – the Grigori – that were under the leadership of Azazel who fell with him.

So far, that is quite a bit.

Because the sequence of events is not perfectly clear, I've placed the concern of Cain prior to the second fall. However, if it occurred during or after the second fall, then Cain may have also been concerned with a few others. First of all, the rest of the Watchers, which per the writer of Enoch are about two hundred in number. Then there are the Nephilim, which may have been starting to show up as a result of the second fall.

Also note that the start of the second fall is the rebellion described in Genesis 6:1-4, & detailed in 1 Enoch 6-10. Nonetheless, the behavior of the angels that came as a part of the rebellion went on for some time. During this time the angels took women as wives (raped them), sired the Nephilim, & taught humanity all sorts of wickedness. These details explain the result we see in Genesis 6, where "the LORD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, & that every intention of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually" (Gen 6:5). Since the LORD creates nothing evil, it had to come from somewhere, & the details from 1 Enoch answer that question. The presence of human sin (from Adam's fall in Eden & now all of humanity) & rebellion (from the angels & now mankind) provides the perfect environment for Cain's concern. The point here is that not only do these stories connect, but they more importantly help explain one another.

### Cain's Concern: Nephilim

Because the sequence of events is not perfectly clear, I've placed the concern of Cain prior to the second fall. However, if it occurred during or after the second fall, then Cain may have also been concerned with a few others. First of all, the rest of the Watchers, which per the writer of Enoch are about two hundred in number. Then there are the Nephilim, which may have been starting to show up as a result of the second fall.

This would have been a real concern if this were a factor because the Nephilim were especially destructive toward mankind. Genesis 6 tells us of all the violence & wickedness on the earth, & 1 Enoch 9:1-2 explains how the blood of man cries up to the gates of heaven.

### **Cain's Concern: Conclusion**

While the Bible doesn't explicitly tell us who Cain was concerned about, it is easy to understand how it could have been a combination of his siblings, Azazel & his company of Grigory, the other fallen Watcher angels, & possibly even some of the first Nephilim.

Each of these cast of characters are actually supported by Biblical references, or at worst by apocryphal texts. Thus, odd fabrications of alternate lines of humanity, or other theories.

### **What God thought**

The story of Cain & Abel in Genesis 4 is one where we are given backstory about events that happened that aren't explicitly told in the Bible.

The LORD teaches offerings: That Cain & Abel know to bring offerings to the LORD tells us that the LORD had instructed humanity, probably Adam & Eve & potentially any of their children alive at this point regarding the practice of offering & worship to the LORD, & what was acceptable & what wasn't. We know this because both Cain & Abel bring offerings, but also because the LORD had regard for Abel's offering & not Cain's offering. This is the catalyst for jealousy to arise within Cain, & the motive for murder.

The LORDS direct involvement: We also see direct conversation happening between the LORD & Cain. The LORD even attempts to remediate the problem with a solution that is acceptable to the LORD (vs. 6-7). Then we read the notorious warning 'sin is crouching at the door' (vs. 7). There is a lot of teaching that can be unpacked here, but the point is that within this story from verses 6 to 15 we see the direct involvement of the LORD with Cain.

Sin is crouching at the door: We can also pull from this conversation that in the face of our problems & emotional reactions the LORD provides us, just like He does for Cain a Godly solution. But also, like Cain we often choose to solve our problems in our own way based on our human emotions that are out of alignment with the LORD. Nonetheless, know God & have a sin problem, don't define ourselves by our sin & have a God problem. Thus, the LORD's warning, that sin is crouching at the door, applies to us just like it did for Cain.

Repentance is an option: This thought about free choice or free will applies to repentance as well. After killing Abel, the LORD asks Cain where his brother is. Cain again chooses to deepen the wound of sin with a misdirect, "am I my brother's keeper?" (vs. 9). Not that this would have made up for killing Abel, that is done. But Cain continues down the path of sin rather than confessing his sin & avoiding the second sin of denial.

### **LORD's Judgement: [WHO]**

The LORD delivers the following judgement:

- Cain will be cursed from the ground (vs. 11)
- The ground will no longer yield its strength (vs. 12)
- Cain will be a fugitive & a wanderer (vs. 12)

Effectively Cain is banished from where he lives, & to a life of hard labor. He is also banished from a direct relationship with the LORD, which is implied from the help provided by the LORD before Cain leaves, & explicit when Cain says, "you have driven me away from the ground and your face I shall be hidden" (vs. 13-14).

##### **How the LORD helps humanity**

Cain feels the weight of his judgment saying "it is more than I can bear" (vs. 13). Then we get Cain's concern that "whoever finds me will kill me" (vs. 14). We've already discussed how there are many possible suspects that could be included in that 'whoever.'

The LORD extends His Grace in two ways. He places a mark on Cain indicating that he is protected by the Almighty God, & vows to avenge anyone sevenfold who should attack Cain (vs. 15).

We know this was important because only a few verses later Lamech tells his wives Adah & Zillah that he killed a man, & if Cain's revenge is sevenfold, then Lamech's is seventy-sevenfold (vs. 23-24). This is Lamech's interpretation & not corroborated by the LORD. Nonetheless, this underscores how Cain's protection was important because it was known to Cain's great, great, great grandson. Cain, Enoch, Irad, Mehujael, Methushael, Lamech (vs. 17-18).

##### **What this means for us**

This is important to understand for us today. The LORD still expects us to mature spiritually so that we can fight against the sins, transgressions, & iniquities that separate us from Him.

Our repentance needs to be specific & humble. Returning to the LORD is the only way to resolve the issue of sin. Pride is at the root of what causes the misdirect from Cain, & God resists the proud, but gives His Grace to the humble (1 Pt 5:5; Jm 4:6-7).

Image

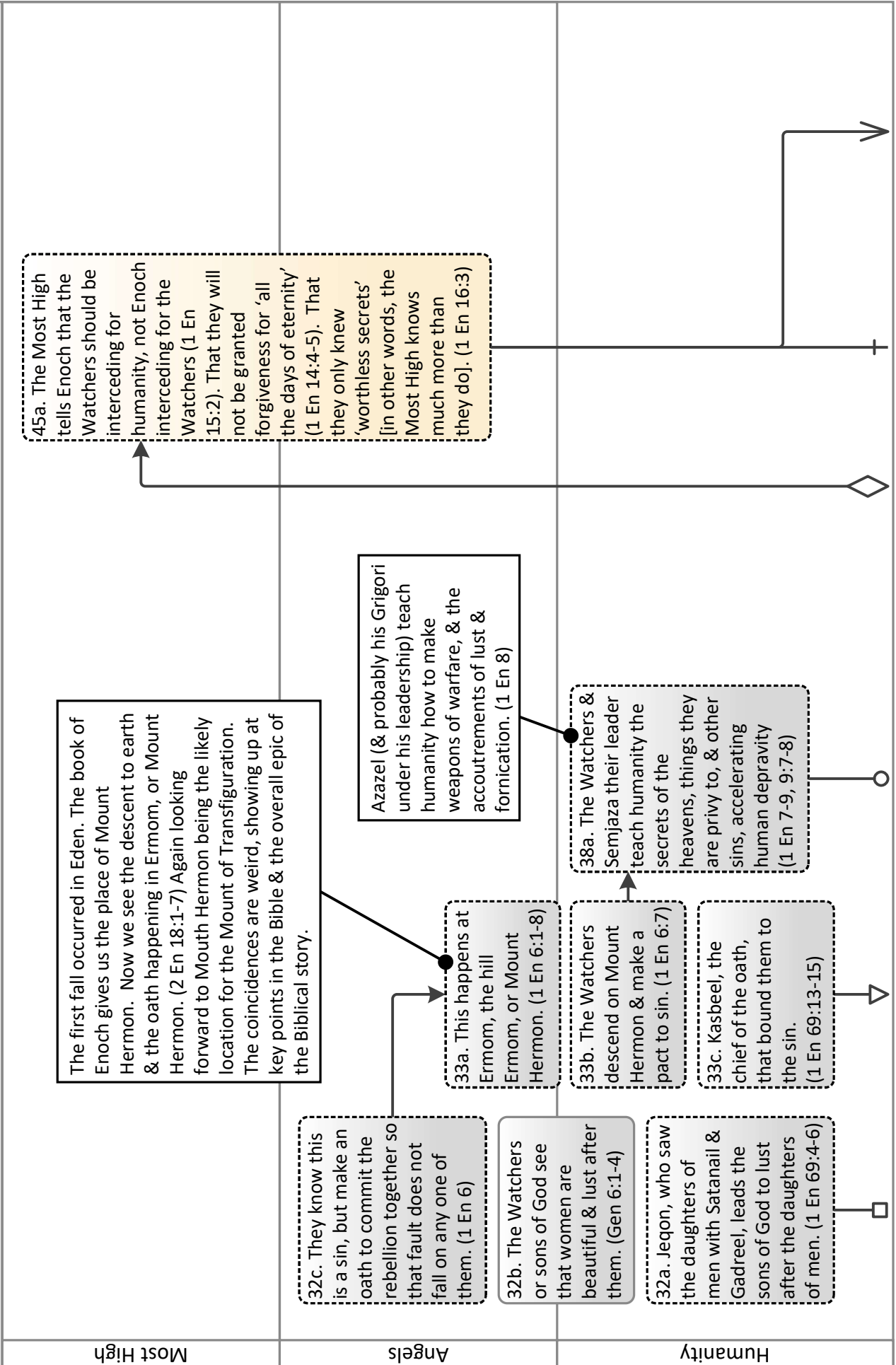
4g

Second Fall of Humanity  
(Women Being Chased)

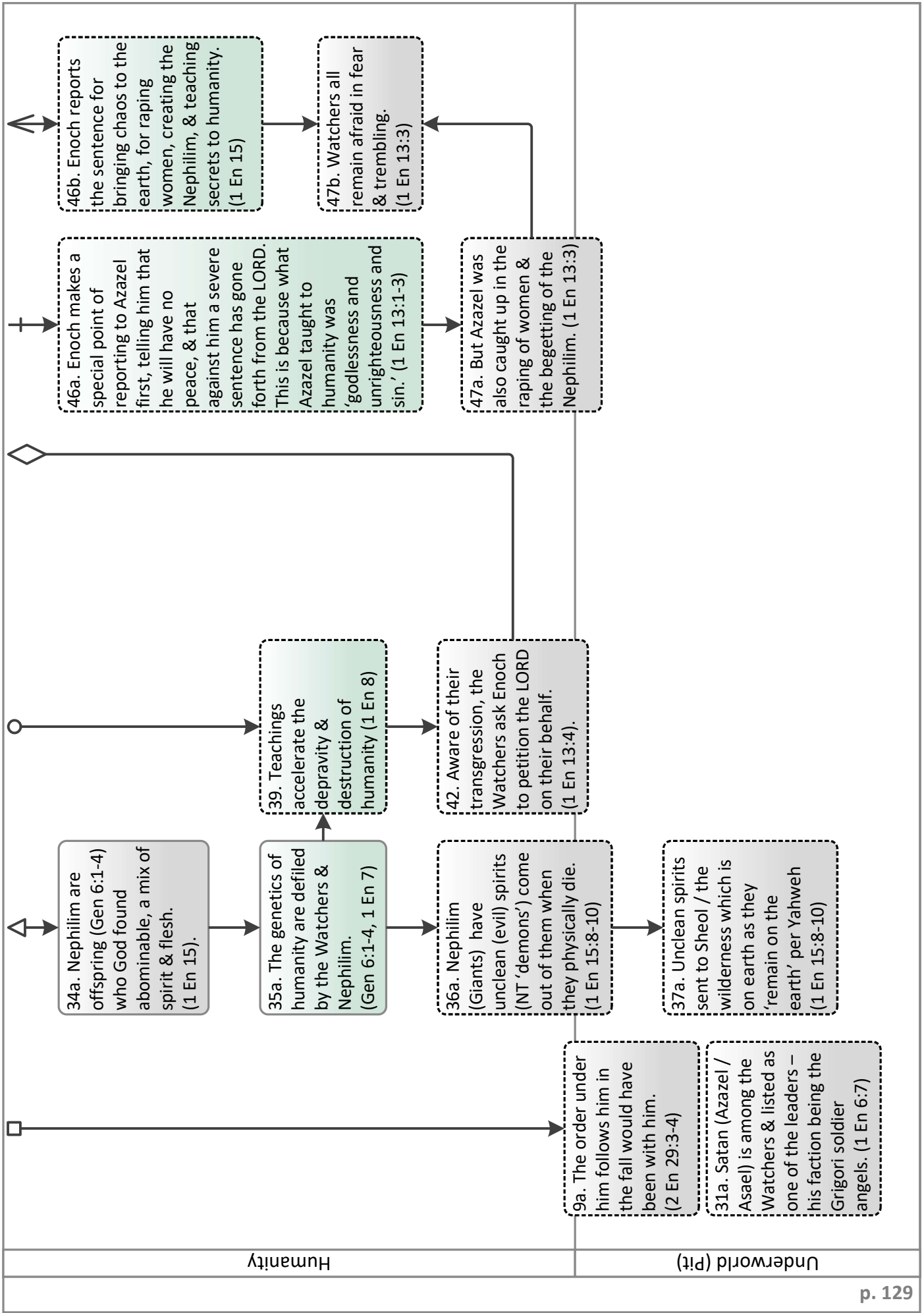
\$4: The Enemy: Second Fall of Humanity

2<sup>nd</sup> Abode of Satan

(2) Disp: Conscience







## Second Fall of Humanity

The Books of Enoch are referenced here more than any other flow. There are several reasons for this...

First, Genesis 6:1-4 is very short, but also very 'weird,' which has led to all sorts of explanations that have no Biblical backing, but also fail to fit within the context of the NT authors. For example, that the sons of God are the line of Seth. These 'humanize' the event & dilute the spiritual reality of what the Bible is teaching.

Second, the importance of understanding this rebellion is critical to understanding the spiritual 'Deuteronomy 32 / Psalm 82' world view held by the NT authors.

Third, both Peter & Jude make references to the angels that were judged as a result of this specific rebellion.

Fourth, Paul had this view. In Ephesians 6:12 where he wrote about not wrestling against flesh & blood, but principalities (princes), rulers, the darkness of this world, & a spiritual wickedness in high places he is talking about this. The angels that rebelled here, & the unclean spirits that came out of the Nephilim. He is also making reference to the rebellious gods of Nations.

Finally, putting this into context won't hurt us. The goal here isn't to make doctrine out of non-Biblical works. However, the NT is critical for followers of Jesus, & understanding the context in which it was understood by the authors, written down for us, & expected that we would understand is essential to our faith.

### **Second Fall Rebels: Leaders & Members**

1 Enoch 6:1-8

- Semjaza (their leader) (vs. 3)
- Samiazaz, their leader (vs. 7)
- two hundred Watchers (vs. 6)

Verses 7-8, chiefs of tens:

- Samiazaz their leader (Semjaza)
- Asael (vs. 8, Azazel)
- Arakiba, Rameel, Kokabiel, Tamiel, Ramiel, Danel, Ezeqeel, Baraqijal, Asael, Armaros, Batarel, Ananel, Zaqiel, Zamsapeel, Satarel, Turel, Jomjael, Sariel.

### **First Fall to Second Fall Connection?**

1 Enoch 69:1-15

- Azazel (vs. 3)
- Jeqon led sons of God away (vs. 4)
- Gadreel led Eve astray (vs. 6)
- Gadreel showed weapons of death (vs. 6-7)

In the first fall there were possibly three instigators. Azazel brought Jeqon & Gadreel. Now in the second fall there are two hundred Watchers. We don't know if this was all of them, or a subset. Regardless, it is a larger group than the first fall.

Jeqon leading away the larger group of Watchers would make sense. It creates a reasonable connection that implies a possible bragging of the exploits of the first fall. This evil council of sorts becomes a temptation for the larger group.

## §4: The Enemy: Second Fall of Humanity

Then we see that Gadreel showed humanity the weapons of death. This is clearly outlined as performed by Azazel in 1 Enoch 8:1-3. But it would make sense that Gadreel under the command of Azazel would have participated in this event.

The connection between Gadreel & Azazel would further make sense looking at 2 Enoch 18:1-7. If Santanail is the leader of the Grigori, who are soldiers, & Gadreel is a member of the Grigori, then both Azazel / Santanail & Gadreel (Grigori) would know & could teach the making & use of weapons.

### **Fall Part 1 & 2?**

Given the commonality between the perpetrators & the events of rebellion – & that we aren't told how much time transpired between the first & second rebellion, we can almost think of this as a part 1 & part 2 of the same, but larger rebellion. Either way, the outcome is the same. A defiled humanity, & judgement from God.

### **Teachings by Watchers to Humanity**

We learn in 1 Enoch 8:1-3 that the Watchers taught humanity:

- Azazel - weapons (vs. 1)
- Azazel - beautification (vs. 1)
- Azazel - godlessness (vs. 2)
- Semjaza - enchantments & root cuttings (vs. 3)
- Armaros - resolving enchantments (vs. 3)
- Baraqijal - astrology (vs. 3)
- Kokabel - constellations (vs. 3)
- Ezeqeel - clouds (weather) (vs. 3)
- Araquel - signs of earth (vs. 3)
- Shamsiel - signs of the sun (vs. 3)
- Sariel - course of the moon (vs. 3)

As a result, men perished & a cry went up to heaven (vs. 3)

### **Rebellions by Azazel**

1 Enoch 9:6

- Azazel has done
- Taught unrighteousness
- Revealed eternal secrets preserved in heaven

### **Rebellions by Semjaza & Watchers**

1 Enoch 9:7-10

- Semjaza to rule over his associates (Watchers)
- He led them to rape women
- And they created the Nephilim

## §4: The Enemy: Second Fall of Humanity

### **Watchers petition the LORD**

1 Enoch 13:3-7

- They were afraid & trembling (vs. 4)
- Drew up a petition for Enoch to take (vs. 4)
- They couldn't talk to the Most High anymore (vs. 5)
- For shame of their sin, they're condemned (vs. 6)
- Petition requests forgiveness (vs. 7)
- Happened at the waters of Dan (vs. 7)

### **LORD's message given to Enoch:**

1 Enoch 15:1-11

- The Watchers should intercede for mankind, but Enoch intercedes for you (vs. 2-3)

1 Enoch 12:3-6

- Watchers have (vs. 3)
- Have left heaven (vs. 4)
- Defiled themselves with women (vs. 4)
- Done as the children of earth do (vs. 4)
- Have taken wives (raped women) (vs. 4-5)
- Wrought great destruction on earth (vs. 5)
- Will have no peace or forgiveness of sin (vs. 5-6)

### **What God thought**

Genesis 6:5-6 Humanity has been corrupted & their hearts are wicked. God's heart is broken. He created humanity to be His family, & the rebellion of the angels has raped & brutalized God's human family.

In 1 Enoch 9:6-11 the LORD is particularly upset

1. First about Azazel, as his deeds resulted in the teaching of unrighteousness & the secrets of heaven on earth.
2. Then with Semjaza, who was supposed to lead the Watchers, but instead lead them into this rebellion.
3. Then with all of the Watchers, who defiled themselves with women, revealed all kinds (types) of sin to humanity, & created the Nephilim (giants).
4. That the upshot of the Nephilim is filling the earth with blood & unrighteousness, the killing of humanity.

1 Enoch 15:8-11

- The Nephilim (giants) are abominations (vs. 8)
- Created from spirit & flesh (vs. 8)
- Evil spirits that shouldn't have existed (vs. 9)

### **LORD's Judgement: The Watchers**

1 Enoch 15

- They should intercede for men, not you for them (vs. 2-3)
- They left the eternal heaven, lain with women, & defiled themselves, & begotten sons (vs. 3)
- You were spiritual, eternal, & immortal (vs. 7)
- Now you will die (formerly eternal) like mankind (vs. 6-7)

## §4: The Enemy: Second Fall of Humanity

### 1 Enoch

- You shall have no peace (1 En 16:4)
- Description of the end of heaven (1 En 18:12-16)
- Watchers shall go there (1 En 19:1-3)
- Raphael observes, because they do as if they were the LORD (1 En 68:4-5)

### **Impacts to the Watchers**

To detail this out a bit more see the flow “Second Flow Consequences” which investigates the judgments of the LORD.

### **Impacts to Humanity**

- Humanity is corrupted at a genetic level, which causes a persistent problem
- Not only is the sin in the flesh, it is literally part of the human genome
- The defiled genetics go through the flood in the bodies of the wives of Noah’s sons
- The depravity of humans is accelerated;
  - pre-flood the hearts of man are wicked all the time (Gen 6:5-6)
  - post flood the defiled behavior continues
- The Watchers taught humans many things, but most of all humans have learned how to commit willful acts of rebellion.
  - Not only sin, but transgression (willful sin), & iniquity (habitual sin)

Image

4g

Second Fall of Humanity  
(Angels Teaching)

Image

4h

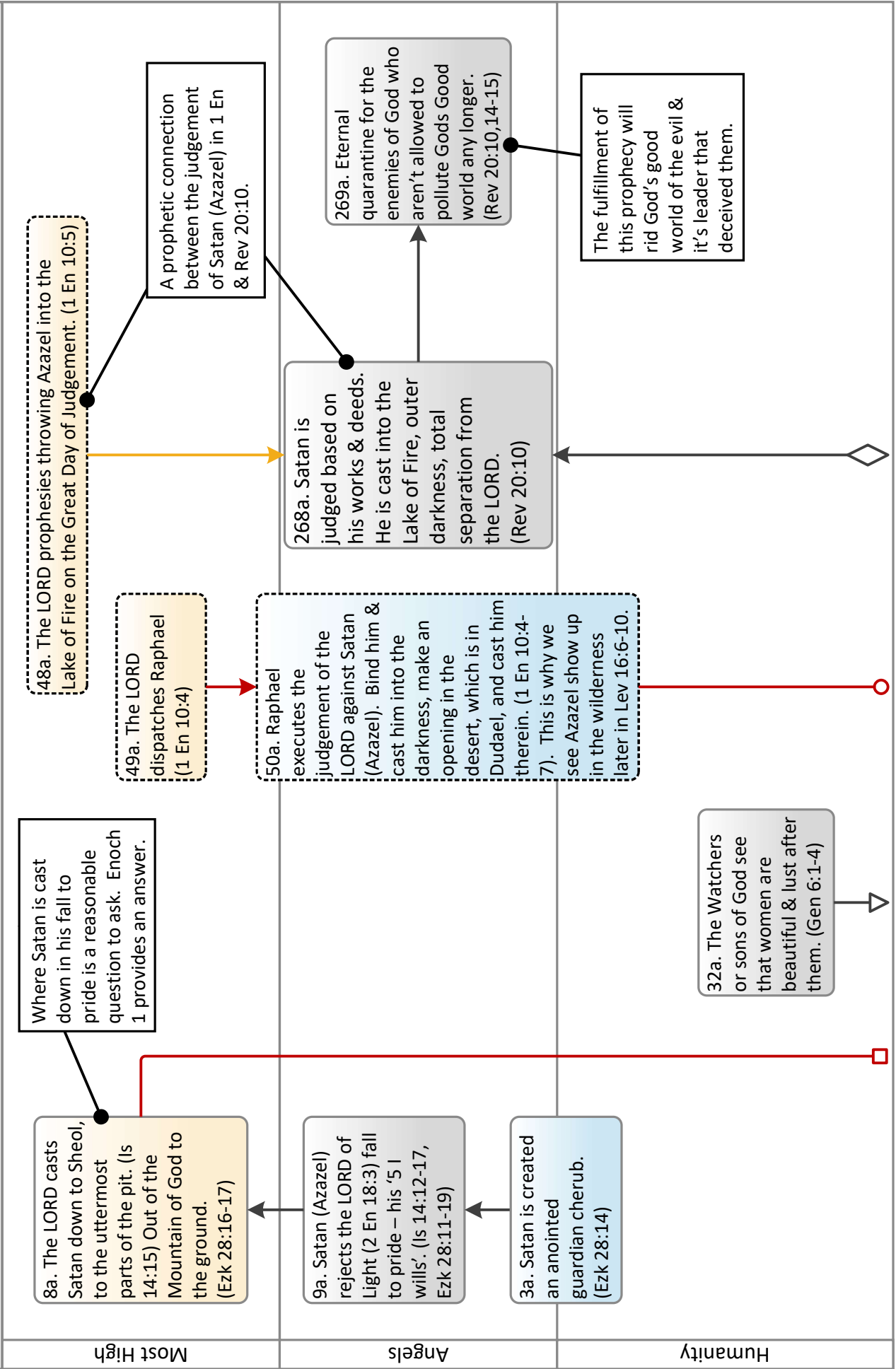
Second Fall Consequences

Pt 1 Satan

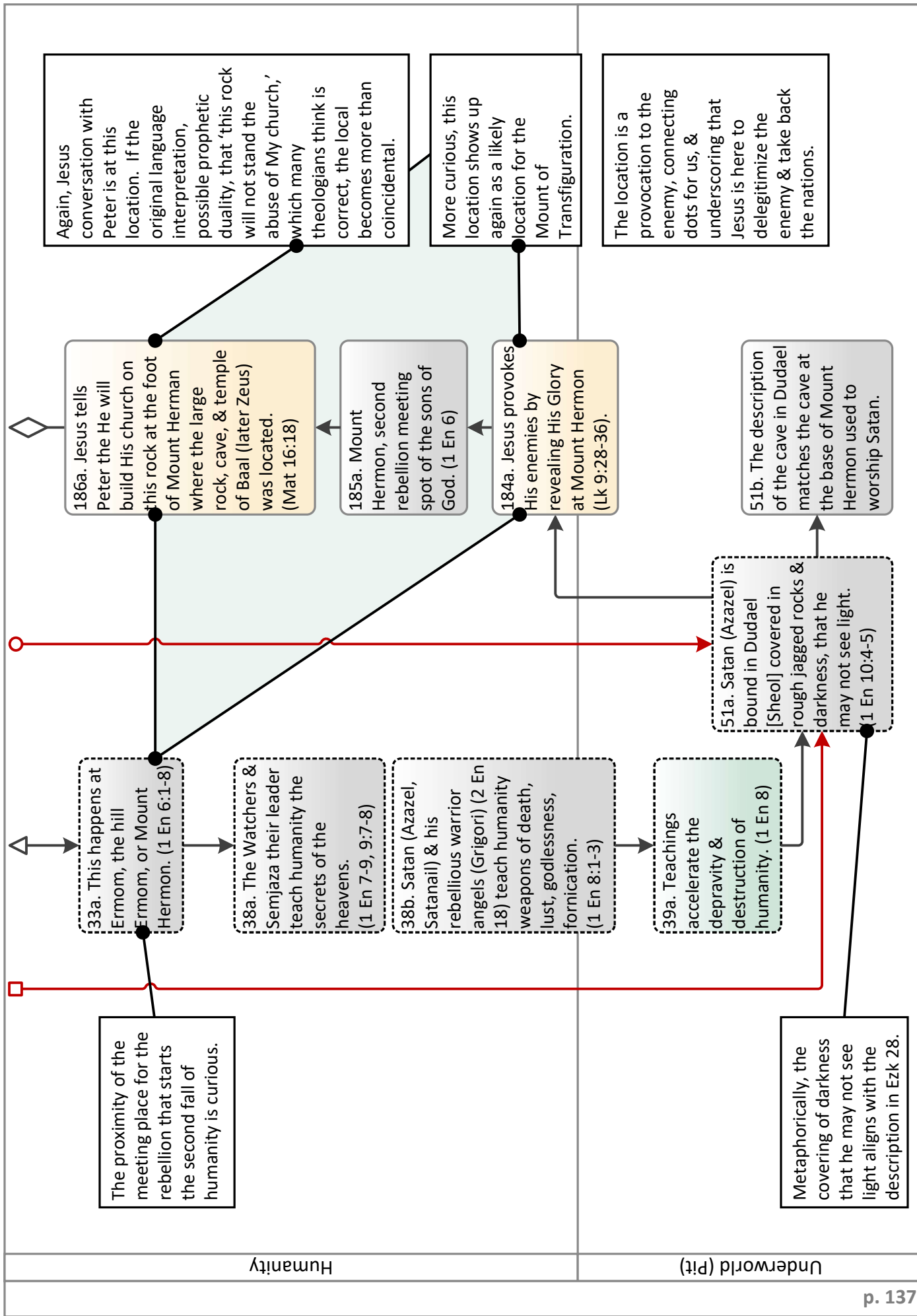
\$4: The Enemy: Second Fall Consequences – Part 1: Satan

Second Fall Consequences – Part 1: Satan

(2) Disp: Conscience







## Second Fall Consequences – Part 1: Satan

### What God thought: Enoch reports to Satan (Azazel) specifically

1 Enoch 13:1-3

- Satan (Azazel) will have no peace (vs. 1)
- Satan (Azazel) will have a severe sentence (vs. 1)
- Satan (Azazel) will be put into bonds (vs. 2)
- He will have no toleration from LORD (vs. 2)
- Nor with his request be granted because: (vs. 2)
  1. He taught unrighteousness (vs. 2)
  2. And all the works of godlessness & unrighteousness & sin shown to men (vs. 2-3)

Satan (Azazel) was also involved with the rest of the Watcher angels in raping women, creating the Nephilim which the LORD though was an abominable mix of flesh & spirit, & in specifically in the teaching of weapons of death (warfare). We learn in 2 Enoch 18 that the Grigori, a faction of the fallen Watcher angels that were under the dominion of Satanail (Azazel) were warrior angels. Thus, they would have had the knowledge to teach this trade.

### LORD's Judgement: Satan (Azazel)

1 Enoch 10:4-7

- Bind Azazel hand & foot
- Cast him into the darkness
- Make an opening in the desert in Dudael
- Place rough & jagged rocks
- Cover him up with darkness
- And abide there forever
- That he may not see light
- And cast in to the Lake of Fire on the day of great judgment

### Impacts to Satan (Azazel)

Satan is not placed over the unclean spirits at this point. This is because the Nephilim are still living on earth, similar to humans. That means that the spirits had not yet come out of their physical (mortal) bodies, & had not yet been assigned by the LORD to Satan (Azazel). These are the unclean spirits that in the NT (& by modern people) are called 'demons.'

Despite these consequences, Satan (Azazel) still has access to harass humanity on the earth. We see later he still has access to the Most High when he petitions the LORD in response to Noah's post-flood prayer. This is confirmed in Job (Job 1:6-12, 2:1-7). A possible explanation for this is that the LORD is teaching Satan (Azazel) a lesson – that he is not capable of being 'like the Most High God.' The ultimate failure of Satan is guaranteed. But the ability to continue the futile attempts answers questions about his access to earth & humanity. It also answers they question about why Satan is let loose from the pit at the end of the Millennial Kingdom.

### Where Satan is cast down

In Box 8 the LORD casts Satan out.

Box 51 is more Biblically relevant than you might think. The goal here is not to prove a location, but to review a few details that are at the very least interesting. Many theologians think that this could be the cave in Caesarea Philippi in the foothills of Mount Hermon, which in antiquity was a temple to Baal (Satan).

- Satan was made as an anointed cherub placed on the Mountain of God (Ezk 28:14) which was Eden.
- After his fall, Satan is cast down from the Mountain of God to the ground (Ezk 28:11-19, Is 14:12-21).
- Mount Hermon is a likely location for the Mountain of God, Eden.

- This cave is in the wilderness (1 En 10:4-7) would have been literally down the hill from Mount Hermon (possibly Eden).
- Dudael is another name for the wilderness, like Sheol, Hades, the ground, etc. But specifically, where dead things are (1 En 10:5).
- This agrees with where Azazel (Satan) is, & where sin is sent (Lev 16:6-10).
- The cave fits the description in Enoch with jagged rocks (1 En 10:4-5), & was used by people to worship Satan (Baal, Pan).
- Mount Hermon is also a likely location for the Mount of Transfiguration. On the way down the mountain Jesus told Peter, “Upon this rock I will build my church” (Mat 16:18). This can mean upon Peter, & us as well!
- But also, per Heiser, the original language seems to imply Jesus was likely saying ‘this rock will not withstand (the beating) from my church.’ That it happens at this location is not inconsequential.

It isn't worth holding on to this so tight that we lose sight of the importance of the Gospel, or create contention within the Body of Christ. We also don't want to shoot an arrow into a wall, paint a bullseye, & say we are exactly on point. Still, isn't it weird that all this seems to fit? It makes me smile to think that the Lord Jesus was calling the enemy out with keen strategy, played out here, that gave them into His hand at the cross.

#### **Analysis of Satan's Punishment**

The LORD gives Satan a different punishment. Biblically we tend to think of Satan as the main ‘bad guy,’ which is true. The focus in the Biblical texts also centers on him disproportionately as a character. In the Book of Enoch Satan (Azazel, Santanail) are called out with particular scrutiny. The ‘what’ of his judgement is enumerated. But the ‘why’ is an interesting question.

By comparison, consider humanity. The first sin of humanity was a desire to have our eyes opened, be ‘like God’ knowing good & evil, & being able to rule ourselves as gods. To teach humanity that we are not equipped to rule ourselves the LORD has taken us through several dispensations. Each time He directly interacts with Humanity setting us up for success. We drift into a state of apostasy, & He eventually brings judgement. Then, because He is full of Grace, again sets humanity up for success again.

The lesson is more than we can't rule ourselves, but that we are desperately dependent on the LORD to be our God. Without Him we are doomed to failure.

Now consider Satan. His first fall was to be ‘like the Most High God.’ With each fall he absorbs more responsibility for more spirit beings in rebellion. The kingdom of Satan is real, & juxtapose to the Kingdom of the Most High God. Ruling this kingdom of darkness is the responsibility of the evil one. In other words, he has an opportunity to try to be ‘like the Most High God.’

At this point he has his original angels, the unclean spirits that remain loose, & the rebellious sons of God. He does not have command the rebellious Watcher angels who are, as per 2 Peter 2:4 & Jude 1:6, locked in chains of gloomy darkness. Still, he currently operates with quite an entourage. During the Tribulation this will increase as the unclean spirits that are locked in the pit are let loose to ravage the unmarked people (Rev 9:1-11).

Despite this army of rebellious spirit beings, Satan is still not comparable to the Most High God. Satan has not & will not be able to fulfill his original prideful thought. Thus, in part two of this deep dive when considering why the other Watcher angels are bound in chains & Satan (Azazel) is not, it occurs to me that the LORD is teaching him a lesson too. For Satan this is an exercise in futility, because he is doomed to the Lake of Fire.

For humanity, the loving Grace of God has been extended to us. God resists the proud, but draws close to the humble (Prov 3:34; Jm 4:6; 1 Pt 5:5). We are saved through faith, not works, so that no one should boast (Eph 2:8-9).

Image

4i

Second Fall Consequences  
Pt 2 Angels

\$4: The Enemy: Second Fall Consequences – Part 2: Angels, Unclean Spirits, & Humans

Consequences: unclean spirits

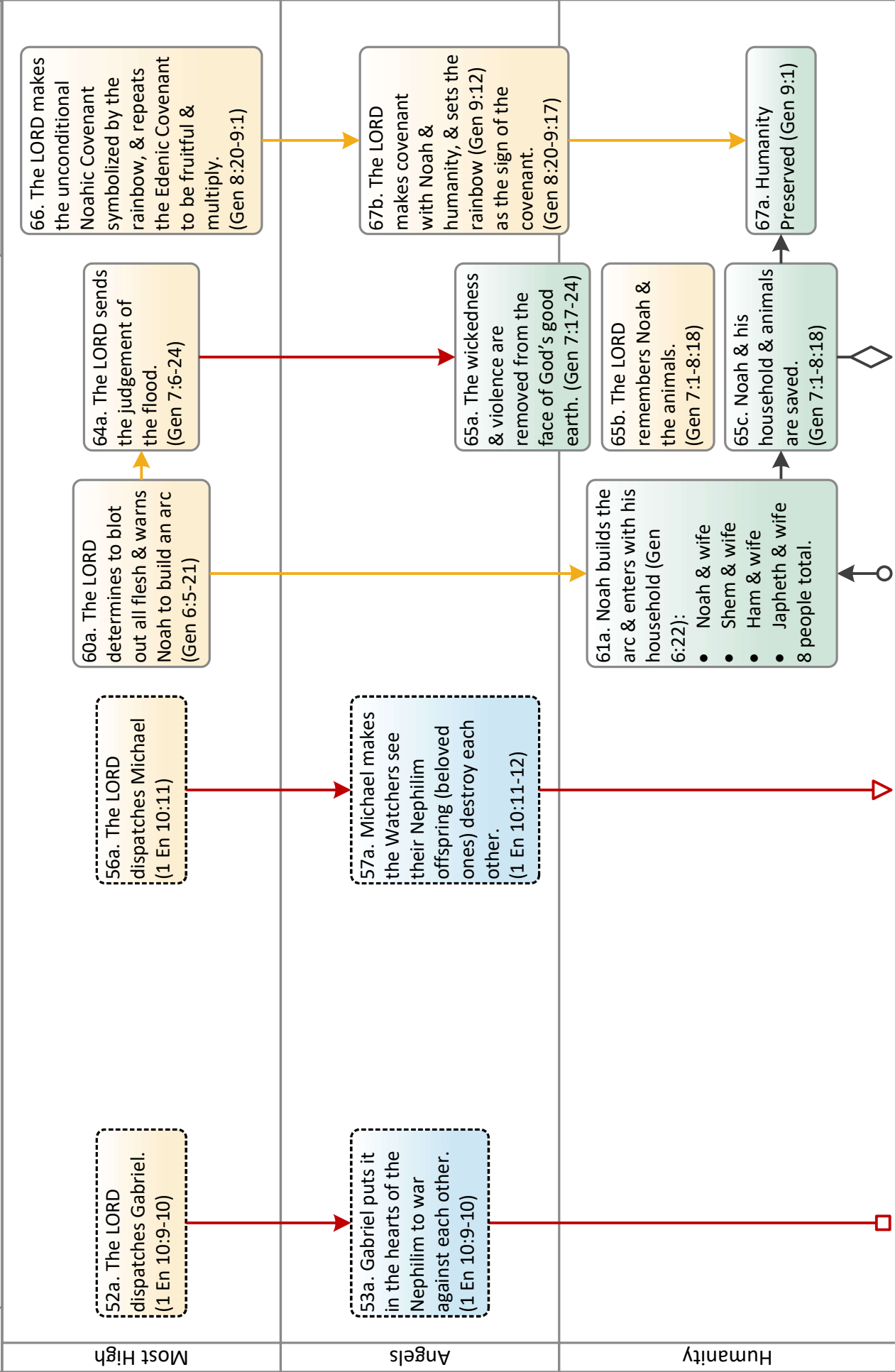
Consequences: angels who rebelled

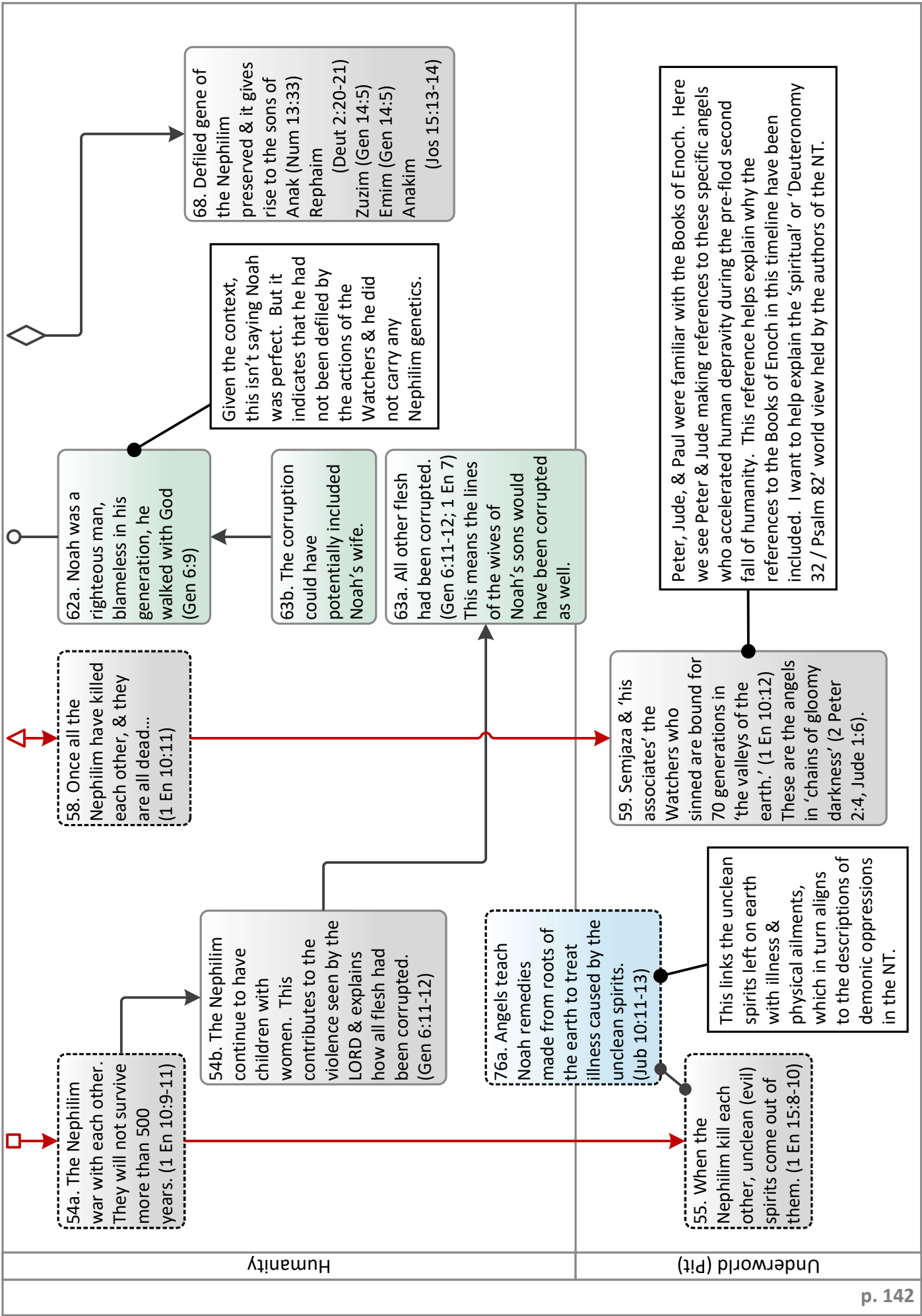
The Flood

Noahic Covenant

(2) Disp: Conscience

(3) Disp: Human Govt





## Second Fall Consequences – Part 2: Angels, Unclean Spirits & Humans

### **UNCLEAN SPIRITS**

#### **LORD's Judgement: the Nephilim & unclean spirits**

1 Enoch 15:8 – 16:2

Giants:

- Are produced from spirits & flesh (vs. 8)
- Will dwell on the earth (vs. 8)

Evil spirits:

- Will proceed from them (vs. 8-9)
- Evil spirits they will be called (vs. 10)
- They will dwell on earth (vs. 10)
- Afflict, oppress, destroy, attack, do battle & work destruction on earth, & cause trouble (vs. 10)
- They will afflict, oppress, destroy, attack, do battle, work destruction, & cause trouble (vs. 11)
- Will hunger & thirst, but cannot eat or drink (vs. 11)
- Will hunger & thirst & cause offenses (vs. 12)
- Will rise up against the children of mankind because they have proceeded from them (vs. 12)
- They shall destroy until the great judgment (16:1)
- When they shall be consumed (vs. 2)

Remember in the First Fall, the LORD prophesied that He would put enmity (opposition) between the serpent & the woman, & between your (the serpent's) offspring & her offspring? (Gen 3:14-15) While this is contention that will be realized in several ways (& also has Messianic implications), here we have one answer to how that will happen. The physical (mortal) bodies of the Nephilim die, unclean spirits (demons) come out of them, & their nature & character is to harass humanity. Thus, we see this still happening even today, with demonic oppressions still affecting humanity.

### **Watcher Angels**

#### **The Watchers Petition the Lord**

The watcher angels know their sin. They knew it before they "did this thing" (1 En 6:1-6), & made a pact to do so. Now after their rebellion they decide to seek forgiveness from the LORD, & ask Enoch to perform this task for them (1 En 13:4-5).

#### **What God thought: The LORD's response to the petition**

1 Enoch 13:8 Enoch Sees:

- Visions of chastisement
- Reprimand for the Watchers

#### **LORD's Judgement: Semjaza & the Watchers**

1 Enoch 10:11-16

- Semjaza & his associates (Watchers)
- Who raped women
- Watch their sons destroy each other
- Bind them in the earth

### Impacts to Semjaza & the Watchers

1 Enoch 14:4-7

- The petition not be accepted
- No forgiveness all the days of eternity
- Judgement will be passed on them
- Not able to ascend to heaven
- Placed in bonds of the earth

1 Enoch 16:4

- You will have no peace

### **Humanity**

#### What God thought: About the condition of Humanity

Genesis 6:5-12

- The wickedness of mankind was great.
- Every intention of the thoughts of their heart were evil continually.
- The earth was corrupt in God's sight, filled with violence.
- All flesh had corrupted their way on the earth.

#### LORD's Judgement: Humanity

- The LORD determined to blot out man (Gen 6:7).
  - This also includes all of the animals – even the “creeping things” (bugs) & birds.
- The LORD sends the flood to deal with the unrighteousness (Gen 6:13).

#### How the LORD helps humanity

Genesis 6:9-7:23

- The LORD tells Noah to build an arc.
  - The two of every kind allows the animal kinds to survive as well.
- Noah, the arc, 8 people survive

#### Impacts to Humanity

- Humanity preserved through the flood
- Today the Holy Spirit blunts humanity depravity caused by the sons of God pre-flood

### **Satan's Command of Demons & Angels**

There is nothing Biblically (other than by implication) to indicate that the unclean spirits that come out of the Nephilim are placed under the command of Satan. This is the importance of the story from the Book of Jubilees, & something covered in the Post Flood Giants & Unclean Spirits deep dive. But at this point following the second fall & judgements, we have Satan (Azazel) & the (likely unorganized) unclean spirits (demons) running around harassing humanity.

This doesn't mean there wouldn't have been cooperation between Satan & the unclean spirits. After all, Azazel was listed as one of the Watcher angels, & would have sired some of them, & taught them wickedness for humanity. The angels had petitioned the LORD to not create man (3 En 4:6), & the destructive behavior against humanity by the Nephilim for their part confirms this same agenda. The cooperation at this point could have been purely a common hatred for humanity or additionally a common enemy in the LORD.



Regardless, according to the Book of Jubilees, Satan petitions the LORD for a tenth of the unclean spirits. As he puts it, 'otherwise he will not be able to fulfill his purpose' (Jub 10:4-6a). This seems to indicate not only a continuation of the common agenda, but also an expansion in the responsibility of Satan's position.

This event would have followed the flood, but in relative temporal proximity would have still been within the life of Noah. Thus, at the conclusion of the judgements of the second fall of humanity Satan was not yet in a leadership position over these unclean spirits.

With respect to the angels that were under the command of Satan (Azazel, Satanail), the Grigori, these appear to have been locked up along with the other Watcher angels as part of the judgement of angels following the second fall. This is why we see them in prison in the fifth heaven story (2 En 18).

This means that at this point the angels that reported to Satan (Azazel, Satanail) were locked up. As this predates the third fall, the sons of God who eventually rebelled were not on the scene yet. However, we eventually see their rebellion too. We know they were placed under the command of Satan prior to the temptation of Jesus in the wilderness, because Satan has the authority to legitimately offer the Nations in exchange for worship.

But for now, Satan has no leadership over either the demons or the angels.

Image

4j

Post Flood Giants & Unclean Spirits

(3) Disp: Human Government

72a. The LORD begins to answer Noah's prayer to lock up all the unclean spirits. (Jub 10:6)

74a. The LORD accepts Azazel's petition, & only locks up 9/10 of the most dangerous unclean spirits (Jub 10:7-9)

73a. Azazel petitions the LORD to leave 1/10 of the unclean spirits on earth & under his command, otherwise he would not be able to fulfill his purpose (Jub 10:11-13)

70a. Harassment by the unclean spirits is severe & dangerous (Jub 10)

71. Noah prays to the Most High to put all the unclean spirits in prison. (Jub 10:4-6a)

67a. Humanity Preserved (Gen 9:1)

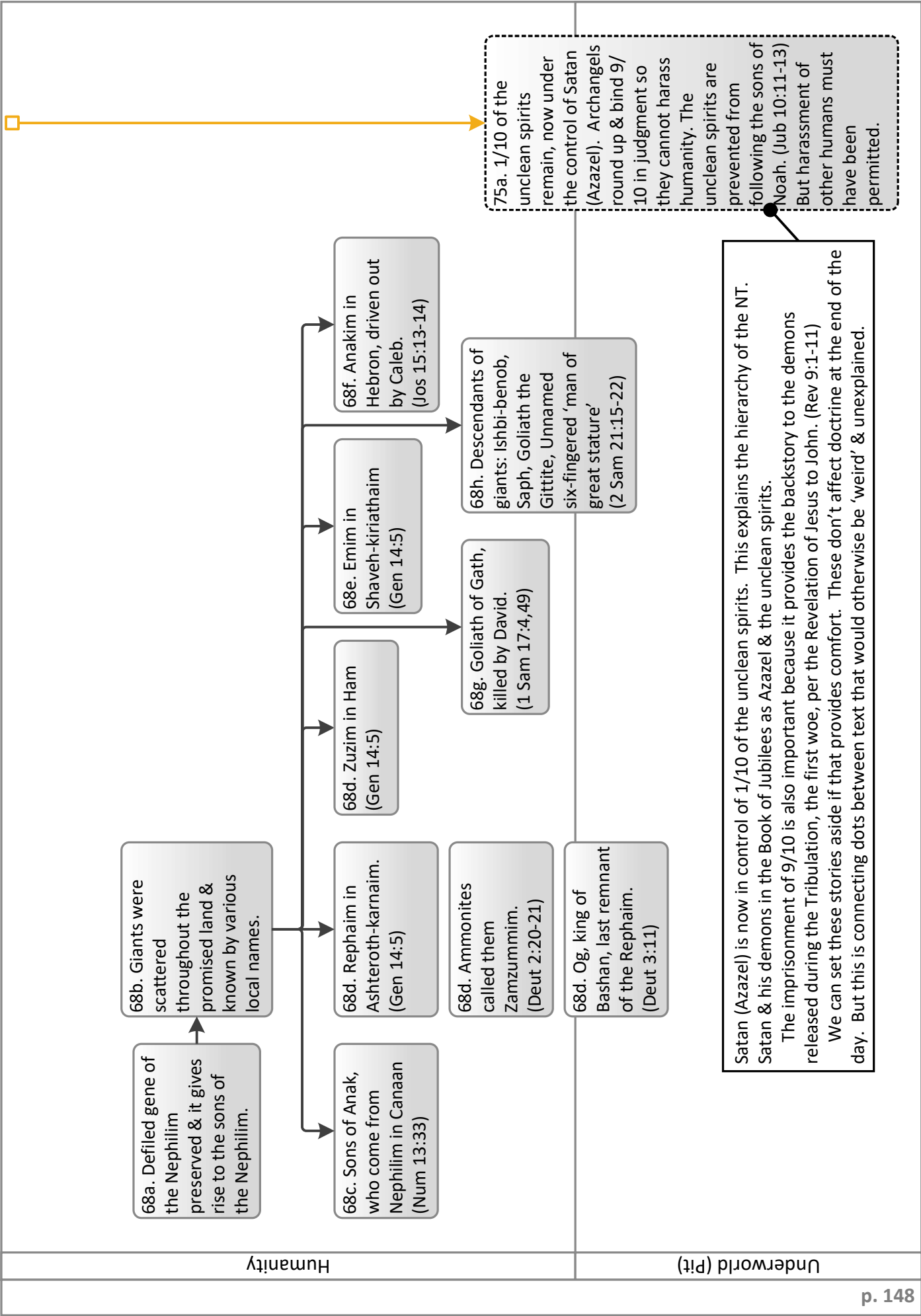
Note that Satan's (Azazel) command of the unclean spirits has not been established.

69a. Azazel & the unclean spirits still have access to harass humanity.

Most High

Angels

Humanity



Humanity

Underworld (Pt)

Satan (Azazel) is now in control of 1/10 of the unclean spirits. This explains the hierarchy of the NT. Satan & his demons in the Book of Jubilees as Azazel & the unclean spirits.

The imprisonment of 9/10 is also important because it provides the backstory to the demons released during the Tribulation, the first woe, per the Revelation of Jesus to John. (Rev 9:1-11)

We can set these stories aside if that provides comfort. These don't affect doctrine at the end of the day. But this is connecting dots between text that would otherwise be 'weird' & unexplained.

## Post Flood Giants & Unclean Spirits

### Level Setting This Deep Dive

Nearly all of this part of the story dealing with the prayer of Noah & the unclean spirits is based on non-Biblical texts. I'd like to reiterate my disclaimer, perhaps for myself, that this is not doctrine, not conspiracy theory, & really only one possible explanation. I'm sure that this could have happened this way. But it could have happened other ways too.

Again, I'm leaning on texts known to the Biblical authors. But where the Books of Enoch are referred to, & Enoch is mentioned by Jesus, I personally don't have as much confidence in the Book of Jubilees. Nonetheless, this version of events does cohere with the Biblical story in some ways, & it helps explain how Satan came to lead the unclean spirits (demons) as we see in the NT.

### Harassment by the Unclean Spirits

Noah lived 350 years following the flood (Gen 9:28) which would have been plenty of time for these events to have unfolded.

As the story goes, humanity is being harassed at an untenable level. Noah prays to the LORD asking Him to lock up the unclean spirits, which are too much to bear. Pre-flood the Nephilim were ravaging & killing humans, & post-flood as unclean spirits their character hasn't changed (Jub 10:4-6a).

The LORD is about to offer reprieve by locking up all the unclean spirits, but Azazel extends a counter petition essentially asking that the LORD leave a tenth of the unclean spirits to him so that he can fulfill his purpose. In response to both petitions the LORD locks up nine tenths of the most dangerous or worst unclean spirits in response to Noah, & leaves one tenth under the command of Azazel in response to his petition. The upshot is in a way, a 'promotion' for Satan. But the increased responsibility, while counterintuitive to us, will in the end teach Satan a lesson (Jub 10:7-9).

### Sidebar about Satan's Petition

My first response to this was, 'what!?' Why would the LORD accept the petition of His enemy, the one that rejected Him!? If this happened, there must have been a good reason for the LORD to do this.

In my analysis of Satan's punishment in part 1 of the Second Fall Consequences I consider the possibility that the LORD was giving Satan (Azazel) what he wanted, a chance to 'be like God.' Now, Satan cannot really be 'like God.' God is like no other. To try & be like him is an exercise in futility. Still, the pride of Satan & his own reference to 'his purpose' indicates that he is still driving at this goal. Thus, placing one tenth of the unclean spirits under Satan (Azazel) would appeal to the pride of Satan, but also accomplish this lesson from the LORD.

The impact to humanity cannot go unnoticed. How would it make sense that a loving God would allow any afflictions of this sort? The answer comes in the many Biblical verses like 1 Peter 1:7, Zechariah 13:9, Isaiah 48:10, & many more. The LORD knows that our edification comes through struggles. Because He is a loving Heavenly Father, He wants us to develop. Exercise is a good metaphor – the more we work our spiritual muscles the stronger (more like Christ Jesus) we become.

### Outcomes & NT Relevance

Azazel is now in control of 1/10 of the unclean spirits. This explains the hierarchy of the New Testament Satan & his demons as Azazel (Satanail) & the unclean spirits. The 9/10 are the demons released during the Tribulation, the first woe, per the Revelation of Jesus to John (Rev 9:1-11). Even if we set aside Enoch, Leviticus 16:6-10 & the sending of sin to Azazel confirms that the wilderness is the dominion of Azazel. In Luke 11:15 we learn that Beelzebul (or 'prince Baal') is a name for the devil who is the 'ruler of demons.' While there are many spiritual 'bad guys,' this one receives special attention & by examining the Scriptures the dots connect Azazel as the NT 'Satan.'

### **Outcomes & NT Relevance**

Azazel is now in control of 1/10 of the unclean spirits. This explains the hierarchy of the New Testament Satan & his demons as Azazel (Satanail) & the unclean spirits. The 9/10 are the demons released during the Tribulation, the first woe, per the Revelation of Jesus to John (Rev 9:1-11). Even if we set aside Enoch, Leviticus 16:6-10 & the sending of sin to Azazel confirms that the wilderness is the dominion of Azazel. In Luke 11:15 we learn that Beelzebul (or 'prince Baal') is a name for the devil who is the 'ruler of demons.' While there are many spiritual 'bad guys,' this one receives special attention & by examining the Scriptures the dots connect Azazel as the NT 'Satan.'

The implication then is that NT Satan, or here Azazel, was placed over the unclean spirits as their ruler. To my knowledge, timing is not confirmed by the Bible, that this happened at some point is revealed by Jesus in Matthew 12:22-28. This is when Jesus is accused of casting out demons by the power of Beelzebul, the prince of demons (vs. 24). But Jesus explains that a house divided against itself will not stand, that Satan cannot cast our Satan (vs. 25-26). This story from the Book of Jubilees provides context which was known in the second Temple period, & was known to the authors of the NT regarding how this happened.

### **Impacts for Humanity Today**

On one hand, it almost feels offensive to suggest that the genetic code of the rebellious Watcher angels would somehow have found its way through the generations & into modern humans. Then again, looking at physical diseases like diabetes (which I fight daily), cancers, & many others; add to that psychological affliction like schizophrenia, bipolar, & many others.

We know these things did not come from the LORD, who created a good world, & mankind which He said was 'very good' (Gen 1:27). So the origin of these things must have been from some other source. If we follow the sequence of what we know.

#### Working Back:

1. In the NT, the unclean spirits (demons) are connected to ailments (Mat 4:23-25)
2. The unclean spirits (demons) came out of the Nephilim when their physical bodies died (1 En 15:8-12).
3. The Nephilim were an abomination to the LORD because they came from spirit (rebellious angels) & flesh (daughters of mankind) (1 En 15:3-4).
4. The daughters of mankind were made 'very good' by the LORD (Gen 1:31; Ps 8:5).
5. Thus, the original defilement would have come from the rebellious angels.

#### Working Forward:

6. Pre-flood, all of humanity was corrupted (Gen 6:5,11-12; 1 En 7).
7. This was moral corruption (Gen 6:11), but given the origin & persistence of the giants, it would have also been physical corruption (Gen 6:2).
8. Physical corruption, based on what we know in modern times, would reside in the genetics & passed down from one generation to the next.
9. Similar to how Jesus describes the leaven of the Pharisees (Lk 12:1-2), once the genetics of humanity were corrupted, without an act of God, you can't 'unmix' the defilement.
10. Noah was righteous, blameless, & walked with God (Gen 6:9), which indicates he was not corrupted morally or physically. This does not mean Noah was perfect, only that he was not defiled as was the rest of humanity.
11. The same is not said about Noah's wife, or the wives of Noah's sons.
12. Even if Noah's wife was not corrupted, the wives of Noah's sons would still have carried the genetic defilement through the flood.

13. Thus, there are reports of giants after the flood. sons of Anak (Num 13:33), Rephaim (Deut 2:20-21), Zuzim (Gen 14:5), Emim (Gen 14:5), Anakim (Jos 15:13-14).

14. By implication, the physical corruption of humanity is also present after the flood. We see this demonstratively at Babel in Genesis 11:1-4 for instance.

#### **Post Flood Giants & Human Physical Corruption**

The reports of the Israelite spies tell of giants in the land of Canaan (Num 13:28-29). We are also familiar with the story of David & Goliath (1 Sam 17:4-8). Perhaps less familiar with the five giants & how they were disposed of by David & his men (2 Sam 21:15-22). But the LORD takes care of many of the giants Himself (Deut 2:19-25).

One option is to reason that all of the impact of the physical corruption was dealt with at this point in history. In many ways, that is a clean approach. However, there are many references in the NT that discuss the sin in the flesh. Romans 8:3 is a great example where Paul is discussing the law of the Spirit of life & the law of sin & death.

It is hard to imagine that the LORD, who said He created humanity ‘very good’ as His imagers, would have included these types of physical issues. To drive this point home, consider this from 1 Corinthians 15:

“50 I tell you this, brothers: flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable. 51 Behold! I tell you a mystery. We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, 52 in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised imperishable, and we shall be changed. 53 For this perishable body must put on the imperishable, and this mortal body must put on immortality. 54 When the perishable puts on the imperishable, and the mortal puts on immortality, then shall come to pass the saying that is written: 55 ‘Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is your victory? O death, where is your sting?’ 56 The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law. 57 But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.”

– 1 Corinthians 15:50-57 ESV

The LORD uses these corruptions for our good, because we are refined by the fire (struggle) (1 Pt 1:6-7). We learn humility, how desperate we need the LORD, & how to trust Him in all things. This is how the LORD saves those that believe through the midst of all things. With this perspective, I think there is reason to think that the rebellions against the LORD by the angels so long ago explain why even today we struggle with disease, affliction, & terrible circumstances – all of which provide a platform for the unclean spirits to operate in their harassment of us all.

Image

4K

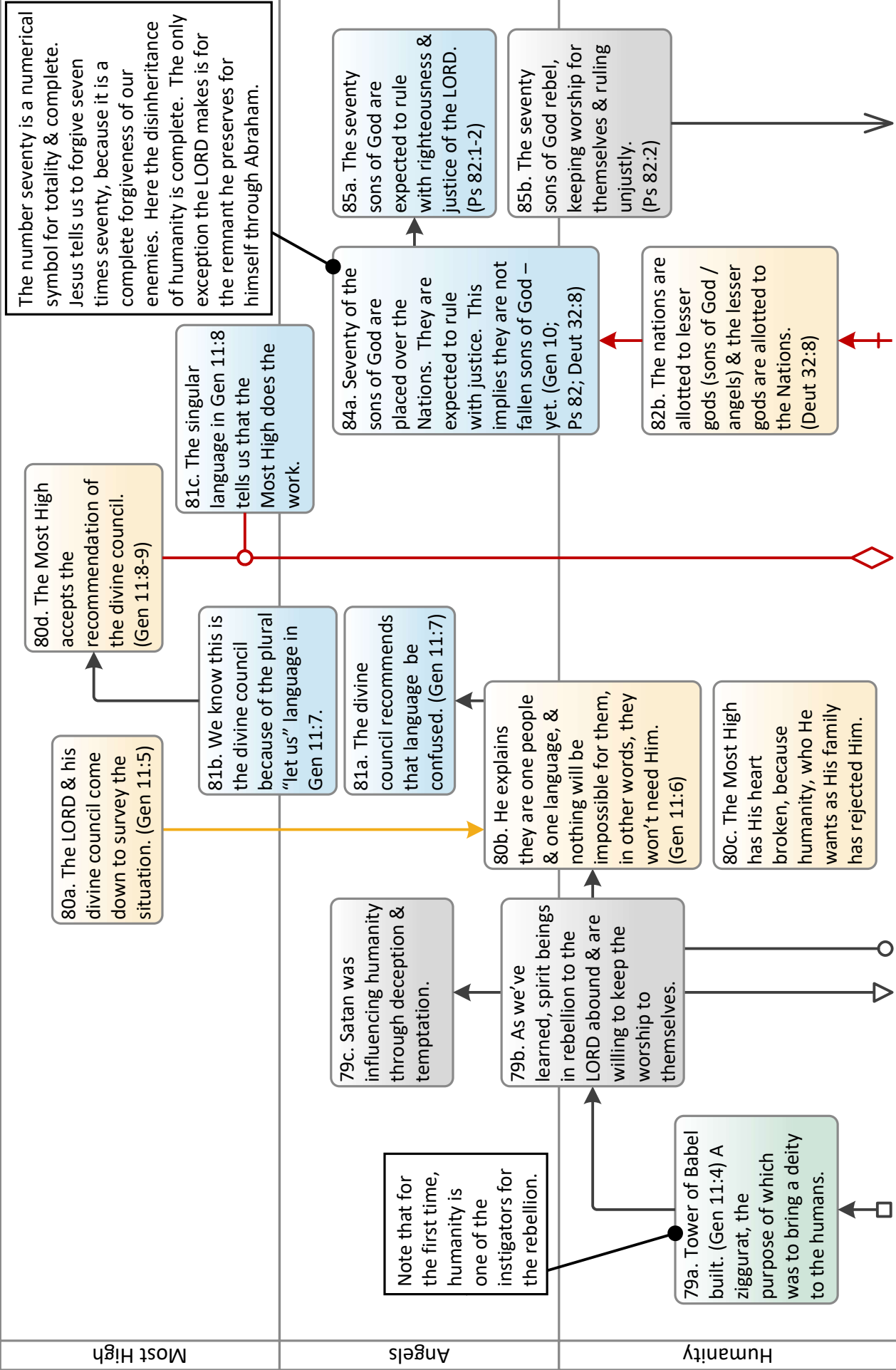
Third Fall of Humanity

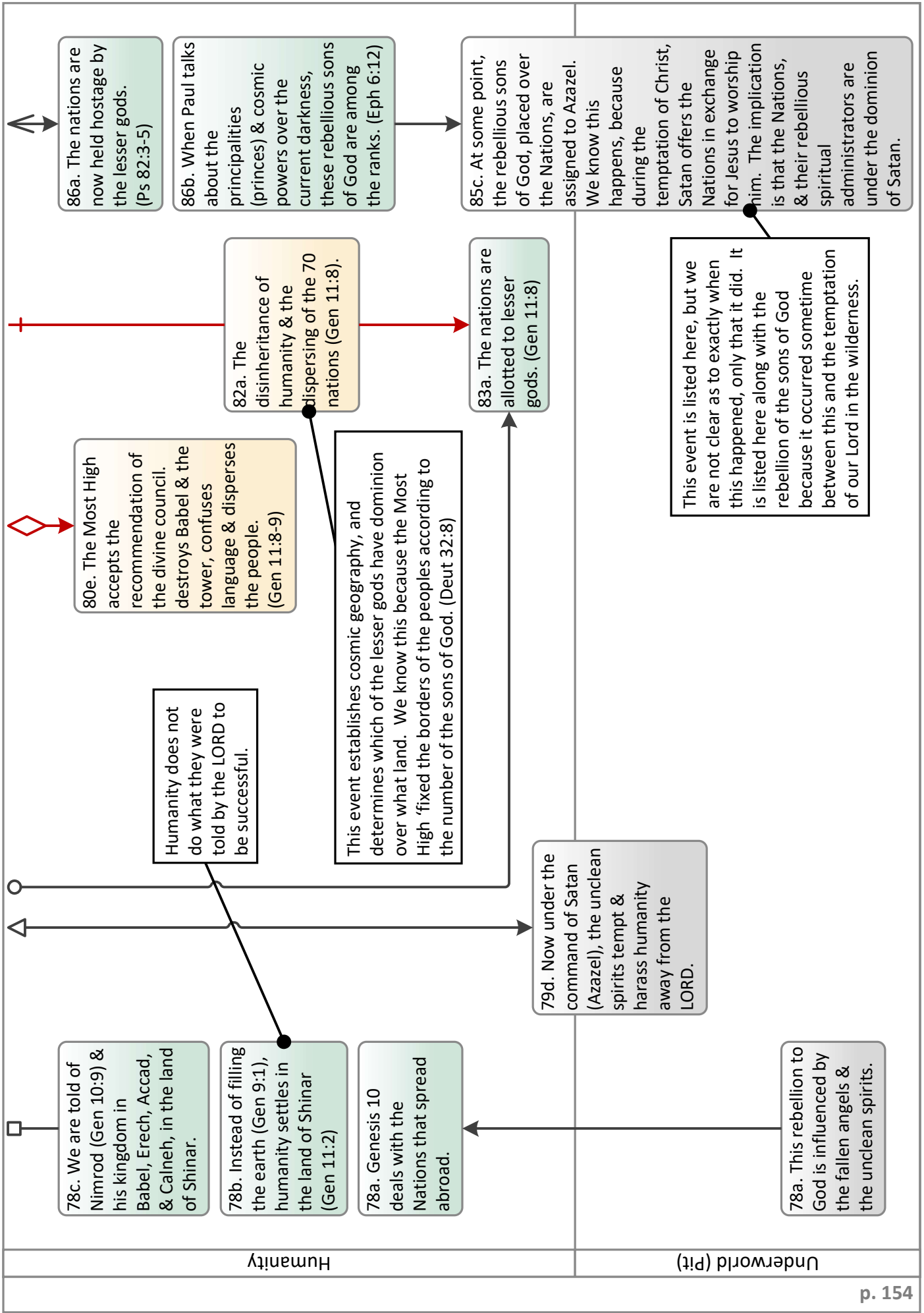


Disinheritance of Humanity

Satan's First "Promotion"

(3) Disp: Human Government





## Third Fall of Humanity

### **Babel & the Tower**

Genesis 10 deals with all the clans of Noah, “in their genealogies, in their nations, and from these the nations spread abroad on the earth after the flood” (vs. 32). So everything should be fine. Except that the next verse starts chapter 11, & we are given this story about Babel, humanity migrating East & settling together in the plain of Shinar, working to build the city of Babel, & ultimately, it’s tower.

Study of ancient Mesopotamia reveals the tower of Babel to be a ziggurat. This is revealing, because a ziggurat is a religious structure designed for worship to a deity, but not the LORD. In a teaching by Heiser it was pointed out that the purpose was to beckon the deity to humanity, not for humanity to come to their god. Moreover, the misplacement of worship to a false lesser god implies that despite the (relatively) recent flood dealing with the spiritual wickedness, humanity has quickly relapsed into false worship & idolatry.

In Genesis 11:7 we again see the plural language indicating the divine council operating in partnership with the LORD. A survey of what humanity has done breaks God’s heart. Notice that in the first & second rebellion, the instigators of the rebellion were the angels. Here in the third rebellion for the first time we see humanity involved in initiating rebellion against the LORD by choosing to worship lesser gods.

### **Disinheritance Not Destruction**

Rather than destroy humanity, the LORD determines to place the entirety of the human population under the administrative leadership of the sons of God.

Humanity is disinherited by the LORD. This is a strong sentence because mankind is now stuck in a state of mortality that faces eternal death. The Bible does not give specific borders to the nations that are described in Genesis 10, but the fact that there are seventy of them is a meaningful number that points us to ‘totality,’ ‘absolute,’ or ‘complete.’ In other words, the disinheritance from & by the LORD is a complete disinheritance. Humanity is now under the complete authority of the administrators of the LORD.

The administrating angels chosen from the sons of God by the LORD & have the responsibility to rule with His justice (Ps 82). This is God’s expectation of them, because as a benevolent God, He has not set wicked principalities over the beings designed to be His imagers.

Thus, the outcome of the event is that humanity is allotted to specific sons of God, & principal authorities from the sons of God are allotted to the human groups (Deut 32:8). The confusion of language & disbursement of humanity are components we are more familiar with, & are more tangible reflections of the spiritual implications enacted by the LORD.

### **Rebellion Follows Rebellion**

The selected angels are operating in alignment with the LORD at the time of the allotment. The expectation of the administrators is presumably to bring humanity back into alignment with the LORD. This would imply that the angels administrating the nations rule with the justice of the LORD, & humanity is pointed back to the LORD by worshipping Him. But this is not at all what happens.

A read of Psalm 82 through the vantage point of the psalmist reveals the exacerbated fall into rebellion. Humanity worships the administrating angels as lesser gods, & these angels keep this worship for themselves. Mankind & the angels all rebel against the LORD & continue down the path of betrayal.

##### **Redemption**

The psalmist in Psalm 82 cries to the LORD to arise & remove the authority of these wicked administrators. Heiser makes an interesting point. In the original language the word for 'arise' in Psalm 82:8 is the same word used for when the Lord Jesus arises in His resurrection. Moreover, this word is always used for the resurrection. This is not happenstantial. The prophetic fulfillment through the resurrection of the Lord Jesus was a defeat of sin & death, delegitimized the authority of these rebellious sons of God, & is exactly what the psalmist is calling for here in Psalm 82. By paying the price for the sin of mankind it left the accusers of humanity with no case to litigate. Therefore, the Heavenly Father through His Son redeemed us, not just from this event, but from every rebellion of sin by those who receive Jesus as their Savior for all the days of mankind. This is a foundational requirement for Jesus as our Savior, because we are \*comprehensively saved\* from all (ever bit of) our sin which makes it possible to abide in the presence of the LORD, & therefore be saved from the second death.

##### **Many Gods Problem**

Today we see many cultures worshiping many gods. Buddha, Vishnu, Allah, Jesus... A philosophical challenge leveraged against every religion is 'which god is the right god?' There are good apologetic responses to this question which I won't go into here. However, standing back & taking in what the LORD did at Babel with the disinheritance of humanity & the allotment to the administrative sons of God, an explanation comes together.

With human groups sent in different directions with different languages & different gods, we can easily see how this developed into a many (lesser) gods problem. The philosophical question poses the word 'problem' as a 'challenge' or 'puzzle' to contemplate & debate. I propose a linguistic shift in defining the word 'problem' as a treacherous situation for the human condition.

Every religion bases its afterlife on a legalistic measure of works. Christianity however, is not a religion but based on a foundational relationship through Jesus Christ with the LORD. This is not a nuance, & there is a reason for this. Without exception, all of the lesser gods are interested in keeping people captive & apart from the LORD. This is because their survival (for now) depends on it. Once the fullness of the Gentiles comes in, Israel will reawaken to their Messiah, & King Jesus will return as the full wrath of God is poured out on His enemies. This will not be a good day for those in rebellion to the Most High God. Thus, the strategy of delay is absolutely critical to these lesser gods, which is accomplished through fallen doctrines, dogmas, & works based legalism. The enemy even uses our hubris to promote ideologies like materialism, Darwinism, & atheism, agnosticism, skepticism, & the like which in a way turns us into our own lesser gods. In other words, alignment to anything except the LORD is acceptable. But every person who receives Jesus is one closer to the fullness of the Gentiles coming in, the reawakening of the Jews, & the return of King Jesus.

To extend the linguistic shift again, we might define the word 'problem' as a guaranteed judgement of the lesser gods, or said another way, the 'problem (for the) many gods.' Their problem is the ultimate destruction in the lake of fire, by the LORD, for their rebellions & defilement of humanity.

This leads us to motive. Knowing their destruction is guaranteed, putting that off as long as possible is essential to their strategy. Think of it like this; if you have a child, would you die to save that child? I would for my daughter, because I love her. And I have a God who became flesh (Jesus) & died to save me because He loves me. Would your god do that for you? The truth is that any other god can't. They are flawed, in rebellion, have no authority, & have done evil in the sight of the ultimate authority. They are condemned & will die in the Lake of Fire.

Choosing to follow the lesser imperfect & condemned gods is to choose condemnation for yourself. This includes positions like agnosticism, atheism, & materialism which either claim to not be able to know or assert there is no god or spiritual reality. If it isn't Jesus, who is the only door to our salvation, then it is not salvation. Notice that does not require obedience, but a willingness to receive Jesus. The Holy Spirit develops us over time into the Character of Jesus, which is a development into obedience. But the free gift of salvation is free from works. You can't earn it if you tried. This is why it is better to have a relationship with Jesus & a sin problem instead of a sin (lesser god / idolatry) relationship with a Jesus problem.

#### **Salvation Available**

The desperate situation for people following the lesser gods is that they will participate in this eternal death. The path to salvation from this second (eternal) death can only be found with Christ Jesus. Getting that message out is the mission for every believer & follower of Jesus. This is the great commission found in Matthew 28:18-20. Given what has been outlined here, notice the reference to 'nations' & how baptizing people is the salvation event, what brings them into the Kingdom:

“18 And Jesus came and said to them, ‘All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. 19 Go therefore and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, 20 teaching them to observe all that I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, to the end of the age.’”

– Matthew 28:18-20

Image

4L

God vs lesser gods in Egypt

(4) Disp: Promise

This is confirmed through the plagues, which are very much related to and directed at the lesser gods of Egypt. We might ask, 'what is God doing with all these plagues?' While that may seem 'weird' to us, it demonstrates how this is a battle between the Most High Elohim, & the lesser gods made stewards who rebelled against the righteous law of the Almighty.

Most High

107. The Most High does battle against the lesser gods. (Ex 7-14)

108o. The LORD destroys Pharaoh & his army in the Red Sea. (Ex 14:23-31)

Ten plagues symbolic of fullness of the moral law (like the ten commandments). Ten also represents completeness. We see Egypt completely plagued.

108a. Our view is Moses vs. Pharaoh. But a spiritual battle is behind the scenes. (Ex 7-14)

96. The lesser gods are behind the persecution through the Pharaohs.

The death of Pharaoh demonstrates to Egypt that their 'highest god' (Ra) on earth is no match for the Most High God, who easily deals with him & his army.

Angels

95. The rebellion of lesser gods continues, seen in ancient Egyptian artifacts & hieroglyphics.

108b. Water to blood for seven days. (Ex 7:14-24) The LORD is superior to all gods of Egypt.

108b. Harpi god of the Nile (blue skin)

108b. Affects all Pharaoh hardened heart

85b. The seventy sons of God rebel, keeping worship for themselves & ruling unjustly. (Ps 82)

108c. Frog infestation. (Ex 8:1-15)

108c. Heket god of fertility (head of a frog)

108c. Affects all Pharaoh hardened heart

86. The nations are now held hostage by the lesser gods. (Ps 82:2,6; Deut 32:8)

108d. Gnats (lice) from dust. (Ex 8:16-19)

108d. Geb god of the earth

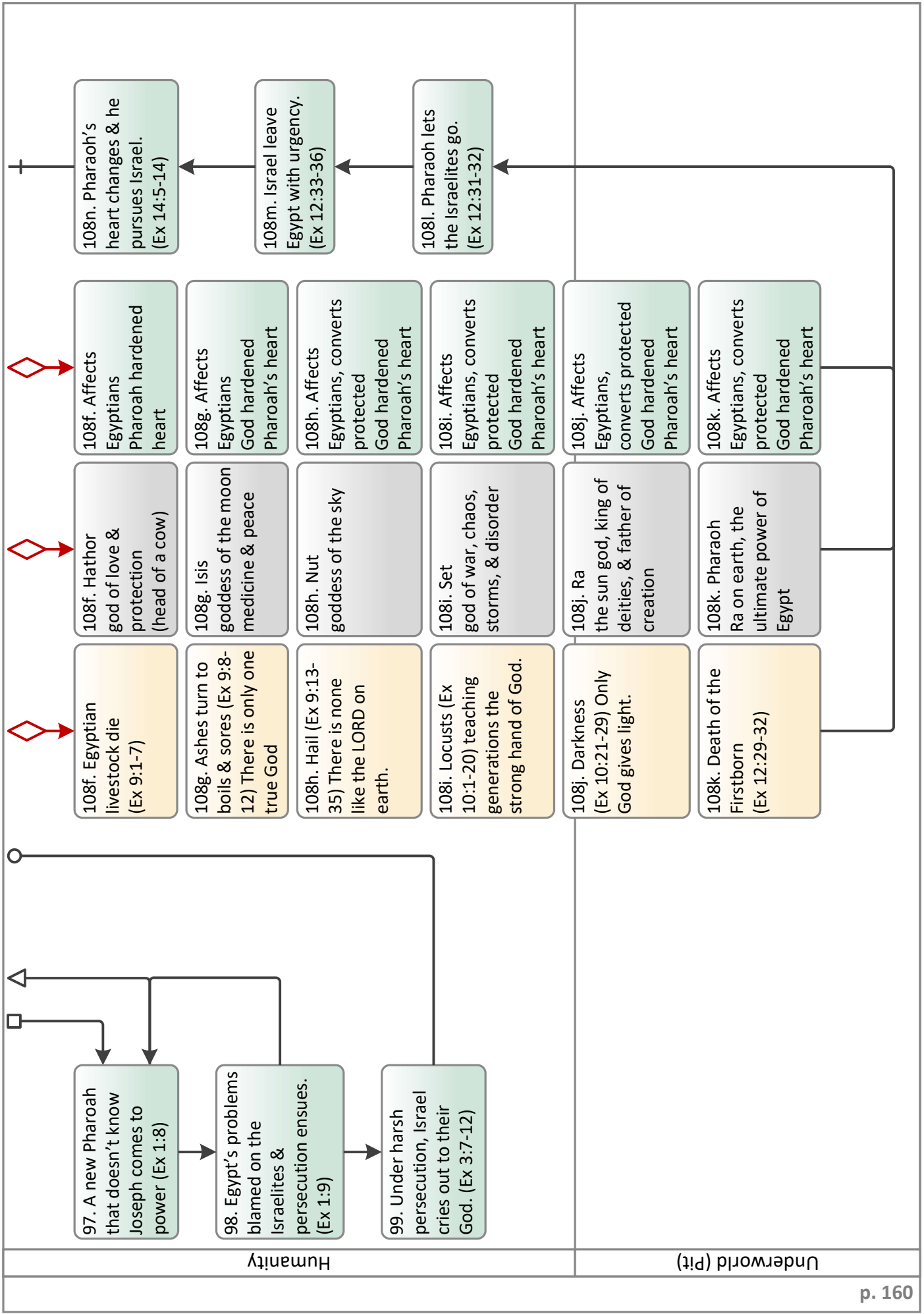
108d. Affects all Pharaoh hardened heart

108e. Flies swarm (Ex 8:20-32)

108e. Khepri god of creation, sun movement, rebirth (head of a fly)

108e. Affects Egyptians Pharaoh hardened heart

108p. Pharaoh & his army perish as the walls of water (& judgement) collapse on top of them. (Ex 14:28,30)





## God vs. lesser gods in Egypt

### **New Perspective of the Same Story**

The movie “The Ten Commandments” was released in 1956. I remember this being a television special in the eighties. In some ways Charlton Heston has become synonymous with Moses. Our view of the Egyptian plagues has been molded by popular media & how we have learned about these events as modern people.

To a person living when this occurred it would have been very different. The water of the Nile turning to blood may seem gross to us, but this would have been devastating & terrifying to the people in the land. In fact, each of the plagues would have carried a very specific message along with it – that the Most High God was bigger, more powerful, & the ultimate authority bar none.

### **Progression of the Plagues**

The first two plagues, Pharaoh’s magicians mimic, but cannot after that.

The first three plagues affect all people, but Israel is protected after that.

The first five plagues Pharaoh hardens his own heart, but God does after that.

The first nine plagues are directed at the lesser gods, the fallen sons of God.

The tenth plague is directed at Pharaoh himself, presumed to be Ra on earth.

### **Egyptian Worship**

The people of Egypt worshiped many gods thinking that each brought something specific that originated from that god. According to Egyptian religion:

#### 1. Water of the Nile turned to Blood

Harpi, human in form with blue skin, the god of the Nile, brought water for crops & drinking, directly sustaining the foundation of life. The LORD is the foundation of life.

#### 2. Infestation of Frogs

Heket, had the head of a frog was the god of fertility who created offspring for people & animals. The LORD is the opener of wombs, & the origin of all life.

#### 3. Gnats (lice) from Dust

Geb, the god of the earth who allowed crops to grow. The LORD made the earth, & controls the yield from it. People are attacked by the symbol of the lesser god.

#### 4. Swarm of Flies

Khepri, who has the head of a fly is the god of creation, responsible for bringing all things into being. The LORD is the only being that creates, & through Him all things are made. People are again attacked by the symbol of the lesser god.

#### 5. Death of Cattle (Livestock)

Hathor, who has the head of a cow is the god of love & protection, & welcomed the dead into the next life. The LORD is Love, He provides protection, & by His judgement alone in a person’s eternal condition is determined.

#### 6. Boils & Sores

Isis, the goddess of the moon, & peace, but more relevant she is the goddess of medicine & taught embalming – necessary for the soul to return after death in Egyptian religion. The LORD is the provider of divine health & eternal life.

#### 7. Hail

Nut, the goddess of the sky. But the LORD controls the weather.

## §4: The Enemy: God vs. lesser gods in Egypt

### 8. Locusts

Set, the god of war, chaos, storms, & disorder. This is an interesting plague, because Locusts symbolize demons (Rev 9:1-11). The LORD has the power to bring chaos & disorder, & can let demons loose to do it.

### 9. Darkness

Ra, the sun god, the highest deity in Egyptian religion, thought to be the father of creation & the commander of all the other gods. Only the LORD is the Most High & incomparable God, capable of bringing a frightening darkness across the land.

### 10. Death of the Firstborn

Pharaoh was believed to be Ra on earth. As such, he would in theory be equipped to control all things just as Ra does in a cosmic sense. But only the LORD has the ability to create from nothing, & to control who lives & who dies. Not even the son of the earthly Ra is immune, & all of Egypt feels the blow.

Notice that the gods keep getting higher, bigger, & stronger. Yet the LORD had no issue disposing of each of them. Moreover, this would have struck terror in the heart of the average Egyptian. No doubt the Israelites, witness to these events, would have also been afraid.

### **World View & Perspective**

Through the lens of Scripture, we have a view of the interaction between Moses & Pharaoh. But this wasn't something the people across the land saw. Although, no doubt the people were talking about what was going on.

If we imagine what it was like living in the land, each of the first nine plagues came, were endured, & left. Systematically the LORD went one-by-one from the ground up to the sun sending a message that He is the Most High of all the Gods. Some plagues, like the water turned into blood had a temporary effect. Others, like the death of cattle had a more lasting & severe effect.

The last plague however, had the greatest impact. The death of every Egyptian first born son, & first-born livestock. Not only was it devastating, it was personal. Of course, it is personal to Pharaoh as well, which is why he finally evicts Israel from the land.

As a modern person it would be difficult to appreciate the spiritual reality of these events. Although this does persist in parts of the world. As recently as WW2, religious leaders in Japan told people that whoever comes ministering their God, to listen to those people because their God is bigger & more powerful because they (& their god) won. I know this because my grandparents were missionaries that went into Japan with the Gospel of Jesus Christ. The religious leaders may not have known Jesus, but they were right, He is much bigger & more powerful! All religions have a little 'g' god mindset, 'gods' that war with each other as lesser beings do. The Most High God brings His Judgement upon the lesser gods. This is something we come to understand through relationship (not religion) with our Heavenly Father through Christ Jesus & His Holy Spirit.

### **The LORD Liberates Israel & More**

The events of the spiritual war in Egypt did free Israel from the grip of Pharaoh & his harsh treatment. We also know that the Egyptians were anxious for Israel to leave, least they endure any worse. But the LORD, who can always do more, does more. We see in Exodus 12:38 that 'a mixed multitude also went up with them' (Israel). That is to say, these people living in Egypt alongside Israel had the spiritual world view we are attempting to recover here. They understood the battle between the LORD & the lesser gods by virtue of the signs of the plagues. Discerning the God of Israel was & is the Most High God, they made a risky & life changing decision to leave their homeland to follow Israel into the wilderness.

##### **The Destruction of Pharaoh**

Since we are probably well aware of the earthly outcome, let's consider the symbolic meaning behind the pursuit of Pharaoh & his army. Pharaoh represents a lesser god in Egypt. But symbolically we might consider him to represent Azazel, followed by the army of lesser gods & unclean spirits. Israel follows Moses who is a type & shadow of the Lord Jesus leading His people. They head to the Southwest into the wilderness.

The wilderness is under the dominion of Azazel (Satan). This is where Israel becomes cornered between the Red Sea & the Egyptian military. Or said another way, the people of God cornered by Satan & his hoard.

- The sea, used in prophetic symbolism refers metaphorically to judgement.
- Red, from the 'Red Sea' symbolizes bloodshed & war.
- Amber, the color of the pillar of fire, symbolizes the glory or presence of God.

So here in the wilderness, the land under the dominion of Azazel (Satan), we have the LORD ready to go to war with the evil one & his horde, which we see play out on earth with human characters.

A question that may come up is how so many people crossed the Red Sea before the Egyptians became aware. Strategically, the pillar of light with the presence of the LORD was at their front, with their back to the water. Because the crossing began at night, the natural light would have 'blinded' or caused pupil dilation for the Egyptians making this crossing to begin unobserved. Spiritually, the LORD could have done something similar. Moreover, the strong East wind which blew all night would have carried sand & made it difficult for the Egyptians to peer toward the Israelites & realize what was happening. Finally, in a natural sense, there would be no cause for concern because seas don't typically split apart & remain apart for thousands of people to walk across. But of course, the LORD God is the God of miracles, & that is exactly what happened.

When the Egyptians realize this, they race after the Israelites. But the waters of judgement close destroying Pharaoh & his army – spiritually Satan & his horde. This event is prophetic & points us to the final battle between King Jesus with Satan, the rebellious angels, & unclean spirits. God's cup of wrath will be poured out, & the rebellious spirits & humans will be cast into & locked in the Pit.

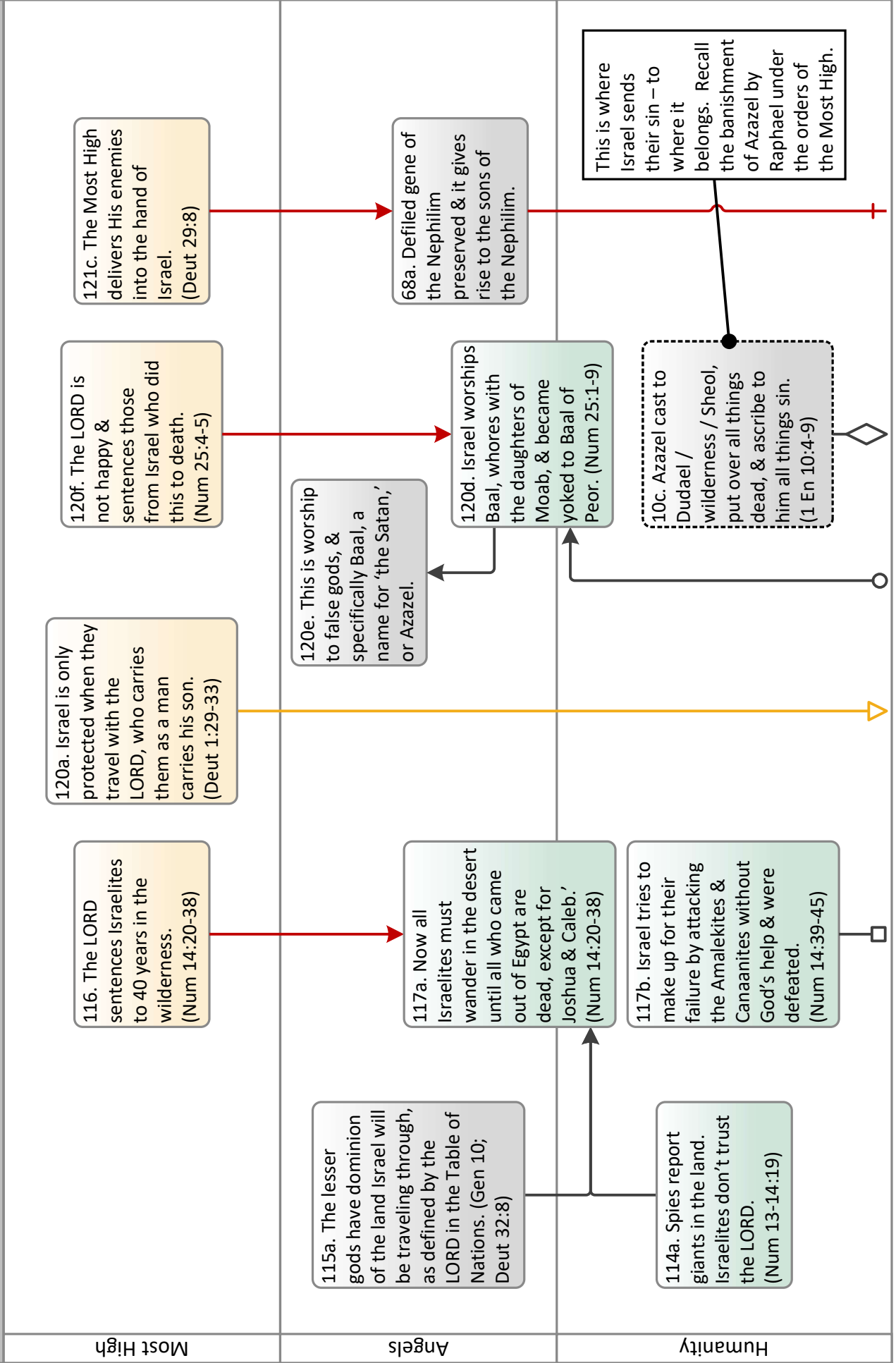
Image

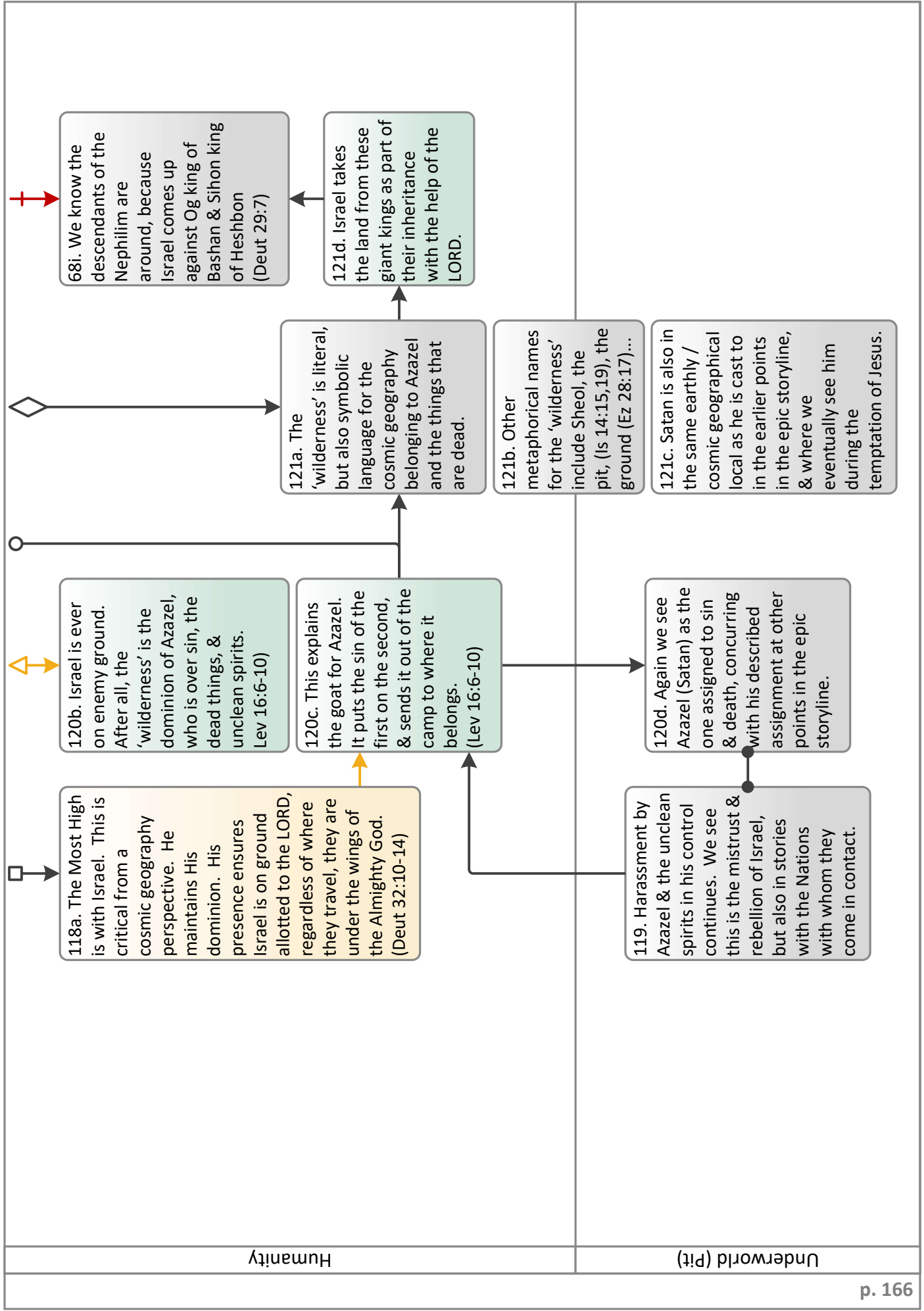
4M

Land & Dominion

No Promised Land for This Generation

(5) Disp: Law





## Land & Dominion

### Earthly Setting

As part of the disinheritance of humanity we learn that the judgement is a total & comprehensive sentence that is handed down. This affects humanity through the assignment of the sons of God. But it is also relevant here that this disinherits the geographic land of the earth. With this judgement there is no land that is left to the LORD. However, He has a plan.

He has brought Israel out of Egypt “with a mighty hand and an outstretched arm” (Deut 26:8). On their journey from Egypt toward the promised land the LORD has traveled with them as a pillar of cloud to lead them by day, & fire to give light at night, & did not depart from before the people (Ex 13:21-22).

This begs the pertinent question. Why? The original plan was for the LORD to have a human family. But even on this trip the LORD has nearly killed the Israelites – see Exodus 32:9-10 as an example. Nonetheless, the presence of the LORD doesn’t leave His people, & there is a good reason for this.

All the land is under the dominion of the lesser gods. Their motivation in rebellion to the LORD would be to kill the remnant of God. They would be aware of the prophecy of the LORD, as well as the promises made by the LORD to Abraham. Their goal at this point – pre-Jesus – would be to maintain that dominion, control of people, ability to keep the worship of humanity for themselves, & ultimately avoid their judgement of destruction. Each of these are by themselves a motive for murder, & collectively this would be a common enemy for the fallen sons of God to work together to slaughter the Israelites.

One example of this that is recorded is Balak king of Moab, who was ‘overcome with fear of the people of Israel.’ We might consider where this overwhelming fear came from, given that Balak had a mature army, was a tenured king, & had been leading his people for some time. Nonetheless, the concern & desire is to invoke a spiritual curse against Israel to prevent them from overtaking his nation.

The context then is that Israel, the remnant of the LORD, is moving through enemy territory. Not just a hostile physical environment, but with pent up violence & aggression from the sons of God, their allotted people groups, & the unclean spirits.

### Safety by Grace in the Wilderness

We’ve already established that Satan resides in the wilderness. Leviticus 16:6-10 becomes an important thing when we consider the relationship between the Israelites & their God. In fact, it puts all of the laws given by the LORD a tangible purpose. If Israel cannot remain in a condition where the presence of the LORD can abide with them, then their safety is immediately jeopardized.

Initially this is important on the road from Egypt to the promised land. But then Israel fails to trust the LORD after hearing the report of the spies in Numbers 14:20-38, & their time in the wilderness is extended by the LORD. We think of this as a punishment by the LORD, which it is. But it is also His Grace that allows time for Israel to mature to a point where it can trust Him. It is also another example of how the LORD saves His people through the trial. He even preserves their clothes & sandals! (Deut 29:5)

#### §4: The Enemy: Land & Dominion

There is this event described in Numbers 25:1-9 where some of the Israelite men have sex with Moabite prostitutes & worship Baal. As a result, the LORD has the judges of Israel kill the men by hanging in the sun before the LORD. Then a man brings a Midianite woman to his family. This causes a plague to afflict the whole congregation of Israel killing 24,000 people. In the first part, the death of the men separated their sin through judgement from the rest of Israel. But in the second part, the action of one man brought immediate affliction upon Israel in the form of illness. Knowing that the unclean spirits are associated with illness, there is a strong likelihood that the removal of the LORD's protection allowed this incursion to happen. When Eleazar, son of Aaron kills the man & the Midianite woman with a spear, the sin is dealt with & the protection of the LORD returns to the remnant of the LORD. These events demonstrate the desperate dependency on the LORD & his protection.

#### **Conquering of the Promised Land**

When the Israelites prepare to take the land of Canaan it has been roughly four hundred & seventy-one years (430 in Egypt Ex 12:40 + 1 in Sinai + 40 years Numbers 14:20-48) since Jacob & the brothers of Joseph left the area for Egypt. That has given the enemies of the LORD plenty of time to occupy the territory with an entrenchment of giants & people groups who worship these lesser gods.

By themselves, Israel is not equipped for the task. We see their abject failure at Ai. But with the LORD's help, they are conquerors. This is made clear in Joshua 5:13-15 when Joshua encounters the pre-incarnate Jesus, the Commander of the LORD's Army. We know this is Jesus, because Joshua is told to take his sandals off for the place is Holy, & Joshua is allowed to worship Him. We need to be on the LORD's side, He is not on ours or our enemies.

Let's focus in on the part about the ground being Holy. This ties back to the LORD's presence with Israel in the wilderness. It connects forward to us, as we walk with the presence of the LORD as followers & believers in Jesus as we evangelize His Gospel.

#### **Protection in the Promised Land**

In exchange for protection, the LORD requires obedience. On one hand He understands that we are not God, & are incapable of being faithful the way He is faithful to us & His covenants with us. However, He always provides a way for us to reconcile our sin with Him.

During the dispensation of the Law this was accomplished by forgiveness of others (Mat 5:23-24) & offerings made at the Temple. Corporately for Israel, the worship of lesser gods within the land & by the Israelites is an untenable sin. King Josiah in particular demonstrates corporate reforms by destroying the idols, vessels, & temples to Baal & Asherah. But there were many other Israelite kings that allowed this, & did not humble themselves before the LORD.

The story of Naaman is an interesting one that connects this to the land & dominion. Naaman is a commander in the Syrian army. He is among the humanity allotted to other gods. Nonetheless, he travels to Israel, sees Elisha who tells him the LORD will heal him of leprosy if he washes in the Jordan river seven times. Long story short, Naaman humbles himself by doing what was asked of him, & the LORD restores his flesh. This brings us to 2 Kings 5 where Naaman asks for two mule loads of earth & declares "for from now on your servant will not offer burnt offering or sacrifice to any god but the LORD" (2 Kgs 5:17). The point is that the dirt is important as land under the dominion of the Most High God. Naaman wants to take this dirt back to Syria so he has land under the dominion of the LORD to worship on. Not only is that an amazing story of humility, but it pleases the LORD because it demonstrates how the LORD draws close to those that humble themselves to Him (Ps 138:6; Jm 4:6).



##### **The LORD Removes His Protection**

The two Kingdoms of Israel had great sin. The Northern Kingdom had already been taken by the Assyrians. Even so, the Southern Kingdom of Judah does not repent. Because of this condition, the LORD continues an excommunication event with the Southern Kingdom that He began with the North. The LORD will literally put the Israelites geographically where they are spiritually. This is the purpose of excommunication, to grow into the person through the trials of separation from God a desire to be reunited with Him. It is an act of the LORD's Grace, because it allows people to choose Him rather than being destroyed.

Ezekiel 9:9-10 spells out the condition of Israel, & why this action is necessary. Chapter 10 then describes the spiritual lifting of the Shekinah Glory of the LORD being removed from the Temple; & in 11:1-13 His presence is removed from the city of Jerusalem. Ezekiel cries in prayer, "Ah, Lord God! Will you make a full end of the remnant of Israel?" (Ezk 11:13). To the Prophet, it is understood the necessity of the LORD's presence.

The presence of the LORD is critical to displace the enemy. We see this in the NT when the Bible describes a person being made a new creation (2 Cor 5:17), a new heart (Rom 2:29), & the making of a 'clean heart' by the work of the LORD in us (Ps 51:10). What we see happening in the OT is a corporate displacement against the nations that have rebelled. With the restraint pulled back, the LORD allows Babylon to come in & take Israel into exile. In the NT the presence of the LORD lives within us as believers in Jesus through His Holy Spirit. This operates such that each believer is a tabernacle to the LORD, walks on Holy Ground, & in an environment where the spirits of evil must operate illegally & against the Authority of the Most High God.

Image

4N

Birth of Jesus is a Declaration of War

\$4: The Enemy: Birth of Jesus is a Declaration of War

2<sup>nd</sup> Abode of Satan

(5) Disp: Law

Most High

153a. The LORD dispatches Jesus the Son. (Lk 1:30-33)

This is a war of espionage, infiltration, & subterfuge that continues until the midpoint of the last week. This war ensues to delay the judgement of the outpouring of the full wrath of God on His enemies.

Angels

84a. Seventy of the sons of God are placed over the Nations. They are expected to rule with justice. This implies they are not fallen sons of God – yet. (Gen 10; Ps 82; Deut 32:8)

158a. Satan's war of deception through false teachers, false religions, & the hardening of human hearts.

85a. The seventy sons of God are expected to rule with righteousness & justice of the LORD. (Ps 82)

Azazel has authority to give the Nations, confirming that the fallen sons of God are under Azazel's (Satan's) control, as are the Nations which he offers to Jesus.

Humanity

85b. However, they rebel by keeping worship for themselves & ruling unjustly. (Ps 82:2)

156a. Jesus is born. For humanity this is the Messiah, for the enemy this is a big problem! (Mat 1:18-25, 2:1)

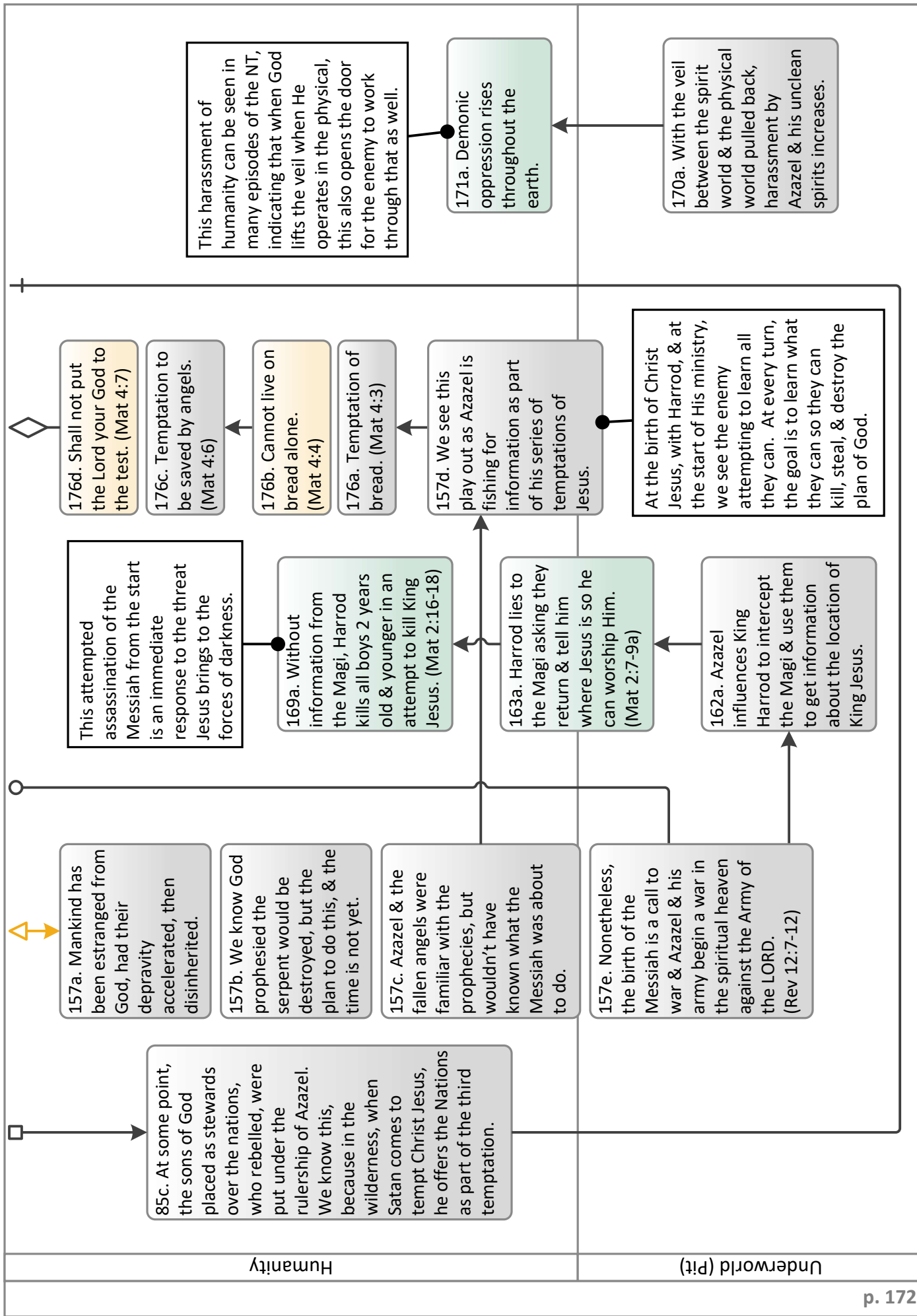
175a. Jesus is tempted by Jesus at the end of His 40 days of fasting.

Satan (Azazel) has authority to give the Nations, confirming that the fallen sons of God (sons of disobedience in Eph 2:2) are under his dominion, as are the Nations which he offers to Jesus.

176f. Worship only the Lord your God, & only Him you shall serve. (Mat 4:10)

175a. Satan (Azazel) offers Jesus all the nations, if Jesus will only bow down & worship him. (Mat 4:8-11, Eph 2:2)

176e. Temptation to rule the nations for worship. (Mat 4:8-9)



## Birth of Jesus is a Declaration of War

### **Framing the Situation**

As a thought experiment, imagine yourself in a war zone. You are part of a group that is holding a position on a beach you have occupied. What you see coming at you from the water, the air, the ground, is the opposing army in full force prepared to reclaim its territory.

The birth of Jesus is a wonderful event for humanity, & amazing to celebrate as we remember it every year at Christmas. But for the enemies of the LORD, seeing the fulfillment of prophecy in the birth of the Messiah was a terribly frightful event. From their vantage point, this is the LORD Himself manifest on earth. Not that Jesus hadn't ever been to earth before, but this time was different & strange because the Christ had taken the form of a man.

Humans have rules for war, like those established at the Geneva Conventions, & we have difficulty following them. But the LORD is faithful to His law. The enemy may have asked, how was the Messiah going to operate in a way that was both compliant with the Divine Law & also separate them from the dominion that they clearly had?

### **Attempted Assingation**

As a preemptive strike, the enemy attempts an assingation of the Messiah. King Harrod is an administrative official place over Judea by the Romans, which is the fourth type of government prophesied to tread down this world. He is also a half Edomite (a descendant of Esau / Edom), which is an interesting inverse as Isaac blessed the younger (Jacob / Israel) to rule the older (Esau). Edom was more concerned with ruling as kings on this earth – see Genesis 36:31-43.

In many ways, Harrod is an interesting alley with the spiritual enemies of God. His slaughter of all male-born children age two & under was a tactic motivated by his pride, despite being around seventy years old. This is to say, even if the Christ were to have displaced his rulership, it wouldn't have been until after he was dead. Also, the rulership was an institution of Rome, not a dissent of lineage. Thus, we see the influence of the enemy affecting his actions in what seems like an irrational move.

### **Calm Before the Storm**

Everything seems to go quiet. Aside from the story of Jesus staying behind at the temple & doing some carpentry, we don't know much about the part of Jesus life leading up to his ministry. However, even with this information we know that He would have been preparing for His ministry.

From the perspective of the enemy this must have been an odd move. The Messiah is here to fight you, & to prepare He is training to be a Rabi? How do you build a strategy to fight that? In military terms we can see how the enemies of the LORD would have been seeking intelligence as a means to prepare for whatever battle was coming.

### **Recon Via the Temptations of Jesus**

As Heiser has pointed out, these temptations were an attempt to gain insight into the mission of the Messiah. Usually, we analyze these based on what they mean for us. But let's consider each & what they meant for the enemy.

### **Rocks Into Bread**

Jesus was in a human body & would have been hungry for food. The necessity of nourishment would have been pressing. Yet the Lord Jesus always points back to the Heavenly Father. In fact, in the story of the woman at the well Jesus tells His disciples who are pressing Him to eat that He has food they know nothing about. That His food is to do the will of Him who sent Him & to do His work (Jn 4:32-34).

#### §4: The Enemy: Birth of Jesus is a Declaration of War

If the enemy had been successful in having Jesus turn rocks into bread it would have had several impacts including: Jesus didn't trust the provision & plan of the Father; the Son could be separated from the Father; Jesus was susceptible to 'divide & conquer' attacks; the strength of the Trinity in the condition where Jesus was a hypostatic union was weakened to a point of contention by the enemy; the enemy may have success in destroying or demoting the Trinity through the Son; & the murder of Jesus may yield success for Satan.

##### **Saved by Angels**

To leap from the pinnacle of the Temple & be rescued by angels would have been for Jesus to behave inappropriately in a supernatural way – one that prevented Him from living as a faithful human to fulfill the Divine Law. For the mission of Jesus to be successful, the humanity of Jesus must be a faithful Israelite. The divinity of Jesus must not abuse His powers & must follow the Divine Law. The LORD could just make all beings fall into alignment, but this would violate free will which is necessary for humanity to choose Him.

If the enemy had been successful, it would have had several impacts including: Jesus would have violated the Divine Law; this would have made God a liar when He declared His faithfulness; & it may have placed Satan who is the 'father of all lies' from a dominion perspective over the Son & perhaps the Most High. Using God's Divine Law in a legalistic nuance (prosecuting the sins of the Son) it may have presented a loophole for Satan to achieve his desire to become like God.

##### **Nations for Worship**

The mission of the Messiah has been prophesied. Satan knows this prophecy & now Jesus has come. Satan cuts to the chase offering the Nations in exchange for the worship of Jesus. We learn here how powerful the currency of worship is, & how it predicates dominion. Jesus knows the cost of His mission, & in His humanity we see the stress placed on Him as He sweats blood before His arrest (Lk 22:44). We also learn that Satan now has dominion over of the sons of disobedience, the angels assigned to administrate the nations who rebelled, because he can legitimately offer the nations that are still under his dominion in exchange for worship.

If the enemy had been successful, it would have had several impacts including: Jesus would have dominion of the nations in exchange for being under the dominion of Satan; Satan would be in control of Jesus; Satan would achieve his desire conceived in his first fall to pride (Is 14:12-17; Ezk 28:11-19).

##### **Powerfully Played**

Jesus defeats the enemy with skillful strategy with nothing about the Messiah's strategy to win having been revealed. With a win on the board, this sets the stage for the cosmic battle set to begin as the Lord Jesus starts His ministry.

##### **War in Heaven**

In Luke 10 Jesus tells us that He "saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven" (Lk 10:18). In other words, the authority of Satan as a prosecutor (like we saw in Job 1:6-12, 2:1-7) has been revoked. He can no longer bring case against believers in Jesus. Note that Jesus said this during His ministry & after the temptation in the wilderness. This means that it was after the time on earth that Satan still had legitimate dominion over the nations & could offer them to Jesus in exchange for worship.

We learn in Revelation 12:12 that Satan has come down because he knows his time is short. While this part of Revelation has implications for Satan being bound to earth at the midpoint of the last week (Rev 12:12; Dan 12:11-12), Satan & his horde have known their time is short since the birth of the Lord Jesus.

#### §4: The Enemy: Birth of Jesus is a Declaration of War

With their authority made illegitimate with the New Covenant, the enemy has had a strategy of 'delay & stay.' Their activity here on earth is mirrored with a war in the 3<sup>rd</sup> heaven. These efforts are tactics to prolong the time until their destruction. The war in heaven is an attempt to occupy & prevent the Army of the Lord & his other angels from helping fuel the Great Commission. Once this mission accomplishes its goal & the fullness of the Gentiles comes in, Israel will reawaken, repent of its corporate sin & cry for their Messiah, Christ Jesus (Zeph 3:14-20). This all leads up to the seminal event for the enemy – the outpouring of the full Wrath of God (Rev 16:17-21).

With these things in mind, it is reasonable to think that this war in heaven began at the birth of the Lord Jesus. The birth of Jesus was a prophesied event that would ensure the legal destruction of the enemy. The LORD told the serpent he would injure the seed of the woman (i.e., not the seed of man – a virgin birth) on the heel, but her offspring would be dealt a mortal wound (to the head) (Gen 3:15). Now the enemy sees the birth of Jesus, they know who He is (Mk 5:7), & things become really desperate really quick. This is one of the reasons we see the increased level of demonism during the time of Christ, & can understand the war in the 3<sup>rd</sup> heaven to have begun.

Image

40

Ministry of Jesus  
Pt. 1 Demons



**\$4: The Enemy: Ministry of Jesus is a Cosmic Battle – Part 1: Demons**

2<sup>nd</sup> Abode of Satan

(5) Disp: Law

Most High

Angels

Humanity

181a. The gods of Nations do not misunderstand this message from Jesus, that the end of their authority over the Nations is near.

181a. Jesus sends out the 70 apostles (Lk 10), a clear provocation to the 70 lesser gods of Nations & their (now) leader Satan (Azazel).

179g. She is healed by faith, & Jesus commends her for her faith. (Mk 5:34)

His authority is for Jews & Gentiles.

179h. A Jewish Rabi seeks help from Jesus to heal his 12-year old daughter. (Mk 5:22-24)

179i. Jesus removes all unbelievers & raises the girl. (Mk 5:37-42)

Jesus has authority over death. Also see Jesus raising Lazarus of Bethany. (Jn 11:1-44)

179f. Gentile woman bleeding for 12 years, has faith Jesus can heal her & touches the hem of his garment. (Mk 5:25-28)

Jesus has the ability to heal by displacing demonic harassment.

Jesus can fully restore all things, & will for those who humble themselves before the Lord.

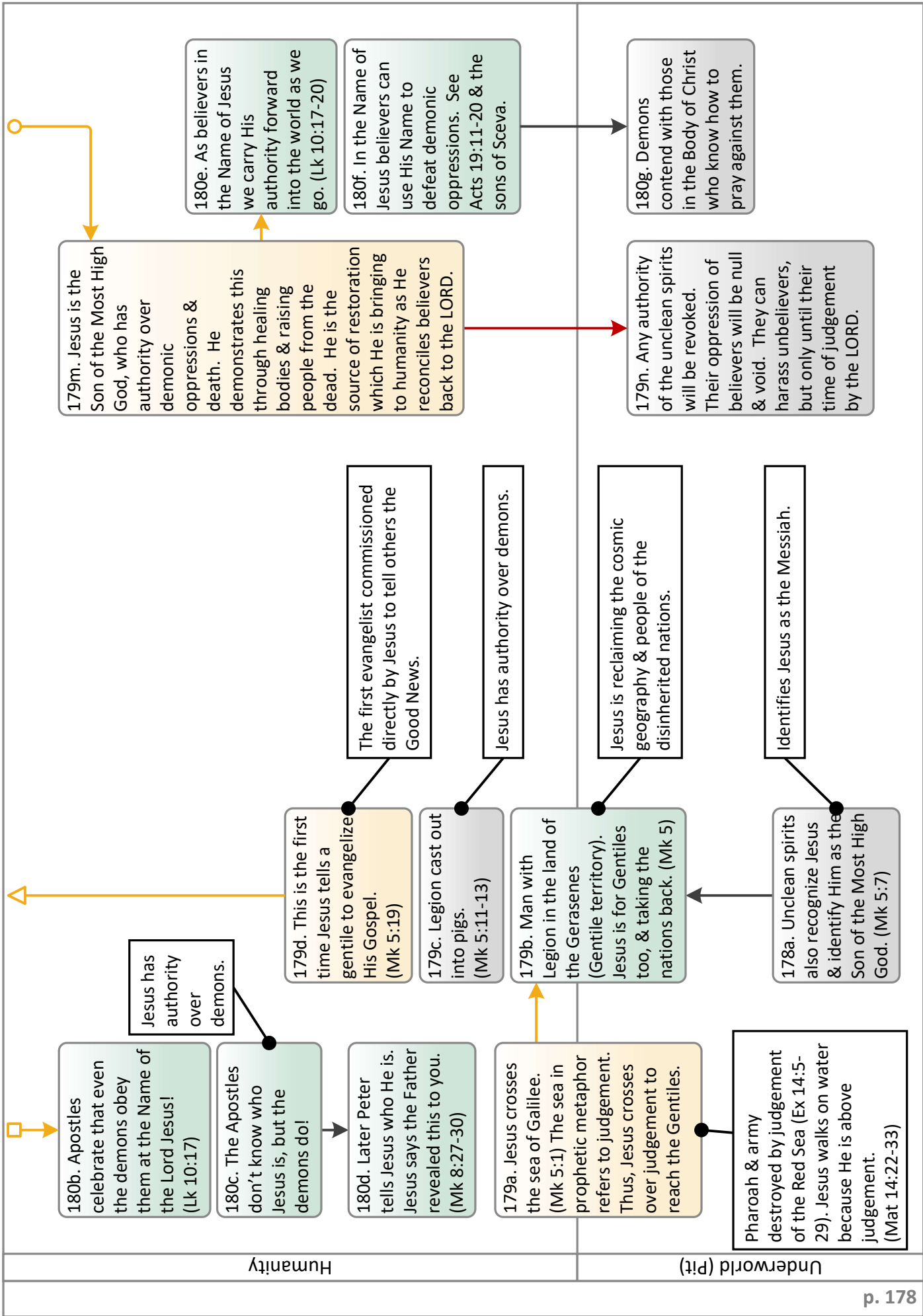
179e. Jesus crosses back over the sea of Galilee. (Mk 5:21)

Jesus crosses judgement, as He does through death & resurrection.

179j. Jesus heals the ten lepers. (Lk 17:11-14)

179k. One returns to thank Jesus & praise God. (Lk 17:15-16)

179l. Jesus makes the one whole. (Lk 17:17-19)



## Ministry of Jesus is a Cosmic Battle – Part 1: Demons

### Understanding the Ministry of Christ Jesus

There are many dimensions to the ministry of Jesus. Most are heavyweight topics well taught & readily available. I'd like to continue to look through the lens of a few things that provide information about the spiritual reality & cosmic battle that was going on between Jesus & the enemies of God through His ministry.

### Identity of the Christ

Even today many people will debate the identity of Jesus. Some say He was a good man, teacher, & prophet, but not the Son of God. Of course, Jesus said He was the Son of God (Mat 16:15-17) which would make Him a blasphemer & a liar, neither of which are usually thought of as good people. Jesus taught that salvation was only through Him because He was the Son of God come as the Messiah, which would make Him a terrible teacher. Jesus prophesied things that came true because He had the knowledge as the Son of God. Thus, to say that Jesus was any of these things without acknowledging Him as the Son of God is to contradict who He said He was & the reality of who He really is.

The demons know who Jesus is. In Mark 5 of the ESV translation it reads:

“7 And crying out with a loud voice, he said, ‘What have you to do with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I adjure you by God, do not torment [adjure (Strong’s g3726), urge strongly] me.’ 8 For He [Jesus] was saying to him, ‘Come out of the man, you unclean spirit!’”

– Mark 5:7-8 ESV

Note that before the birth of Jesus, the Name of Jesus was not known to the enemy. Also, the Name of Jesus is not mentioned in the OT. Yet, here we see the demon clearly identify Him as the Son of the Most High God, & address Him unprompted as “Jesus.” Word gets around pretty quick it seems.

### Jesus Power Over the Unclean Spirits

Jesus has authority far beyond the level of demons who, in the spiritual hierarchy of things, are low level players. In the modern Body of Christ, we tend not to consider or learn about these rankings. Nonetheless, when confronted by these many demons, Jesus has no problem disposing of them.

In Matthew 17:14-21 we see the disciples fail to accomplish the casting out of a demon. Jesus does this with a rebuke of the demon in verse 18.

In Mark 5:7-8 Jesus uses the term ‘unclean spirit.’ In Matthew 17:18 the Bible records it was a ‘demon.’ In both of these cases, & others where these spirits are encountered, they are either cast out by Jesus Himself or by people using His name. We can see both the term ‘unclean spirit’ is used in the ESV, KJV, & NKJV, connecting the description of demons & their symptoms to the term ‘unclean spirit’ as well as the power the Lord Jesus & His Name carry over these rebellious spirits.

### Jesus Conquers Demonic Illness & Death

When Jesus heals the woman who has been bleeding for ten years, He feels His power go out of Him. She is healed by faith, & Jesus commends this Gentile woman for having faith (Mk 5:25-34).

When Jesus reaches the home of the Jewish Rabi there are many people mourning. Jesus removes them from the home (Mk 5:39-40) because the girl must be surrounded by those who believe against what they see. Jesus observes the dominion of the home, taking the Jewish Rabi & father of the girl & his wife into the girl’s room. Jesus also takes His three closest disciples Peter, James, & John with Him. When Christ works it seems simple, telling her “Little girl, I say to you, arise” (Mk 5:41-43).

### **Divine Restorative Healing**

The last example here is that of the ten lepers (Lk 17:11-19). Jesus tells them to present themselves to the Temple priest, & they are healed on their way. But leprosy is a thief that removes fingers, limbs, noses, & body parts as it eats the flesh. All ten are cleansed of this disease, but only one comes back to thank & worship Jesus. The one that returned is made whole, meaning that all his body parts are replaced.

When we return to Jesus, humbling ourselves before the LORD, we are likewise able to receive His divine restorative healing. We see that in the example of the lepers, & in our own lives. The healing can be manifest in our bodies, but more importantly is manifest in our eternal spirit.

Thus, divine restorative healing is more profound than healing physical ailments. Not that we don't see this happening also. But in each of these examples the people are transformed into what the Bible calls 'a new creation' (2 Cor 5:16-21).

Jesus is for the Jew & the Gentile. He takes back cosmic geography outside of Israel, He brings healing to different people in different ways, & brings people into the family of God as they receive Him as their Lord.

### **Multidimensional Impacts of Love**

These miracles of healing are in one sense simple to understand; the person is healed. The world is enamored with the idea of love, yet it does not know love because it does not know Jesus. The tickling of the ears, the lust of the eyes, the pride of life...

When we are discerning, we can recognize the rhetoric of the enemy, because it does not sound like the Shepherd. For those who follow Christ Jesus, the Scripture tells us that we know His voice. One measure we might consider is that the more the world likes it, the less it is of God. Conversely, the more we become intimate with the Character of Jesus, the more we listen to His voice, now residing within us through His Holy Spirit, who is our paraclete & eternal life force.

Jesus demonstrated a walk in Love, teaching us by example what is possible when we act in Love like He did. Let's unpack four important components to this:

### **God's Goodness Restored**

The LORD has not created anything He did not consider good (Gen 1). Jesus, through His ministry is creating pockets of good in a world defiled by rebellion that will grow & take back the hearts & cosmic territory of the people (1 Jn 1).

For the believer today, we are all called to do this as we go into the world (Mat 28:16-20). We follow not those who are of the enemy, or blaspheme the Lord Jesus through works of evil. We follow our mentors in the Character of Christ as they follow Jesus, & when mature model the Love of Jesus in the same way to others (1 Cor 11:1).

### **Through Removal of Defilements**

The healings & miracles of Jesus conquer the sickness & death brought on by the enemy. These symptoms are removed by Jesus who understands & is fully capable of healing.

The Lord can & will remove defilements in our life. But the things allowed to remain in our life are intended for our greater good (Rom 8:28). They serve a purpose in one way or another, refining us into the Character of Christ (2 Cor 12:6-9).

**By Displacing the Enemy**

The enemy who created these conditions is displaced. Like a boat displaces water to float, Jesus displaces judgement above which He stands. When He comes to us & we choose to stand with Him, we are able to receive the salvation & healing that only comes through Jesus, His Holy Spirit, from the Most High Heavenly Father.

As a result of what was done on the cross, the enemy has no authority with the children of God. But like the reference above in 2 Corinthians 12:6-9, things may be allowed to persist in our life so that we learn to trust the Lord through our struggles.

**In Christ Jesus the Savior**

All things were made through Jesus, & through Jesus all things are fully restored. John 1:1-5 speaks in many levels, but also relates to us as individual. Through Jesus we are fully restored & made whole as we grow & are conformed into a character that emulates that of Christ Jesus.

The eternal choice is one with Jesus who saves us from the second death & provided entry into the Eternal Kingdom with our LORD. The other with all the enemies of God in an eternal quarantine of isolation, torment, & suffering that is called the eternal death.

**Call of the Believer**

Our level of discomfort about bringing up Jesus is something we must get over. Desiring all the gifts we can receive that equip us for our mission is not selfish as these gifts are neither superfluous or unnecessary (1 Cor 14:1-5). Thinking that evangelizing the Gospel of Christ Jesus is not our calling is contrary to the Great Commission given by Jesus (Mat 28:16-20).

The LORD knows who will ultimately receive Him. Our mission is to trust the LORD & get out into the world in all the ways we go so that we can find them & bring the fullness of the Gentiles into the Kingdom. When this happens & Israel reawakens, the Lord Jesus will return & set up His Kingdom here on earth.

Image

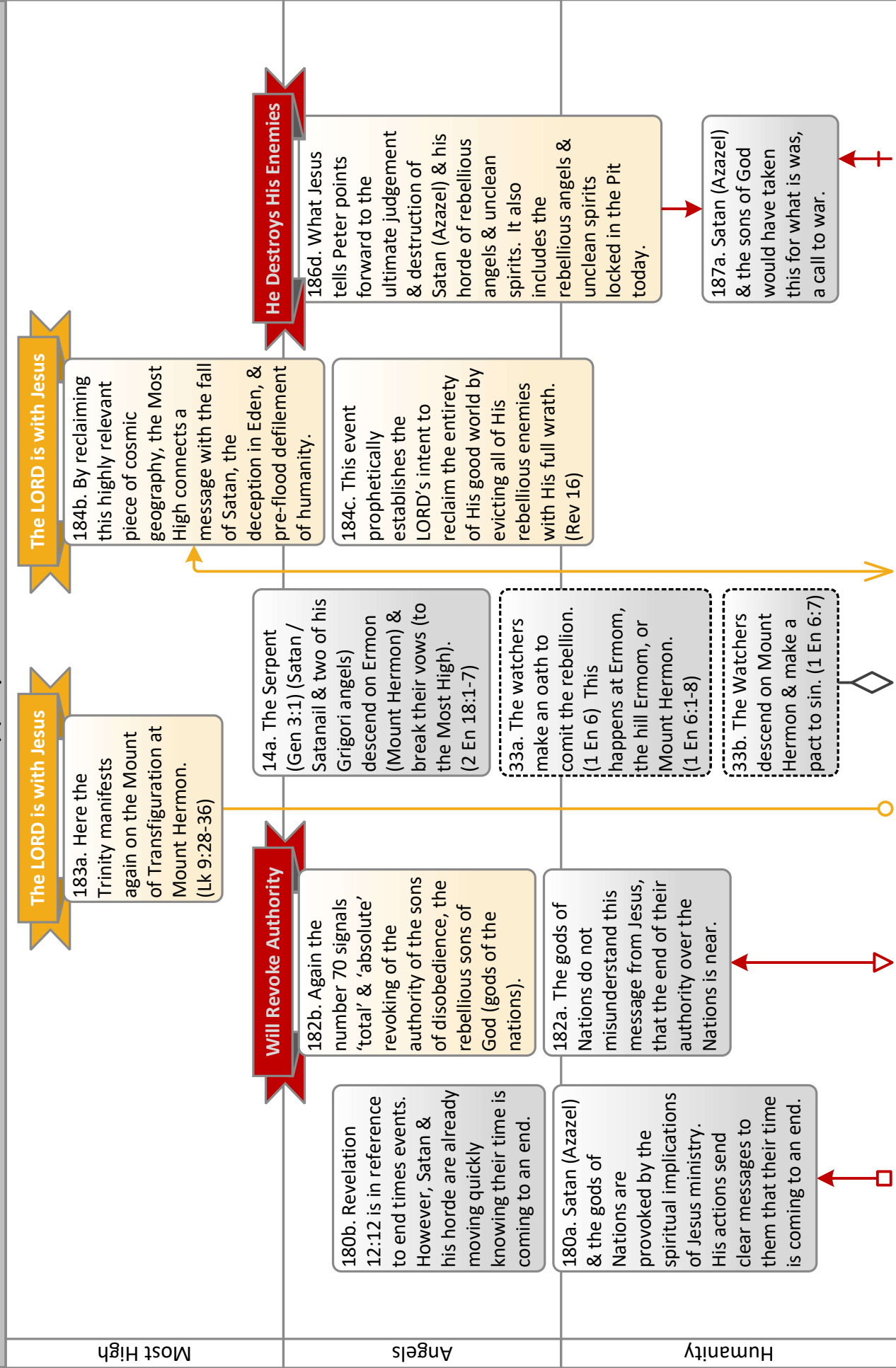
4P

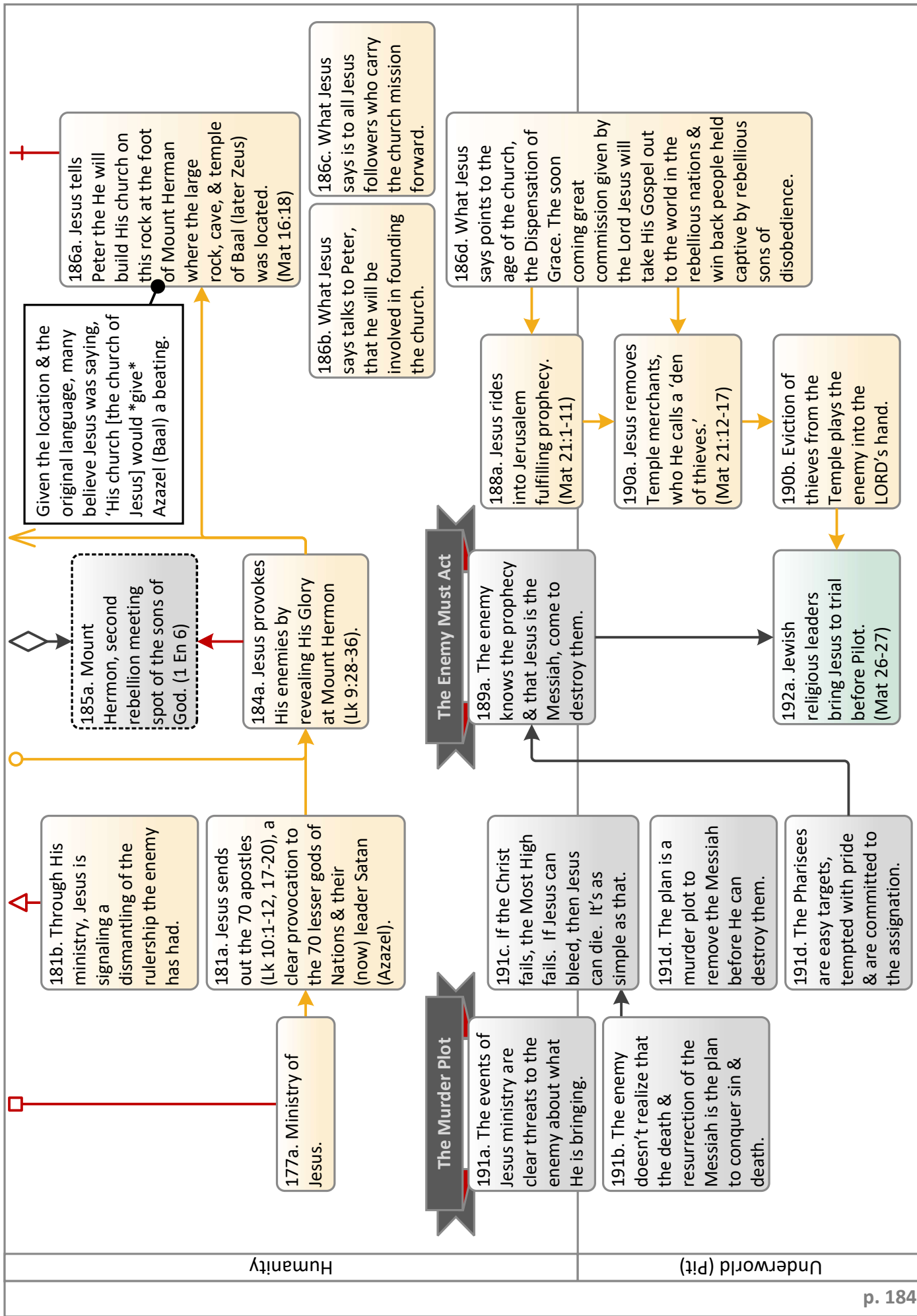
Ministry of Jesus  
Pt. 2 Angels

\$4: The Enemy: Ministry of Jesus is a Cosmic Battle – Part 2: Angels

2<sup>nd</sup> Abode of Satan

(5) Disp: Law







## Ministry of Jesus is a Cosmic Battle – Part 2: Angels

### **Enemies of God**

Considering the falls of humanity helps define who the enemies of God are. The first & second rebellions were incited by rebellious angelic beings. This is made clear by the original language text which uses terms like 'elohim' - literally a spirit being that does not have a physical body. This is not El Elohim, who is the Most High God, incomparable to all others. Michael Heiser has great material on this topic if you are interested.

The third rebellion was this weird partnership of humans worshiping lesser gods, not the Most High. This would seem to indicate that the rebellious angels from the second rebellion were still around, & were setting themselves up as deities to be worshiped. We can't know for sure as the Bible doesn't call this out explicitly. However, we do know that humanity for the first time was complicit in initiating the third rebellion.

At some point, the rebellious angels from the first & second rebellion were placed in chains of gloomy darkness. Both Jude (Jude 1:6) & Peter (2 Pt 2:4) tell us this. However, Satan (Azazel) is still running around, which I can only explain by his treacherous desire to be 'like the Most High.' I think this because it explains the disproportionate disparity in his role in the meantime as a leader of darkness, why he isn't locked up like the other rebellious angles, & ultimate futility of his leadership over the spirit beings currently assigned to him.

Notice that at the time of the third rebellion Satan has likely been assigned the unclean spirits, which is what we see in the NT & his relationship to the demons (Mat 12:25-28). When the administrative sons of God leading the 70 nations rebel, they are at some point placed under the leadership of Satan (Azazel). Yet their leadership over the nations has not been revoked, which we know because Satan has the legitimate authority to offer them to Jesus in exchange for worship (Mat 4:8-9).

The stage is set for the cosmic battle of the ministry of Jesus to begin. Jesus begins messaging to the enemy through different signs what is coming. What the enemy doesn't know is how this will be accomplished, a calculating move by the LORD who leverages the enemy against themselves.

### **Authority Will Be Revoked**

Recall in Psalm 82 the psalmist cries to the LORD for salvation. That the LORD will arise & remove these awful unjust gods. As Heiser points out, the word for 'arise' is a rarely used word in the Bible, but is also used for the resurrection. That places us directly in context for what Jesus the Messiah is about to do.

When Jesus sends out seventy disciples, it is a clear message to these rebellious seventy administrators that their authority will be removed. There is some debate about whether it was seventy or seventy-two that were sent. Also, this issue presents itself with the nations, whether there were seventy or seventy-two. Nonetheless, the number seventy is an important number representing 'totality.' See what Jesus tells Peter in Matthew 18:21-22 regarding a total or complete forgiveness of our brothers.

Thus, the point stands. The LORD will replace the rebellious lesser gods who the LORD calls the sons of disobedience.

### **Provocation by Power**

Jesus travels to Mount Hermon. To put that in perspective, from the North shore of the Sea of Galilee, Mount Hermon is about 114 miles or 184 kilometers, & takes about two days to walk the distance. Then Jesus takes Peter, James, & John to climb to the top of the mountain. The distance & the effort underscore that this location must have been important, not happenstantial.

2 Enoch 18:1-7 shows the serpent of the first rebellion descending on Ermom (Mount Hermon) & breaking their vows after seeing the daughters of humanity, who at that point lived in the Garden of Eden, the Mountain of God. 1 Enoch 6:1-8 details the oath to commit the second rebellion on the hill Ermom (Mount Hermon).

Given the geographic context, it points to the idea that this could have not only been Eden, but more importantly where the rebellious angels broke their vows & began to defile God's good world & His imagers here on earth. What we see here is likely a clear message to Satan (Azazel) who would have been the first to reject the Lord of Light, the instigator of the first rebellion in Eden, an influencer & leader in the second rebellion, a tempter & deceiver leading up to the third rebellion at Babel, & a motivating agent leading the administrative sons of God to become the sons of disobedience.

The transfiguration of Jesus into His glorification & the manifestation of the Trinity at this location is not happenstantial. It squares the crosshairs directly on Satan (Azazel) & his fallen kingdom of rebels, provoking him into a desperate plan to murder Jesus.

#### **Prophetic Destruction of the LORDs Enemies**

Jesus tells Peter that He will build His church on Peter (Mat 16:18). The Catholic church credits Peter as being the first Pope as a result. While the personal nature of this could well apply to Peter, it likely also applied to the other disciples, & eventually guys like Paul. Reaching forward, it would also apply to all followers of Jesus that carry the mission of the church forward.

There are many theologians who believe that Jesus was referring to the war against Satan during the age of the church. It is quite possible that in an example of prophetic duality it could have carried all of these meanings. All would have been concerning to Satan & the enemy.

#### **Timing of These Events**

Throughout the ministry of Jesus, a continued series of teachings, miracles, & events showed the power & divinity of Christ Jesus. The last series of events at Mount Hermon & Caesarea Philippi were the last stop on Jesus' ministry tour as He began His walk to Jerusalem.

Jerusalem had a population of about thirty thousand people. At Passover the city would swell to about ten times that size, or around three hundred thousand people. The Romans would have been on alert during this time, with more soldiers, more patrols, & more rigid adherence to the civil law. Also, the partnership between Pilot & Caiaphas would have been essential given that civil relations between the Jews & the Romans were already on edge.

In the midst of this tense situation, Jesus rides into Jerusalem as the Messiah on a donkey fulfilling prophecy (Zech 9:9; Is 62:10-12). Jesus has long been on the radar of the Sanhedrin, & this entrance on Palm Sunday strikes directly at their pride to maintain control. Jesus is saying through this event that He is the Son of God, the conquering Messiah. To Caiaphas & the other Jewish leaders this would have been heresy & a call to mutiny.

After His triumphant entry to Jerusalem Jesus cleans out the thieves at the Temple, purveyors of animals for sacrifice to the LORD (Mat 21:12-17). Have you ever wondered why Jesus does this now? I've heard this taught by itself, but not in context to the timeline. Considering these events as pointed attacks to elicit a response from the enemy, Jesus has:

- Manifest in His glorified state at the Mount of Transfiguration with the Trinity.
- Told Peter (& the enemy eves dropping) that His church will give Satan a beating.
- Ridden into Jerusalem publicly identifying Himself as the Messiah.
- Weeps over the condition of Jerusalem.
- Now Jesus evicts the Temple merchants.

Jesus had been to the Temple many times. He would have seen these merchants every time. Why now? Why insert Himself at this specific point. It wasn't an accident. This action would have enraged Caiaphas & the other Temple priests & Jewish officials. It was a solidifying event that led to the cross.

The enemy had every reason to believe that Jesus was coming after them. Recognizing what looked to be an error in strategy, the enemy leapt on it. We see Jesus walking around, teaching, having His authority challenged, debating the Sadducees, & probably being watched closely by the Temple leaders. The plot to kill Jesus shows up a couple chapters later in Luke 22, but the commitment to follow through with murder had been baked.

The accusation of blasphemy was a red herring, but sufficient enough to call for blood. With the betrayal of Jesus, His arrest, & the verdict at the secret mock trial, all that was left was to have the Romans execute the death sentence – a punishment out of scope for the Temple itself.

It is remarkable that the Temple & its leadership were willing to violate their law, based on a compromised judicial process. It may seem odd, but the answer can be found in what Paul tells us in Ephesians 6:12. We wrestle not against flesh & blood. Behind the High Priests were the highest-ranking rebels, with Satan himself at the forefront. In the mind of the enemy victory may have seemed so close. It was true, the earthly ministry of Jesus was just about over, but their victory would not be as sure as they may have thought.

Image

4Q

Ministry of Jesus  
Pt. 3 Covenant

\$4: The Enemy: Ministry of Jesus is a Cosmic Battle – Part 3: Covenant

New Covenant

Principalities De-legitimized

(5) Disp: Law

(2) Disp: Grace

Most High

190a. Jesus prays under stress & sweats blood. But prepares His heart to accomplish the Will of the Father. (Mat 26:36-46; Lk 22:39-46)

190b. The disciples fall asleep, despite being asked by Jesus to stay awake. (Mat 26:40, 43)

190c. Jesus arrested in the Garden of Gethsemane. (Mat 26:47-56; Lk 22:47-53)

192d. Jesus is taken to the residence of Caiaphas to be interrogated despite it being the eve of Passover, under the cloak of darkness, & outside the proper adjudication of cases by the Temple.

193a. Jesus begins His the last stages, becoming the Passover Lamb for the sin of the world. (Mat 26:36-46; Lk 22:39-46)

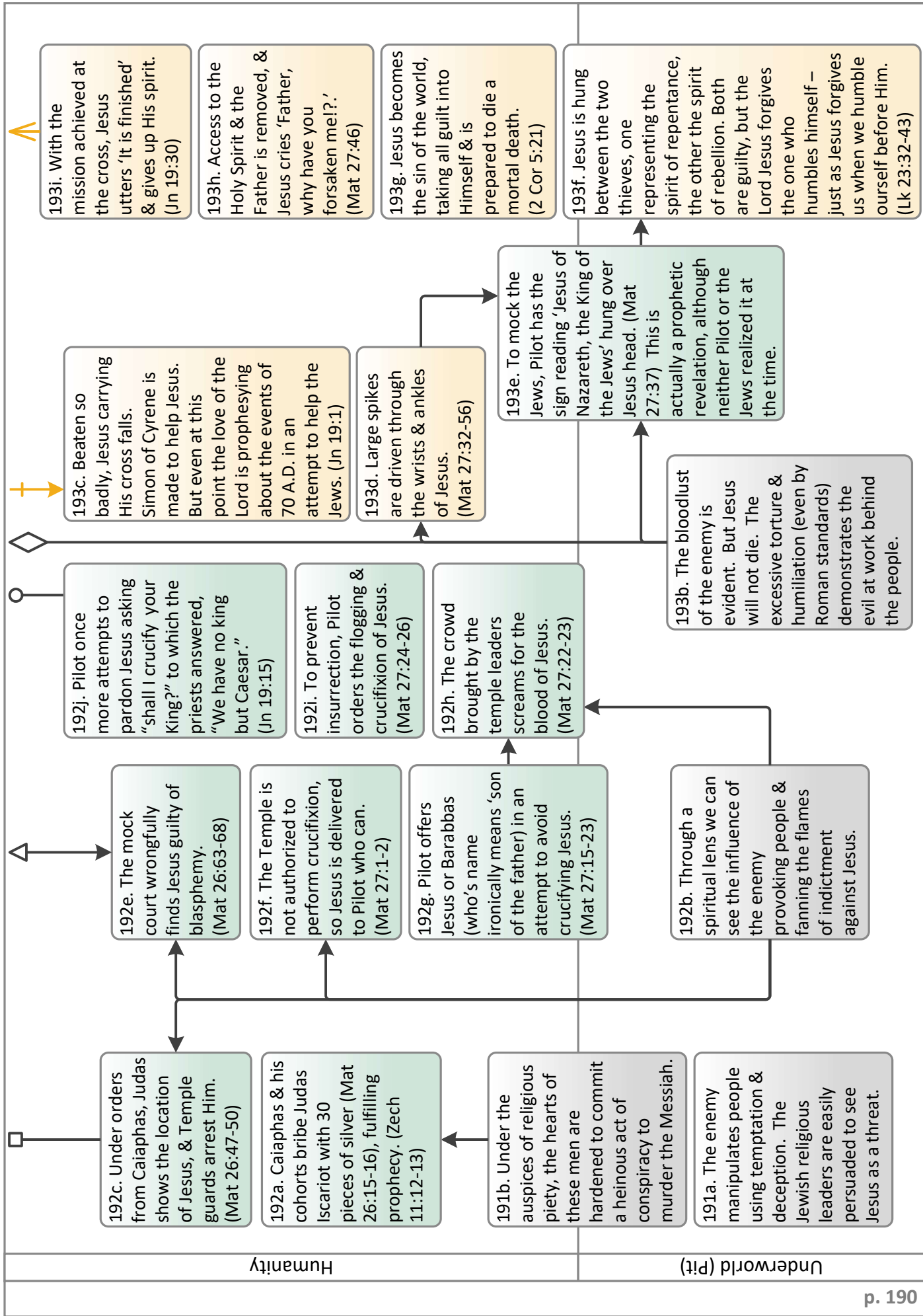
193b. The graphic reality of the flogging was that Jesus was beaten by a Roman death squad to a point so excessive that his skin was hanging off His body. Death, nonetheless, was not on Him because He had no sin.

193l. The resurrection paid the price for all who receive His free gift. It totally delegitimized the authority of Satan & the sons of disobedience, leaving them with no accusation to bring before the children of God. (Col 1:13-14)

193k. On the third day Jesus is resurrected, conquering sin & death. (Jn 20:1-29)

193j. The enemy would have been thrilled. They accomplished exactly what they wanted! Except that...

196a. Jesus ascends to the Heavens to sit at the right hand of the Father. (Acts 1:6-11)



## Ministry of Jesus is a Cosmic Battle – Part 3: Covenant

### **Jesus Prepares Himself**

Jesus's prayer in Gethsemane, the Mount of Olives, is hard to fathom (Mat 26:36-46; Lk 22:39-46). Anguish doesn't seem like a big enough word as He prepares to atone for the sin of all who receive Him as Lord. In both accounts the disciples are asked to pray so that they will not fall into temptation, but instead they fall asleep (Lk: 22:45).

Also in both accounts, the Lord Jesus asks the Father that, if possible, allow the cup to pass from Him, nevertheless, let the will of the Father be done. In Luke 22:42-44 an angel from heaven appears to strengthen the Lord Jesus for what is about to happen.

### **A Corrupt Court**

The stage has been set, & the murder plot is now operating through its paces. Judas, bribed by thirty pieces of silver turns Jesus over to the Temple. He is brought to the home of Caiaphas under the cover of darkness. With the evil spirits at the helm behind the chief priests & scribes (Lk 22:66) bent against the Son of God, all that is left is to find any reason to fit the desired sentence. To be sure, at this point there is no way the enemy was not going to murder Jesus.

### **A Civil Pardon? Avoiding an Uprising?**

Neither Pilot or Herod found guilt with Jesus (Lk 23:1-16). Yet the crowd of Jews & the leaders of the Temple cried all the more for Barabbas. When considering this scene three things jump out.

First, Jesus being found to be without guilt by the ruling political government is an interesting juxtaposition. It is important because it demonstrates that Jesus is innocent by civil standards, & also reveals who the enemy has aligned with to execute this murder.

Second, that the crowd was brought by the Jewish leaders. Only a week earlier many people lined the streets on Palm Sunday. Where did they all go? No doubt different factions of Jews believed or did not. Surely the Temple leaders must have been selective about who they brought with them.

Finally, the tenuous environment of Jerusalem during Passover was at an apex. Jerusalem swelled from about thirty thousand people to nearly three hundred thousand – ten times it's typical size. A controversial uprising could have erupted into a war zone, the avoidance of which made the killing of one man worth the price of stability & peace.

To appease the Jews & diffuse the potential riot, Pilot gives Jesus over to be crucified (Lk 22:18-25). Thus, Jesus is put to death by both the Jews & the Gentiles.

### **The Enemy is Poised for Victory**

From the desperate vantage point of the enemy, the death of Jesus couldn't represent anything but a win. They think they are about to destroy one of the members of the Trinity. In doing so they expect to avoid having their authority over the nations revoked & possibly void their ultimate destruction. The plot to murder the Christ by all appearances is about to work to their benefit.

### **Victory From the Jaws of Defeat**

Jesus becomes the Lamb of God. He lays Himself down at the cross. His hypostatic union, being all God & all man allows Him as the only faithful Israelite to make the New Covenant. At the cross, access to the Father & the Holy Spirit are removed from Jesus, & He becomes our sin.

#### §4: The Enemy: Second Fall of Humanity

The influx of the full weight of sin, bore for the whole of humanity that will receive Him as their Savior, causes His moment of crisis where He cries out “My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?” (Mat 27:46). Then in a loud voice Jesus said, “Father into your hands I commit my spirit!” & breathed His last (Lk 23:46). The enemy, at this moment, looked to have won, the Messiah defeated. What they didn’t realize is that Jesus died with all the cards, & was now positioned for the greatest victory.

##### **Jesus Wins**

Before the death & resurrection of Christ Jesus people were required to sacrifice to the LORD under the dispensation of the Law. Without this atonement the enemy could accuse people of their sins, transgressions, & iniquities.

Buried on Friday (day one), Jesus’ tomb was empty on Sunday morning (the third day). Now, when believers talk about the sufficiency of the Blood of Christ, the reality is that Jesus died with all of our sin upon Him. All of His blood was emptied out at the cross & made comprehensive atonement for the sin of the world. After Jesus conquers sin & death, there is nothing left, no case for the accuser to bring to the LORD regarding those who have received Jesus as their Lord & Savior. Believers have been atoned for, & have been adopted into the family of the Heavenly Father.

##### **Jesus & His Holy Spirit Work Through Us**

One of the last things Jesus does before returning to the Father is to give His followers the Great Commission (Mat 28:16-20). On one hand, ‘as we go into the world’ is something to incorporate into our daily lives. It is true that we are not all called to be in the office of an evangelist. And while our salvation can never depend on works (Eph 2:8-10), faith without works is dead (Jm 2:26). Out of our love for the Lord, & remembrance of our own condition before receiving Jesus, determining to reach out to those still held captive by the illegitimate sons of disobedience is the grafting of the wild olive shoot (Gentiles) back into the root of the original tree (Jews) (Rom 11:11-24).

As we go, the Bible calls us a temple, & that the Spirit of God dwells within us (1 Cor 3:16). This is critical from a cosmic geography perspective. Not only did Jesus conquer sin & death, but He extends His authority to us through the Holy Spirit. Every step we take our feet are on Holy Ground. Just like the Israelites in the wilderness, as we walk the Character of Christ Jesus goes with us, protects us, & ministers to others through us.

The love of the Lord operating within us should compel us to demonstrate our Love back, through prayer, praise, thanksgiving, & edification through the Word of God. As we grow, He delivers the means & instruction so that He can extend this love to others through us. Incredible isn’t a big enough word to describe the New Covenant victory of the Lord Jesus.





## Section 5

### Dispensations

“For everything there is a season, and a time for every matter under heaven.”

The Most High God  
Ecclesiastes 3:1

Image

5B

The Dispensations

**\$5: Dispensations: The Dispensations**

	<b>Disp: Innocence</b>	<b>Disp: Conscience</b>	<b>Disp: Human Gvt</b>	<b>Disp: Promise</b>	<b>Disp: Law</b>	<b>Disp: Grace</b>
<b>The LORD begins the Age</b>	12a. The LORD creates mankind as His imagers in the Garden of Eden. (Gen 1:27-28, 2:17)	22a. The LORD clothes Adam & Eve, (Gen 3:21) & likely teaches worship & survival.	66a. The LORD remembers Noah & the animals & removes the flood waters. (Gen 8:1-5)	87a. The LORD keeps a remnant for Himself. (Gen 11:27-12:9)	107b. The LORD brings His remnant Israel out of Egypt. (Ex 7-14)	177a. Jesus begins the dispensation of Grace, through His Ministry.
<b>The LORD Makes Covenant</b>	<b>Edenic Covenant</b> 12a. The LORD makes the Edenic Covenant, cannot eat from the Tree of Knowledge. (Gen 2:15-17) 12b. The LORD tells Adam & Eve to 'be fruitful & multiple & subdue the earth.' (Gen 1:27-28) 13a. Adam & Eve live in the garden & walk with God for some time. (Gen 2:7-25)	<b>Adamic Covenant</b> 22b. The LORD makes the Adamic Covenant with Adam as a result of his sin (Gen 3:16-19) 22c. Guided by their conscience mankind must choose to do right & approach the LORD through sacrifice. (Gen 3:22) 23a. Humanity proliferates. (Gen 6:1)	<b>Noahic Covenant</b> 66a. The LORD makes the unconditional Noahic Covenant. (Gen 8:20-9:1) 66b. Humanity told to scatter, replenish the earth, have dominion over animals, & eat meat. (Gen 8:20-9:17) 67. Humanity Preserved (Gen 9)	<b>Abrahamic Covnt.</b> 90a. The LORD makes Covenant with Abraham. (Gen 15) 90b. Through the Israelites, the LORD demonstrates how to worship & serve Him. (Ex 20:1-7; Mal 1:6-14) 94. Israelites thrive in Egypt (Ex 1:1-7)	<b>Mosaic Covenant</b> 109a. The LORD makes covenant with Israel at Mount Sinai. (Ex 20-23) 109b. Access to the LORD through atonement & sin sacrifices. (Ex 20-23; Mal 1:6-14)	<b>New Covenant</b> 193a. Jesus makes a new covenant at the cross. (Mat 27-28) 196a. Jesus gives the Great Commission. (Mat 28:16-20) 205a. The Holy Spirit powers the Great Commission. (Jn 15:26) 209a. Christ's church supports His mission. (Eph 4:10-13) 211a. God uses us to save the elect. (Eph 4:17-24)
<b>Man Tries to Conform</b>	<b>First Fall</b> 14. Satan (Azazel) is the rebel prince in Eden that tempts Eve (Gen 3; 2 En 29:3-4, 31:4-6)	<b>Second Fall</b> 33a. The sons of God (Watchers) 'married the ones they chose' (raped women). (Gen 6:1-4)	<b>Third Fall</b> 78a. Satan (Azazel) tempt humans to worship lesser gods.	<b>Sons of God Rebel</b> 85a. The seventy sons of God rebel, keeping worship for themselves & rule unjustly. (Ps 82)	<b>lesser god worship</b> 127. The lesser gods rule the nations surrounding Israel with injustice. (Ps 82; Deut 32:8)	<b>divide &amp; delay</b> 208a. Lesser gods: authorities, rulers, & powers fight the Great Commission. (Eph 6:12)
<b>Rebellion &amp; Drift Into Apostacy</b>						

15b. Adam & Eve both eat the fruit. Mortality & fear enter humanity. (Gen 3:6-13)

### Eviction from Eden

16a. The LORD brings judgement. (Gen 3:14-19)

35a. The genetics of humanity are defiled by the sons of God & Nephilim. (Gen 6:1-4; 1 En 7)

### The Flood

64. The LORD sends the flood. (Gen 7:6-24)

79a. Humans rebel, settle in Shinar & build Tower of Babel. (Gen 11:2-4)

### Disinheritance

82a. Humanity disinherited by the Most High God. (Gen 11:8; Deut 32:8)

86a. The nations are now held hostage by the lesser gods. (Ps 82; Deut 32:8)

### Plagues in Egypt

107a. The Most High does battle against the lesser gods. (Ex 7-14)

128. Hostile nations lure Israel into idolatrous worship of lesser gods.

### Sin on the Son

193a. The LORD places all judgement on Jesus who becomes the sin of the world. (Mat 27-28)

210a. Harassment by demons to inhibit believers & blind the hearts of the lost.

### Wrath of the LORD

456a. Wrath of the Most High poured out on His enemies. King Jesus returns! (Rev 16:1,17-21)

16b. Adam & Eve are not immediately killed by the LORD for their sin.

17. Humanity expelled from Eden. (Gen 3:16-19, 23-24; 3 En 5:1)

18. The Serpent (Azazel) will be crushed by the offspring of the woman. (Gen 3:14-15)

65a. Noah & his household & animals are saved. (Gen 7:1-8:18)

65b. All humanity & every creature on earth perish. (Gen 7:21-24)

68a. The Nephilim are dead, but their defiled gene is preserved by the wives of Noah's sons.

87a. The LORD keeps a remnant for Himself. (Gen 11:27-12:9)

83a. The nations are allotted to lesser gods. (Gen 11:8; Deut 32:8)

84. Seventy sons of God placed over the Nations. (Gen 10; Ps 82; Deut 32:8)

108a. Israel is protected & saved by the LORD. (Ex 7-14)

108b. Pharaoh & army are consumed by the Red Sea. (Ex 14:26-31)

108c. The inferiority of the lesser gods is put on display with their utter defeat by the LORD.

204a. Salvation for those receiving Jesus as Lord & Savior. (Acts 2:1-13; Rom 5:14-19)

194. Authority of lesser gods de-legitimized by Christ Jesus.

195. The destruction of the enemies of God in the Lake of Fire is made inevitable.

404a. Harvest of the righteous (Rev 14:14-16)

457a. The fallen angels... (Rev 18:1-3)

548a. wicked humanity... (Rev 14:17-20; 18:9-24)

460a. Satan, & Babylon... (Rev 19:20-21; 20:1-6)

462a. ...& demons. (Rev 20:12)

463a. Imprisoned in the Pit. (Rev 20:12)

Divine Judgement

Salvation Through It

Consequences

## The Dispensations

### Cycles & Seasons

The LORD has built cycles into our world. Jesus teaches:

“25 ...there will be signs in the sun and moon and stars, and on the earth distress of nations in perplexity because of the roaring of the sea and the waves, 26 people fainting with fear and with foreboding of what is coming on the world. For the powers of the heavens will be shaken. 27 And then they will see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. 28 Now when these things begin to take place, straighten up and raise your heads, because your redemption is drawing near.”

– Luke 21:25-28

In other words, nobody needs some great Spiritual gifting to be able to recognize these things. Jesus described them in plain language.

There are many verses in the Bible that point us to this expectation of the LORD, that we know the seasons. Consider verses like Psalm 104:19, Isaiah 40:26, & Acts 2:20. In Genesis 1 the LORD tells us that there will be “lights in the expanse of the heavens to separate the day from night. And let them be for signs & for seasons...” (Gen 1:14). Jesus uses the fig tree to explain that “as soon as its branch becomes tender and puts out its leaves, you know that summer is near” (Mat 24:32). Jesus goes on to explain that while nobody knows the day or hour, not even Him but only the Father, we are to be watching for the seasons & living like it is immanent (Mat 24:36-51).

### Signs & Warnings

The LORD never brings judgement without first giving ample warning. But understanding the warnings require an understanding of His Word. In modern times we might equate that to understanding an area of science or technology, which requires an education in that field. We are all required to become subject matter experts in the Holy Scripture. This is our training, from which we will understand the cycles in which the LORD works.

Even the Mayans understood the cycles of the heavens. The last day of their calendar was December 12, 2012. I remember eating fish tacos & watching a beautiful sunset on that day that the earth was supposed to be consumed with fire. I wasn't particularly concerned with the end of the Mayan calendar of course, because it wasn't inspired by the Most High God.

For millennia humanity has been aware of the cycles of the constellations, planets in retrograde, the months by the moon, & much more in the second heaven. These things used to be woven into cultural events like when to plant & harvest. Over the course of time, we've built clocks & calendars to do this work. In the last century we've built so much artificial light that we have a thing called 'light pollution.' In fact, I found an article by Stephanie Buck titled “During a 1994 blackout, L.A. residents called 911 when they saw the Milky Way for the first time” (<https://timeline.com/los-angeles-light-pollution-ebd60d5acd43>). The point is, as modern people we've lost touch with the signs in the natural world that the LORD built for us, & we tend to rely on 'the experts' to tell us when to worry. But the LORD expects us each to be watching for the signs of the seasons ourselves.

## §5: Dispensations: The Dispensations

### Cyclical Framework

To demonstrate the cyclical framework outlined in the Bible, I've put together this diagram. A couple things are obvious. No two cycles are exactly the same, meaning the events themselves are different. However, they share a commonality that develops a pattern. In this pattern we can see how the LORD works, what type of things happen in which sequence, & then determine where we are in that sequence. This then points us to an application. If time to sow is coming, the farmer prepares seeds, if harvest, he gets the sickle ready. Similarly, for us, if we are at the precipice of a judgement for instance, would that change what we do to prepare?

Jesus thought this was relevant. He told us,

**“37 For as were the days of Noah, so will be the coming of the Son of Man. 38 For as in those days before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day when Noah entered the ark, 39 and they were unaware until the flood came and swept them all away, so will be the coming of the Son of Man.”**

– Matthew 24:37-39

Jesus then makes the point. As His followers, we are expected to pay attention. Not because the LORD wants to give us busy work, but because He loves us. In the cyclical framework of common dispensational event patterns, we can see what is coming by looking to our past. George Santayana is attributed with what is today a truism, “those who cannot remember the past are condemned to repeat it” (The Life of Reason, 1905). I'd suggest that the Bible has been teaching us this since the beginning.

### Framework Overview

A dispensation is a fancy word for 'age' or 'era.' Like the minute fraction of a second which is fast & described as 'a flash,' or 'in the twilling of an eye,' a dispensation is too large to understand or experience in one human lifetime. Therefore, to discern how these patterns work, humanity must lean on the documentation of our predecessors to confirm events. In doing so, a fun fact is that the Bible itself has been a mainstay (to the chagrin of worldly academics) of disciplines like history & archeology.

### The Start

Each time the LORD is the one who starts a dispensation. “God, in the beginning created the heavens & the earth” (Gen 1:1). The direct involvement of the LORD is not happenstantial, & we can relate to it personally. Every person who has received the Lord Jesus understands how their life was changed when He entered our life, which is to say, we can see this pattern repeat in our own lives.

The LORD always sets humanity up for success. For example, in Eden Adam was immortal, had dominion of the earth, & direct access to the LORD. It sounds like the ambition of evil genius sociopath in the movies, except that humanity will never achieve any of these things without the LORD. The irony is that what we want is to be how we were created, & that the LORD wants that for us, but we must be willing to humble ourselves to partner with him & not fall to our own pride to 'be like God.' Sound familiar?

### The Covenants

Each dispensation comes with a covenant. These give humanity an operating format for how to come to & interact with the LORD. They also give humanity a mission like 'be fruitful, multiple, & subdue the earth' (Gen 2:16-17). Or the Great Commission (Mat 28:16-20). Having been set up for success, given operational guidelines & a mission, what could go wrong?

### **The Falls**

In the spiritual world view of Jesus' time there were three key falls to humanity, which I detail elsewhere. But within each dispensation we can see a 'fall' or 'drift' into an apostate condition. Humanity starts at a point where there is a possibility for success & ends up at a point where the LORD must bring judgement.

### **The Judgements**

Judgement is an interesting word. We are told not to do it, yet we are so susceptible to doing it. This is because as humans we are not the Most High God, & we are terrible at it. When we put any word in front of 'justice' like 'social justice' for instance, what we get is 'not justice.'

When the LORD brings judgement, it is actually Justice. His Divine Justice. It is fair, because everyone receives exactly what they deserve based on His Divine Law. Moreover, the LORD also follows His own Law. For instance, Jesus had to live without separation from the LORD (without sin) to be the unblemished sacrifice, so that His crucifixion was a murder by the rebellious spirits (Satan & his horde). This made them guilty, delegitimized their authority over the nations, & ensured their wadges of sin in the eternal death. Thus, we see that even the faithfulness of the LORD is to Himself & His own Law.

### **Salvation Through Judgement**

Where would humanity be if the LORD smashed Adam for breaking Covenant? Or didn't bring Noah & his family through the flood? In each judgement we see the longsuffering of the LORD at work, bringing people through (not around) the judgement. To date this has served to develop humanity & has ensured our continued existence. It also should give us perspective as we look forward to the next coming time of judgement.

### **Consequences**

Each judgement has repercussions. These are necessary to set things up for the next dispensation. The flood removed the violence & wickedness on the earth. The disinheritance gave humanity the lesser gods they wanted. The crucifixion & resurrection of Christ Jesus provided a way for salvation for those who receive Him as their Lord & Savior.

Each judgement is intense, & many are globally catastrophic. But the result & goal of the LORD is to return to His original plan where He has a human family, living on the earth, working in partnership with Him.



Image

5C

The Covenants

**\$5: Dispensations: The Covenants**

<b>Disp: Innocence</b>	<b>Disp: Conscience</b>	<b>Disp: Human Gvt</b>	<b>Disp: Promise</b>	<b>Disp: Law</b>	<b>Disp: Grace</b>
12a. The LORD creates mankind as His imagers in the Garden of Eden. (Gen 1:27-28, 2:17)	22a. The LORD clothes Adam & Eve, (Gen 3:21) & likely teaches worship & survival.	66a. The LORD remembers Noah & the animals & removes the flood waters. (Gen 8:1-5)	87a. The LORD keeps a remnant for Himself. (Gen 11:27-12:9)	107b. The LORD brings His remnant Israel out of Egypt. (Ex 7-14)	177a. Jesus begins the dispensation of Grace, through His Ministry.
<b>Edenic Covenant</b>	<b>Adamic Covnt.</b>	<b>Noahic Covenant</b>	<b>Abrahamic Covnt.</b>	<b>Mosaic Covenant</b>	<b>New Covenant</b>
12b. The LORD makes <u>conditional</u> Covenant with Adam. (Gen 1:28, 2:16-17)	22b. The LORD makes <u>unconditional</u> Covenant with Adam. (Gen 3:16-19)	66a. The LORD makes <u>unconditional</u> Covenant with Noah. (Gen 8:20-9:1)	90a. The LORD makes <u>unconditional</u> Covenant with Abraham. (Gen 15)	109a. The LORD makes <u>conditional</u> covenant with Israel. (Ex 20-23)	193a. Jesus makes unconditional new covenant at the cross. (Mat 27-28)
12c. This covenant applies to all of humanity at the time Adam, soon Eve & their children.	22c. Eve (women) will have pain in childbearing & be ruled by Adam (their husband) (Gen 3:16)	66b. Humanity to scatter, repopulate, has dominion over animals, & eat meat. (Gen 8:20-9:17)	90b. Abraham's line like number of stars. (Gen 15:5) A great nation. (Gen 12:1-2)	109b. The Ten Commandments are established. (Ex 20:1-17)	193b. Jesus as a hypostatic union, all God & all man, makes Covenant serving as both roles at the mercy seat of the LORD. All of His blood was spilled out to as the last offering as the Lamb of God.
12d. The condition: Cannot eat from the Tree of Knowledge of Good & Evil. (Gen 2:17)	22d. Adam (men) will work hard labor to produce from the ground. Thorns & thistles will come forth. He shall eat by hard labor. (Gen 3:17-19)	66c. The LORD puts dread of humanity in every beast, bird, creepy thing, & fish. They can be eaten, but not while alive. (Gen 9:1-5)	90c. Canaan, all he sees, (Gen 13:14-18) is promised land. (Gen 12:7, 15:7)	109d. Laws: alters, slaves, restitution, social justice, Sabbath & festivals. (Ex 20:18-23:19)	193c. Christ's blood pays for all sin of people who receive Jesus as their Lord. (Col 1:19-20; Jn 1:12-13)
12e. The LORD set humanity up for success & tells Adam & Eve to 'be fruitful & multiple & subdue the earth.' (Gen 1:28)	22e. Mortality enters humanity because of his sin. (Gen 3:19)	66d. The LORD allows a life for a life. (Gen 9:5-6)	90d. The LORD blesses Abraham & confirms Covenant. (Gen 15:18-21)	109e. Conquest of Canaan promised. (Ex 23:20-33)	193d. Resurrection of Jesus removes the punishment of the second death. (Rev 20:5-6)
12f. This Covenant ended when Adam & Eve were evicted from Eden.	22f. Mankind is now guided by their conscience. (Gen 3:22)	66e. The LORD will never flood the earth again. Makes the rainbow the Covenant symbol. (Gen 9:11)	90f. The LORD will bless all nations through Israel. (Gen 12:3)	109f. Israelites come to the LORD through the Law & sacrifices (atonement & ritual sin). (Ex 20-23)	
				109g. This Covenant replaced by the New Covenant.	

**The LORD begins the Age**

**The LORD Makes Covenant**

**Man Tries to Conform**

13a. Adam & Eve live in the garden & walk with God for some time. (Gen 2:7-25)

13b. Adam names the animals. This is before Eve is created. (Gen 2:18-19)

13c. Had the plan continued, it is expected that Eden would have been a 'home base' or sorts, where the LORD would come down, meet with His human family as they worked to subdue the earth, creating it into a good world in partnership with the LORD.

**First Fall**

23a. Humanity proliferates. (Gen 6:1)

30a. Cain appears to be the first born son of Adam & Eve, likely the first offspring, Abel the second. (Gen 4:1)

30b. Cain & Abel would be at least young men to raise animals & work in the field. (Gen 4:1-2) By this time they could have fifteen to twenty siblings.

23b. The only conclusion here is that Cain & Able had many siblings, & several sisters who would be there for the second fall of humanity.

**Second Fall**

67a. Humanity Preserved (Gen 9)

67b. Humanity proliferates again. (Gen 10)

78a. Genesis 10 deals with the Nations that spread abroad.

78b. Instead of filling the earth (Gen 9:1), humanity settles in the land of Shinar (Gen 11:2)

78c. We are told of Nimrod (Gen 10:8-9) & his kingdom in Babel, Erech, Accad, & Calneh, in the land of Shinar.

**Third Fall**

94. Israelites thrive in Egypt (Ex 1:1-7)

94. Part of the problem is that they do so well, & the Egyptians grow concerned about them.

97a. A new Pharaoh that doesn't know Joseph comes to power (Ex 1:8)

98a. Israelites blamed for Egypt's problems. Persecution ensues. (Ex 1:9)

99a. Under harsh persecution, Israel cries out to their God. (Ex 3:7-12)

**Sons of God Rebel**

111a. Israel confirms the covenant. (Ex 24)

113a. They travel to Canaan.

117a. Punishment of 40 years in the desert given by the LORD. (Num 14:20-38)

125a. With the help of the LORD, Israel conquers Canaan. (Jos 5:13-15)

129a. Israel struggles to keep the covenant & follow God's Law.

**lesser god worship**

209a. All the functions of the church support this mission.

209b. The church looses it's first love. (Rev 2:4) Holds teachings of Balaam & Nicolaitans, idols, sexual immorality. (Rev 2:14) 209b. Tolerate Jezebel, idols, sexual immorality. (Rev 2:20) Look alive, but are dead. (Rev 3:1) Became lukewarm (Rev 3:15-16)

211a. God partners with individuals to save elect. (Eph 4:17-24, 5:11-14)

211b. People fall away, believe false teachers, & don't develop their faith.

**divide & delay**

## The Covenants

### Overview

Each Covenant is designed to accomplish specific things. Established at the beginning of each dispensation, the Covenants provide the guidelines for the time by defining how humanity is to come to the LORD.

### Characteristics of the Covenants

Some are conditional, meaning that humanity has something that is required of them as part of the Covenant. Others are unconditional, meaning that the LORD requires nothing of humanity, but maintains the Covenant Himself. Notice that the things that are really important, like our eternal salvation for instance, do not & cannot depend on us. The LORD knows this, because we are not Him, & we're not supposed to be. If the outcome is something He can't trust us with, He doesn't give us the responsibility. Praise the LORD!

Some apply to all of humanity, some apply to specific people groups. In some cases, humanity has no choice but to abide by them (e.g., Edenic), & in other cases individuals can choose whether they want to accept the Covenant or not (e.g., New Covenant).

Each has a temporal quality which determines whether it continues today (e.g., Abrahamic), has ended (Mosaic), or been replaced by a new Covenant (e.g., Edenic replaced with Adamic), or is yet to come (e.g., Davidic).

### Study of Covenants

Much can be learned from the study of the Covenants. I'll outline the key Biblical verses & characteristics here as a starting point. Also, the outline here unpacks some of the details needed to understand how they connect to humanity's 'falls' or 'drifts' into an apostate condition, the nature & necessity of the judgements, how the LORD saves us through judgements (not around them), & the resulting consequences that set the stage for the LORD to initiate the next dispensation.

### Edenic Covenant

Genesis 1:26-30, 2:16-17

Conditional | Applies to: All Humanity | Does not continue today

So named because it was made in Eden, the Garden & Mountain of God. This is the LORD's plan & what He is taking humanity to with the New Jerusalem (Rev 21:1-4). Best known for 'don't eat the fruit,' the construct we simplify as a fruit tree (& may have been) had greater spiritual implications relating to free will & the nature of our relationship with the LORD.

This Covenant ended when the viability of operating out of Eden as a 'home base' to subdue the earth was corrupted.

### Adamic Covenant

Genesis 3:14-19

Unconditional | Applies to: All Humanity | Continues today

The LORD again makes Covenant with Adam, but this time it comes with hard labor, pain, & mortality. The man earns responsibility because he broke covenant & must now take care of the woman. The woman earns pain in childbirth, & will be ruled by her husband. The serpent, for its deception, earns a prophecy of its destruction.

### Noahic Covenant

Genesis 8:20-9:17

Unconditional | Applies to: All Humanity | Continues today

Named because the LORD makes Covenant with Noah, but Noah represents all of humanity. The LORD promises to never flood the earth again. He sets the rainbow in the sky as a symbol of the Covenant, which is also above the LORD's Throne.

### **Abrahamic Covenant**

Genesis 12:1-3,7, 13:14-17, 15:1-21

Unconditional | Applies to: Israelite descendants of Abraham | Continues today

The LORD promises Abraham several things:

1. That Abraham's seed (lineage) will become a nation
2. That Abraham's descendants will inherit the land of Canaan
3. That Abraham & his people are blessed

### **Mosaic Covenant**

Exodus 19:1-8, 20-24; Deuteronomy 28-30

Conditional | Applies to: Israelites | Does not continue today

Best known for the Ten Commandments, this Covenant was made by the LORD with Israel through the prophet & leader Moses at Mount Sinai.

With a slightly closer look we start to see a number of laws, rules, & customs that seem 'weird' to us as modern people. The reality is that the LORD is very different than us, & His Goodness is so Good that we are not able to be in His presence as we are. However, this Covenant was essential for the Power & Presence of the LORD to abide with Israel. This was the protecting force as Israel was in the wilderness, & was the protecting force for the nation of Israel. The moments of time where Israel breaks the Covenant (see Numbers 2) disaster ensues.

This Covenant was replaced with the New Covenant. To understand this, study Tabernacles & the Presence of God. What was demonstrated in the OT is placed within those who receive Jesus as their Lord & Savior in the NT. We become a Tabernacle or meeting place with the LORD.

Also note that some of the expectations of the LORD continue – like the Ten Commandments for example – insofar as they are examples of how to demonstrate love to others. But Temple Sacrifice for instance does not. In other words, the Mosaic Covenant is replaced with the New Covenant, but this New Covenant contains in itself the things the LORD has determined to persist.

### **New Covenant**

Luke 22:20, Romans 8, (& many other verses)

Unconditional | Applies to: Jews & Gentiles | Continues today

New covenant based on work of Christ Jesus, not us. It is for the Jew first, then the Gentile. It reconciles Jews to the LORD, & emancipates Gentiles from the lesser gods holding the lost captive. To be sure, the work of Christ Jesus on the cross was impactful in many ways. But for those who believe, the New Covenant is the gateway to victory, & by the Grace of God He shares that with us.

### **Davidic Covenant**

2 Samuel 7:5-19

Unconditional | Applies to: Israelites | Still to come

The LORD promises David with this Covenant that there will be a time when 'violent men shall afflict them [Israelites] no more' (vs. 10). This will be an everlasting condition for the kingdom (vs. 16). Because these conditions have not yet been met, we know that this time is yet to come.

Another indication in these verses is the clear reference to the future King Jesus who comes from the line of David, & that He will rule here on earth during the Millennial Kingdom, which is the next dispensation.

**Palestinian Covenant**

Deuteronomy 29:1-29, 30:1-10, Ezekiel 34:25-29, Amos 9:14-15

Unconditional | Applies to: Israelites | Future

The LORD renews the covenant with the Israelites just before Moses dies. The term 'Palestinian' in this context is a common usage, not a Biblical term.

The LORD promises the Israelites the land that was originally promised & inhabited by them. Based on the context, this could be the reconstituted nation of Israel in 1948. However, other things about the land & security don't seem to apply currently, which may mean this is something like the land component to the Davidic Covenant.

While these verses talk about a blessing if the Israelites obey or a curse if they don't, that the LORD promises the land either way, His faithfulness indicates that this may be during the Millennial Kingdom period.

Image

5D

The Falls

\$5: Dispensations: The Falls

Disp: Innocence	Disp: Conscience	Disp: Human Gvt	Disp: Promise	Disp: Law	Disp: Grace
<p><b>First Fall</b></p> <p>13a. Adam placed in Eden with dominion over the earth. (Gen 2:4,15)</p> <p>14a. Satan (Azazel) is the rebel prince in Eden that tempts Eve (Gen 3, 2 En 29:3-4, 31:4-6)</p> <p>14b. The devil understood that the Most High wanted to create another world, because Adam was lord on earth to rule &amp; control it. (2 En 31:3)</p> <p>14c. The Serpent (Gen 3:1) (Satan / Satanail &amp; two of his Grigori angels) descend on Ermon (Mount Hermon) &amp; break their vows (to the Most High). (2 En 18:1-7)</p> <p>14d. The Serpent (Gadreeel) leads Eva (Eve) astray. (Gen 3:2-6, 1 En 69:6)</p>	<p><b>Second Fall</b></p> <p>31a. Satan (Azazel / Asael) one leader of Watchers. (1 En 6:7)</p> <p>9a. The order under him follows him in the fall. (2 En 29:3-4)</p> <p>32a. Jekon, who saw the daughters of men leads the sons of God to lust after the daughters of men. (1 En 69:4-6)</p> <p>32b. Watchers see women &amp; lust after them. (Gen 6:1-4)</p> <p>32c. Watchers make an oath to commit rebellion. (1 En 6)</p> <p>33a. The sons of God (Watchers) 'married the ones they chose' (raped women). (Gen 6:1-4)</p> <p>34a. Nephilim are offspring (Gen 6:1-4) God: abominable mix of spirit &amp; flesh (1 En 15).</p>	<p><b>Third Fall</b></p> <p>57a. Michael makes the Watchers see their Nephilim offspring (beloved ones) destroy each other (1 En 10:11)</p> <p>58a. Once all the Nephilim have killed each other, &amp; they are all dead. (1 En 10:11)</p> <p>58b. Did this sentence include the giants that we see post-flood? If that is true, the other watchers may have still been around.</p> <p>78a. Instead of filling the earth (Gen 9:1), humanity settles in the land of Shinar (Gen 11:2)</p> <p>78b. Satan (&amp; maybe Watchers) tempt humans to worship them as lesser gods.</p>	<p><b>Sons of God Rebel</b></p> <p>85a. The seventy sons of God rebel, keeping worship for themselves, ruling unjustly. (Ps 82:2)</p> <p>86a. The nations are now held hostage by the lesser gods. (Ps 82; Deut 32:8)</p> <p>95a. The rebellion of lesser gods continues, seen in ancient Egyptian artifacts &amp; hieroglyphics.</p> <p>95b. Lesser gods were everywhere, but in Egypt twisted the Egyptian bias against the Hebrews.</p> <p>95c. Lesser gods wanted to separate the Hebrews from the Most High God with temptations of immorality &amp; idolatry in Egypt. This explains the quick worship of a golden calf. (Ex 32)</p>	<p><b>lesser god worship</b></p> <p>127a. Lesser gods rule their nations in rebellion &amp; with injustice. (Ps 82:2-5)</p> <p>128a. Other nations lure Israel to idolatry lesser god worship.</p> <p>129a. Israel struggles to keep covenant.</p> <p>130a. Israel splits. (1 Kgs 12; 2 Chr 10)</p> <p>133a. Assyrians take Kingdom of Israel. (2 Kgs 17:7-41)</p> <p>134a. Babylonian begins for Judah. (2 Kgs 24:10-17)</p> <p>142a. Time of Judah's exile fulfilled. (Ezra 1:1)</p> <p>142b. Jews return, rebuild Temple &amp; Jerusalem in duress.</p> <p>152a. Alexander the Great conquers Judaea. ~332 B.C. Pty</p>	<p><b>divide &amp; delay</b></p> <p>208a. Harassment &amp; chaos by the rulers, authorities, &amp; powers. (Eph 6:12)</p> <p>210a. Harassment by demons increases.</p> <p>215a. Enemy quickens, their time is short. (Rev 12:12)</p> <p>216a. Condition of earth shows enemy in panic.</p> <p>2171 End time prophecies align.</p> <p>217a. Major global travel (Dan 12:4)</p> <p>217b. False teachers (Eph 5:11, 2 Cor 6:14-18, 2 Tim 3:5-7)</p> <p>217c. An unthinking world. (2 Tim 3:4-9)</p> <p>217d. Knowledge increases. (Dan 12:4)</p> <p>217e. Those who call good evil &amp; evil good. (Is 5:20-21)</p>

Rebellion & Drift Into Apostasy



14e. Gadreel & Jejon, the other two Grigori follow Satanail. (1 En 69:4-6)

14f. They saw daughters of men & took wives (raped women) (Gen 6:1-4) & befouled the earth with their deeds, made lawlessness & mixing & giants. (2 En 18:1-7)

15a. Adam & Eve both eat the fruit. Fear & mortality enter humanity. (Gen 3:6-13)

14g. Satanail seduced Eva, did not touch Adam (2 En 31:3-6), Adam has dominion, so he tempts Eve & manipulates Adam. (Gen 3:1-6)

15c. Eve deceived by Satan (Satanail). (2 En 31:3-6)

35a. The genetics of humanity are defiled by Watchers & Nephilim. (Gen 6:1-4, 1 En 7)

36a. Nephilim (Giants) have unclean spirits (NT 'demons') come out of them when they die. (1 En 15:8-10)

37a. The LORD sends unclean spirits to Sheol / the wilderness which is on earth as they remain on the earth. (1 En 15:8-10)

38a. The Watchers teach humanity things that accelerate human depravity. (1 En 7-9, 9:7-8)

39. Teachings accelerate the depravity & destruction of humanity (1 En 8)

78c. We are told of Nimrod (Gen 10:9) & his kingdom in Babel, Erech, Accad, & Calneh, in the land of Shinar.

79a. Tower of Babel built. (Gen 11:4) A ziggurat, the purpose of which was to bring a deity to the humans.

79b. This is the first fall where humanity is complicit with the angels in initiating the rebellion. This is why the coming judgement from the LORD is a complete disinheritance of humanity.

79c. As we've learned, spirit beings in rebellion to the LORD abound & are willing to keep the worship to themselves.

96. The lesser gods are behind the persecution through the Pharaohs.

97. A new Pharaoh that doesn't know Joseph comes to power (Ex 1:8)

97b. Some experts estimate Joseph to coincide with the 25<sup>th</sup> Egyptian Dynasty, which is hated in Egypt even today, because the Pharaoh was from Nubia. A Pharaoh from Egypt proper would also bring back attitudes Hebrews in Egypt.

98. Israelites blamed & persecuted for Egypt's problems. (Ex 1:9)

99. Under harsh persecution, Israel cries out to their God. (Ex 3:7-12)

152c. Seleucid kings regain control of Judea. ~ 201 B.C. Pty

152d. Antiochus Epiphanes, dedicates Temple to Greek Gods. ~ 167 B.C. Pty

152e. Dedication incites Maccabean revolts. ~167 B.C. Pty

152f. Jews regain control of Temple & rededicate to the LORD. ~ 165 B.C. Pty

152g. 8-day Temple rededication miracle (1 Mac 4:36-4:59 CEB) ~165 B.C. Pty

152h. Maccabean period. ~ 167 - 141 B.C. Pty

152i. Roman Emperor Pompey captures Judea. ~ 67 B.C. Pty

152j. Herod defeats Persians, made Governor of Galilee by Rome. ~67 B.C. Pty

217f. People lovers of themselves. (2 Tim 3:1-5, Prov 21:2)

219a. Rising demonism (1 Tim 4:1-6, Mat 7:15-23)

219b. Government decay (Dan 2:27-45)

219c. Capital & labor conflict, rampant fraud. (Jms 5:1-5)

220a. WW1, WW2. (Mat 24:4-8, Is 19:2)

220b. Israel a nation. (Zeph 2:1-2; Ezk 34:11-17; Is 66:7-16)

220c. Jews recapture Old City. (Lk 21:24)

220d. Israel secure. (Zeph 2:1-2)

220e. Israel lost longing for the Messiah. (Jer 3:2-3, Zeph 2:1-2)

220f. Generation won't die before end. (~80 yrs) (Is 66:7, Lk 21:29-32)

**Eviction from Eden**

**The Flood**

**Disinheritance**

**Plagues in Egypt**

**Sin on the Son**

**Wrath of the LORD**

## The Falls

### Overview

As Heiser points out, a Jew from the Second Temple period would have told you that there were three falls of humanity. These each had specific impacts to the human condition, which were also understood during this time. It is something that was understood by the writers & readers of the New Testament. It is essential to understanding the Old Testament. Tragically, this world view has been lost by modern readers.

Each disposition demonstrates a drift into the apostate condition. All of the culprits, rebellions, behaviors, & conditions that bring about the need for the LORD's judgement.

### Fall of Satan (Azazel)

While this isn't covered here, see Boxes 9-11 in the main flow. Knowing that he rejected the Lord of Light (Is 14:12-17; Ezk 28:11-19) & was cast down is important for understanding the initiators behind the first fall of humanity.

### First Fall of Humanity

Prior to this fall, Adam & Eve are doing fine in Eden. At least Satan (Azazel) & possibly two other angels in rebellion use Eve to get to Adam who has dominion. Through deception they convince Eve to eat from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good & Evil. Eve then helps Adam sin by convincing him that the fruit is good for food.

This fall brings fear, self-awareness, shame, lying, & contention into the human condition. In Genesis 3 we see this as Adam & Eve hide themselves when the LORD comes walking in the garden. When He asks where they are, Adam replies, "I heard the sound of you in the garden, & I was afraid, because I was naked, & I hid myself" (vs 8). The LORD asks, "who told you that you were naked?" (vs 11). Then in an effort to differ blame, Adam points to Eve who points to the serpent (Gen 3:8-13).

### Motive for the Second Fall?

The descriptions provided in the Books of Enoch are not Scripture, & I don't look to them as the basis for any doctrine. However, they do provide descriptions about what may have happened. Since Jesus, Peter, & Jude make reference to Enoch & these writings in the NT, I lean on them with slightly more confidence.

If 'the serpent' refers to the angels in rebellion, not just Azazel (Satan), then a motive for the second rebellion starts to materialize. In 1 Enoch 69:4-6 we read that Jejon was in Eden, saw the daughters of men, & led the other Watchers (angels) into rebellion. This quickly becomes relatable. People love to gossip & boast. It is true that a judgement from the LORD & prophecy of destruction happened, but so far these bad guys are still around to talk about it. If anything like what is described in 1 Enoch happened, then their talk inspired more angels to desire strange flesh – human women.

### Second Fall of Humanity

In Genesis 6:1-6 we get this short weird story about the sons of God taking wives, & the Nephilim. There are teachers that have worked to humanize the sons of God, but based on the original language & every other context where the sons of God are mentioned, these bad guys are spirit beings. They are also in rebellion at this point.

There is a deeper dive here that could investigate how angels are made from a particular 'kind' by the LORD. How humans end up in a 'glorified body' as described by Paul. And how this may have contributed, at least at the time this fall occurred, to the ability of the angels being capable of raping women. But I'll set this aside for now.

## §5: Dispensations: The Falls

This fall brings violence, wickedness, & all sorts of sin into the human condition. Ultimately it accelerates the destruction of humanity – the imagers of the Most High. It sows seeds of hatred & contention for one another. What is implied is that the human genome would have also been defiled, which I think explains how Noah was a righteous man, blameless in his generation (Gen 6:9). It also suggests a corruption with all other people, which would imply the wives of Noah's sons would have carried the Nephilim gene through the flood. This would explain why there were giants in the post-flood world.

There are further descriptions in the Books of Enoch about the teaching of secrets to humanity. The LORD actually calls these 'worthless secrets' (1 En 16:3). Azazel & his reports are warrior angels that teach weapons of war & death, which is particularly upsetting to the LORD.

The unclean spirits come out of the Nephilim, & are what come to be called 'demons' in the NT (1 En 15:8-10). It is also implied that the violence & wickedness affects all the land-based animals, as these were also destroyed in the flood (Gen 7:21-23).

### **Third Fall of Humanity**

After the flood the LORD repeats the mission from Eden to "be fruitful & multiply & fill the earth" (Gen 9:1). Two chapters later we read that the earth had one language, people had migrated to the plain in the land of Shinar, settled there, & set out to make a name for themselves (Gen 11:1-4).

That humanity was in rebellion to the LORD was likely due to the rebellious spirits operating behind the scenes. Azazel (Satan) was on the loose, as were the unclean spirits. It is possible that the other Watchers were as well, depending on whether they were imprisoned after the original Nephilim died pre-flood, or when all the giants were disposed of (roughly the time of David). Regardless, humanity becomes complicit in the rebellion, choosing to worship lesser gods. We see leaders like Nimrod, the beginning of Babel & other rebellious nations (Gen 10:8-14). The Tower of Babel, a ziggurat, is built (Gen 11:4). As Heiser points out, the purpose of a ziggurat is 'to beckon the deity to you, but the Most High God doesn't come at your beckon call.'

For the first time, humanity bears guilt in initiating the rebellion & its own defilement. The heart of the LORD is broken, & He disinherits all of humanity. This is a total disinheritance, as indicated by the 70 nations. Some dispute exists between 70 or 72 based on how the divisions work, & may affect the numbers used. However, the point remains. The LORD removes the direct relationship He has, & gives humanity what they want, administrative angels who are expected to rule with the Justice & Divine Law of the LORD. The allotment goes both ways as humanity is assigned to a son of God, & vice versa (Deut 32:8).

### **Sons of God Rebel**

The sons of God rebel. This is described in Psalm 82, where the LORD is asking the sons of God in rebellion how long they will rule unjustly & show partiality to the wicked (Ps 82:2). Their punishment prophesied by the LORD is that they are gods but shall die like men (Ps 82:6-7).

The Psalm ends with a call by the Psalmist for the LORD to 'Arise, O God, judge the earth; for you shall inherit all the nations!' (Ps 82:8). This prophetic statement points to the Messiah & the fulfillment of His mission, which will ultimately remove the authority of these lesser gods.

### **Lesser god Worship**

From examples like Numbers 25:1-8, to the numerous examples in Judges, Kings, & Chronicles, Israel struggles with the worship of the lesser gods. The surrounding nations are hostile to Israel in this spiritual sense, as seen by the many temples to Baal & Asherah poles. Ahab, king of the Northern Kingdom of Israel is married to Jezebel who proudly promotes this pagan worship & sexual immorality.

All of this results in the Assyrians conquering the Northern Kingdom & the resulting diaspora. Followed by the Babylonian exile of the Southern Kingdom of Judah. Followed by a return of the Jews (Israelites from Judah) to Canaan who rebuild under duress. Only to be conquered by Alexander the Great, then by the Seleucid kings. Antiochus Epiphanes, one of the Seleucid kings dedicates the Jewish Temple to the Greek gods, which is a defilement of the temple in the eyes of the LORD & the faithful Jews still living in the area. This event incites the Maccabean revolts, which attack the Greeks & take back Jerusalem & some portion of Canaan. While the land is maintained at some level of success for a period, unrest continues. In 67 B.C. the Romans capture Judea making it a Roman province.

This struggle between worship of the Most High & the lesser gods really highlights the inability of humanity to do what is right & good in the eyes of the LORD. It explains why a New (unconditional) Covenant is needed.

### **Division & Delay**

Following the victory of Christ Jesus, the authority of the lesser gods & Satan (Azazel) is removed. Their ultimate destruction in the Lake of Fire is now guaranteed. This is a significant shift in their strategy for survival. The best they can hope for is to delay the fullness of the Gentiles from coming in. Until then the LORD has placed a partial hardening on the Israelites. But once the fullness is reached, Israel will reawaken, & the Harvest of the Righteous will take place (Rom 11:25-27; Rev 14:12-13).

To slow this down, the enemy has worked to infiltrate the Body of Christ – the church, spread false religions, prompted Darwinian materialism in the sciences, Godless socialistic communism in politics, contention through cultural justice campaigns, & infected masses with depraved minds. Know & understand, the enemy will stop at nothing, because they will be destroyed when the Wrath of God is poured out!

Image

5E

The Judgements

**\$5: Dispensations: The Judgements**

Disp: Innocence	Disp: Conscience	Disp: Human Gvt	Disp: Promise	Disp: Law	Disp: Grace
<p><b>Eviction from Eden</b></p> <p>16a. The LORD brings judgement. (Gen 3:14-19)</p> <p>16b. 'The Serpent' to receive prophesied destruction. (Gen 3:14-15)</p> <p>16c. Active opposition (enmity) between 'the Serpent' &amp; the woman &amp; her offspring. (Gen 3:15)</p> <p>16d. Eve (women) will have pain in childbirth, contrary desire to &amp; ruled by her husband. (Gen 3:16)</p> <p>16e. Because Adam broke Covenant, the ground is cursed. Adam (men) shall eat by hard labor &amp; pain. Thorns &amp; thistles come forth. Eat bread by the sweat of the face. Mankind is mortal. (Gen 3:17-19)</p>	<p><b>The Flood</b></p> <p>64a. The LORD sends the judgement of the flood. (Gen 7:6-24)</p> <p>64b. The LORD brings 40 days of rain, opens the fountains of the deep, The earth is covered by waters. This event is apocalyptic in scale. (Gen 7:17-19)</p> <p>64c. Every flesh that moved on the earth died. The LORD blotted out everything on dry land. (Gen 7:21-22)</p>	<p><b>Disinheritance</b></p> <p>81a. We see the participation of the divine council. (Gen 11:7) But the Most High God (the LORD) does the work. (Gen 11:8)</p> <p>80a. The LORD has His heart broken. He comes down, destroys Babel &amp; the tower, confuses language &amp; disperses the people. (Gen 11:5-9)</p> <p>82b. The disinheritance of humanity by the Most High God &amp; His dispersing of the 70 nations (Gen 11:8). The nations are allotted to lesser gods (sons of God, angels) &amp; the lesser gods are allotted to the Nations. (Deut 32:8)</p>	<p><b>Plagues in Egypt</b></p> <p>107a. The Most High God does battle against the lesser gods. (Ex 7-14)</p> <p>108b. Water to blood for seven days – Harpi (Ex 7:14-24)</p> <p>108c. Frogs – Heket (Ex 8:1-15)</p> <p>108d. Gnats – Geb (Ex 8:16-19)</p> <p>108e. Flies – Khepri (Ex 8:20-32)</p> <p>108f. Livestock die – Hathor (Ex 9:1-7)</p> <p>108g. Ashes to boils, – Isis (Ex 9:8-12)</p> <p>108h. Hail – Nut (Ex 9:13-35)</p> <p>108i. Locusts – Set (Ex 10:1-20)</p> <p>108j. Darkness – Ra (Ex 10:21-29)</p> <p>108k. Firstborn dies, – Pharaoh, Ra on earth. (Ex 12:29-32)</p>	<p><b>Sin on the Son</b></p> <p>193a. The LORD places all judgement on Jesus who becomes the sin of the world. (Mat 27-28)</p> <p>193b. Jesus pays price for all sin for all who receive Him. This free gift from Jesus satisfies the Divine Law. (1 Pt 1:18-19)</p> <p>193c. Resurrection of Jesus conquers death. (Mk 16:1-8)</p> <p>193d. This gives Jesus the authority to decide who participates in, &amp; who is spared from the second. (Rev 21:5-8)</p> <p>193e. The folded napkin or face cloth in the empty tomb was a cultural indicator that Jesus was coming back. (Jn 20:7)</p>	<p><b>Wrath of the LORD</b></p> <p>239a. The Wrath of the Most High God is poured out on His enemies. The return of King Jesus. (Rev 16:1,17-21)</p> <p>239b. Lightning, rumblings, thunder, &amp; an earthquake that splits the earth into three parts. (Rev 16:18-19)</p> <p>239c. Civilization is raised to the ground as the seventh angel drains the cup of the fury of the wrath of the LORD. (Rev 16:19)</p> <p>239d. No wealthy influencer (island) or government leader (mountain) will be found. (Rev 16:20)</p> <p>239e. 100 lb. hail falls. (Rev 16:21)</p> <p>239f. Humanity left curse God because the plague is so severe. (Rev 16:21)</p>

**Divine Judgement**

**Salvation Through It**

**Consequences**

16f. Adam & Eve are not immediately killed by the LORD for their sin.

17a. Humanity expelled from Eden. (Gen 3:22-23; 3 En 5:1)

17b. The days of Adam are 930, & he died. (Gen 5:5)

18a. The Serpent bears guilt & will be crushed by the offspring of the woman. (Gen 3:14-15)

18b. This is the victory at the Cross. It will remove the authority of Satan (Azazel) & the rebellious sons of God (lesser gods), & lock in their ultimate destruction in the Lake of Fire.

65a. Noah & his household & animals are saved. (Gen 7:1-8:19)

65b. All humanity & every creature on earth perish. (Gen 7:21-24)

68a. The Nephilim are dead, but their defiled gene is preserved by the wives of Noah's sons.

68a. Defiled gene of the Nephilim preserved & it gives rise to the sons of Anak (Num 13:33) Rephaim (Deut 2:20-21) Zuzim (Gen 14:5) Emim (Gen 14:5) Anakim (Jos 15:13-14)

87. The LORD keeps a remnant through Abraham. (Gen 11:27-12:9)

83a. The nations are allotted to lesser gods. (Gen 11:8; Deut 32:8)

84. Seventy of the sons of God are placed over the Nations. They are expected to rule with justice. This implies they are not fallen sons of God – yet. (Gen 10; Ps 82)

108a. Israel is protected & saved by the LORD. (Ex 7-14)

108b. Pharaoh & army are consumed by the Red Sea. (Ex 14:26-31)

108c. The inferiority of the lesser gods is put on display with their utter defeat by the LORD.

204a. Salvation for those receiving Jesus as Lord & Savior. (Eph 1:7)

194b. Satan & all his horde kill Jesus. But the wedges of sin is death (Gen 5:5, Rm 6:23). Jesus has no sin, no separation from the LORD. So this was a murder!

194c. Now by the same standard, Satan & his horde have sinned, & their wedges of sin is death in the Lake of Fire! (Rm 6:23; Rev 20:7-15)

195. The destruction of the enemies of God in the Lake of Fire is made inevitable.

404a. Harvest of the righteous pre-Wrath of God poured out. (Rev 14:14-16)

457a. The fallen angels... (Rev 18:1-3)

458a. wicked humanity... (Rev 14:17-20; 18:9-24)

460a. Satan, & Babylon... (Rev 19:20-21; 20:1-3)

462a. ...& unclean spirits (demons) are included here. (Rev 20:12)

463a. Imprisoned in the Pit. (Rev 20:12)

461. The Beast (Antichrist) & the false prophet thrown alive into the Lake of Fire. (Rev 19:20)

**Disp: Conscience**

**Disp: Human Gvt**

**Disp: Promise**

**Disp: Law**

**Disp: Grace**

**Mill. Kingdom**

## The Judgements

### Necessity of Judgement

I think of the judgements as the LORD correcting things back to a condition that is tenable. I mean, these are certainly things to be feared in the 'fear of God' sense. The LORD has a way of doing things in an apocalyptic way. Not that humanity doesn't deserve it of course, because we all deserve our wages for sin.

Not to minimize the nature of the judgements, but this study should develop perspective about how the LORD uses them. And maybe more importantly, what is on the other side of them. As followers of & believers in Christ Jesus, that is part of the really good news of the Bible.

### Eviction from Eden

One way to read this is that Adam & Eve are moved out of a nice garden. Our depictions of what the Mountain of God, the Garden of Eden was, seems to pale in comparison to its reality. Enoch describes it as being so beautiful that even though humanity couldn't enter, people would gather to gaze upon it (3 En 5:3). Angels petition the LORD to remove His Shekinah Glory at Eden from the earth, because what does the Most High God have to do with sinful & idolatrous humanity? (3 En 5:10-12; Ps 47:5-7) The point of all this is that humanity in Eden had regular direct access to the LORD. Now humanity must come to the LORD with sacrifice – something we learn in the Cain & Abel story (Gen 4:3-5).

The consequences take everything about God's good world off plan. In that sense, the LORD also suffers from this Judgement. But God. He has the foresight, longsuffering, & love to reclaim humanity as His children & put things back on plan.

### The Flood

Again, depictions of this time range from benign to a childlike fantasy. The LORD tells us that wickedness of man was great on the earth, calls the world corrupt, & that it was filled with violence (Gen 6:11). This isn't a world from the wall mural of a church nursery. The defilement brought on humanity by the angels in rebellion was severe.

The Bible doesn't unpack the backstory much, leaving us to the very short Genesis 6:1-4 passage. But it confirms that the sons of God descended & raped women. 1 Enoch 8:1-3 details out a plethora of things the angels taught humanity that accelerated their destruction. That the LORD destroyed all flesh including man, birds, livestock, beasts, swarming creatures... (Gen 7:21-23). indicates that wickedness & violence infected & defiled all of the LORD's good world. The flood reset much of the violence. But the defilement survived through the wives of Noah's sons.

### Disinheritance

This is the first rebellion where humanity helps initiate the rebellion. Their disobedience to the LORD's command to disburse & repopulate the earth is direct. They are intent on making a name for themselves. Names are important in the Bible, & the sin of the people is wrapped up in their own identity, pleasure, & vision of success. Behind the scenes the temptation of Satan, possibly the other Watchers if they haven't been bound in chains of gloomy darkness, is evident by the behavior of humanity. The building of the Tower of Babel as a ziggurat gives us line of sight to that.

Humanity has rejected the LORD, so the LORD gives humanity allotment to the administrators. Humanity didn't disburse & repopulate on their own, so the LORD forces the issue by confusing language & sending them in different directions. The LORD wants a human family, He wants relationship, He wants partnership. But the hearts of humanity remain wicked. So, the relationship is severed.



## §5: Dispensations: The Judgements

By way of example, the LORD's frustration with the Israelites on the way to the promised land requires Moses to regularly appeal to the LORD so He doesn't kill them. I think at this point in Babel, it is all the LORD can do to avoid smashing humans like bugs. I don't know that for sure of course, but it must have been severe because the placing of administrators over your disobedient kids feels like sending them off to boarding school.

These administrators are selected from the angels, remaining sons of God who are still in alignment to the LORD at this point. They are expected to rule with justice according the Divine Law of the LORD. So for now, that is the judgement.

### **Plagues in Egypt**

This is an interesting judgement, because humanity is essentially status quo. The people allotted to the nations are still allotted to the gods of the nations. The Hebrews are in Egypt & thriving.

The thing that changed between Babel & Egypt is that the administrative sons of God rebelled. They decided to keep the worship of the people allotted to them for themselves. Of course, this was unacceptable to the LORD.

Also, the lesser gods in Egypt were a threat to the Hebrews who, under a new Pharoah were being persecuted. The LORD had prophesied to Abraham that He would rescue his lineage, which occurs as a result of this judgement. This event becomes interwoven with the identity of the Israelites as they reflect on the God of Abraham, Isaac, & Jacob who brought them out of Egypt.

The plagues build in their intensity as the LORD works His way up the pecking order. What each plague means to us as modern people may sound strange or gross, but the message to the Egyptians of the time would have been clear. There is no God like the Most High God.

The destruction of Pharoah & his army in the Red Sea is a final disgrace to the lesser gods, who were represented on earth by the Pharoah who was believed to be Ra on earth, the ultimate in power for Egypt. That he meets his match against the LORD is not a surprise to us in retrospect, but in the day the Pharoah would have had total allegiance to his false gods.

### **Sin on the Son**

You might notice that humanity participates in each judgement except for this one. This is because all of the sin delt with in this judgement is poured out on Jesus as the Messiah. This is necessary for Jesus to fulfill His role as the Messiah.

Up to this point, all atonement was made through sacrifice to the LORD. We can look all the way back to Cain & Abel in Genesis 4 to see that even at that point blood sacrifice was necessary. From the second to fifth dispensations some form of this was in place. The Grace attributed to the dispensation of Grace is unique in that the need for this was abolished by the ultimate sacrifice of the Messiah.

With the resurrection, defeat of death, delegitimization of Satan & the gods of nations, the LORD set the stage for the rescue for all held hostage to be grafted back into the Family of God. This also fulfilled the Abrahamic Covenant promise, that through Abraham's lineage (Jesus) the LORD would bless all nations.

### **Wrath of the Lord**

Here is an opportunity to understand questions like 'why does God allow evil,' or 'why rejoice in our suffering?' The answer is that if something serves a purpose to bring about the LORD's good plan, He allows it. Notice, there is no further purpose for the beast (antichrist) & false prophet, so the LORD disposes of them in the Lake of Fire. Satan remains, because he will be let loose for a little while. All of wicked humanity wait in the Pit for the Great White Throne Judgement. This judgement is delayed, waiting for those during the Millennial Kingdom who will not receive Jesus as their Lord & Savior.

This is an interesting judgement for a few reasons. First of all, it is yet to come, so there are many theological debates about how it will play out. Second, the Wrath of God is not intended for His Children, which is why the harvest of the righteous occurs before the judgement. Finally, it is prophesied by the LORD to be the most severe judgement of all.

Many believe that we are close to the end of the Dispensation of Grace, which makes this impending judgement worth our study. To do that properly, it is worth breaking it out into a section of its own.

Image

5F

The LORD Saves through Judgements

**\$5: Dispensations: The LORD Saves Through Judgements**

Disp: Innocence	Disp: Conscience	Disp: Human Gvt	Disp: Promise	Disp: Law	Disp: Grace
<p><b>First Fall</b></p> <p>14a. Angels in rebellion petition the LORD asking Him not to make man. (3 En 4:6)</p> <p>14b. The LORD still creates man, so instead, the Serpent deceives Eve to get to Adam's dominion. (Gen 3:1-6)</p> <p>15b. It works, Adam is tricked into breaking Covenant. (Gen 3:6-13)</p>	<p><b>Second Fall</b></p> <p>33a. The sons of God (Watchers) 'married the ones they chose' (raped women). (Gen 6:1-4)</p>	<p><b>Third Fall</b></p> <p>78a. Satan (&amp; maybe Watchers) tempt humans to worship them as lesser gods.</p> <p>78b. Instead of filling the earth (Gen 9:1), humanity settles in the land of Shinar (Gen 11:2)</p> <p>79a. Tower of Babel built to worship lesser gods. (Gen 11:4) Humanity has rejected the LORD &amp; is also in rebellion.</p>	<p><b>Sons of God Rebel</b></p> <p>85a. The seventy sons of God rebel, keeping worship for themselves &amp; rule unjustly. (Ps 82)</p> <p>86a. The nations are now held hostage by the lesser gods. (Deut 32:8)</p>	<p><b>lesser god worship</b></p> <p>127. The lesser gods rule the nations surrounding Israel in rebellion &amp; with injustice. (Ps 82)</p> <p>128. The nations surrounding Israel are hostile to God's people &amp; lure them into idolatry &amp; worship of the lesser gods.</p>	<p><b>divide &amp; delay</b></p> <p>208a. Harassment &amp; chaos by the rulers, authorities, &amp; powers. (Eph 6:12)</p> <p>210a. Harassment by demons increases.</p> <p>210b. Harassment to slow the Great Commission.</p> <p>395a. The fullness of the Gentiles reached, &amp; the Jews cry for their Messiah. (Rev 14:12-13)</p>
<p><b>Eviction from Eden</b></p> <p>16a. The LORD brings judgement. (Gen 3:14-19)</p>	<p><b>The Flood</b></p> <p>64. The LORD sends the judgement of the flood. (Gen 7:6-24)</p>	<p><b>Disinheritance</b></p> <p>82a. Complete disinheritance of humanity by the Most High God. (Gen 11:8; Ps 82)</p>	<p><b>Plagues in Egypt</b></p> <p>107a. The LORD (the Most High God) does battle against the lesser gods. (Ex 7-14)</p>	<p><b>Sin on the Son</b></p> <p>193a. The LORD places all judgement on Jesus who becomes the sin of the world. (Mat 27-28)</p>	<p><b>Wrath of the LORD</b></p> <p>456a. The Wrath of the Most High poured out on His enemies. The return of King Jesus. (Rev 16:1,17-21)</p>

**Rebellion & Drift Into Apostacy**

**Divine Judgement**

**Salvation Through It**

**Consequences**

16b. Adam & Eve are not immediately killed by the LORD for Adam's sin.

16c. The LORD gives a prophesy to work through humanity to get back to His plan. (Gen 3:14-15)

65b. The LORD remembers Noah & the animals. (Gen 8:1)

65a. Noah & his household & animals are saved. (Gen 7:1-8:19)

87a. The LORD keeps a remnant for Himself. (Gen 11:27-12:9)

108a. Israel is protected & saved by the LORD. (Ex 7-14)

204a. Salvation for those receiving Jesus as Lord & Savior. (Eph 1:7)

404a. The harvest of the righteous. (Rev 14:14-16)

17. Humanity (Adam & Eve) expelled from Eden, but still alive. (Gen 3:22-23; 3 En 5:1)

23a. The LORD teaches Adam & Eve how to make clothes... (Gen 3:21)

23b. Humanity proliferates. (Gen 6:1)

65b. All humanity & every creature on earth perish (Gen 7:21-24)

68a. The Nephilim are dead, but their defiled gene is preserved by wives of Noah's sons.

67. Humanity Preserved. (Gen 8:18:19)

83a. The nations are allotted to lesser gods. (Deut 32:8)

84. Seventy of the sons of God placed over the Nations. (Gen 10; Ps 82)

89a. Abraham & his line are the remnant of the LORD. (Gen 12:1-3)

108b. Pharaoh & army are consumed by the Red Sea. (Ex 14:26-31)

108c. The inferiority of lesser gods put on display with their utter defeat by the LORD.

108d. Pharaoh & army are consumed by the Red Sea. (Ex 14:26-31)

194a. Authority of lesser gods de-legitimized by Christ Jesus.

195a. Destruction of the enemies of God in the Lake of Fire is made inevitable.

193d. All who receive Jesus as their Lord & Savior as a free gift of Grace have their sin removed & inherit the Kingdom as co-heirs with Christ Jesus. (Rom 8)

463a. The enemies of God are imprisoned in the Pit / Sheol. (Rev 20:12)

461. Beast (antichrist) & the false prophet thrown alive into the Lake of Fire. (Rev 19:20)

405a. Believers through the ages participate in the first resurrection. (Rev 14:14-15; Rev 20:4-6)

**Disp: Conscience**

**Disp: Human Gvt**

**Disp: Promise**

**Disp: Law**

**Disp: Grace**

**Mill. Kingdom**

## The LORD Saves Through Judgements

“I have made and I will bear, yea, I will carry and I will deliver” (Is 46:4; 3 En 4:6).

### A Bridge Through Judgement

In each case we see the LORD create a bridge through judgement. This is an important realization. The LORD does not scoop us out of our problems. Instead, He is committed to working with us through the things that He allows in our mortal life to develop us spiritually.

That the LORD works in patterns is not a secret. There are many Biblical verses describing Him as remaining the same. A few include Hebrews 13:8, Malachi 3:6, James 1:17, Revelation 1:8, Psalm 90:2, 1 Peter 1:24-25.... There are many more. Perhaps this sounds obvious to any Christian. But as we consider what the Bible shows us in the narrative, & implement it in a sequential diagram, I think we apply it in some goofy ways. But because this truth in particular is such a pragmatic reality to our everyday relationship with the LORD, I argue for its importance based on that alone.

I would further argue that through this perspective of understanding the LORD through Scripture can help derive the right perspective on many things. But to those I'll leave you to your arguments & contentions. I'll present the information here based on how I understand these things to work.

### Eviction from Eden

Adam may have been ignorant of what 'death' was, or what it would mean for him, but he broke the Covenant regardless. This brought about a number of things tied to mortality including fear, self-awareness, shame, lying, blaming, desire to avoid punishment to name a few (Gen 3:7-13). While Adam may have been innocent of these things (hence the name of the dispensation) his failure was a result of a deception from the crafty serpent (Gen 3:1-6) so guilt is not ascribed to humanity, but sin is.

In other words, Adam missed the mark & sinned. However, guilt is not ascribed exactly the same. Adam was guilty of doing something the LORD had told him not to do, but he was innocent of the larger context – things the deceiver was, which is why the Serpent receives the prophecy of destruction.

### The Flood

That Noah is a righteous man, blameless in his generation (Gen 6:9) has more to do with his genetics not being defiled by the rebellion of the angels than his moral purity. Nonetheless, the LORD reaches out to Noah with the arc of Salvation. Eight is the number for a new beginning, & the LORD brings eight people through the judgement of the flood.

### Disinheritance

The LORD severs ties with all of humanity. In the Chaldeans the LORD finds Abraham who responds to the calling of the LORD. Because he trusted the LORD he is credited with great faith & righteousness (Rom 4:1-3; Heb 11:8-19). Abraham & Sarah were far beyond childbearing years, which demonstrated the miracle the LORD who opens & closes the womb performed. The birth of Isaac, with whom the LORD continued His covenant, was nothing short of an act of the LORD.

Thus, through the disinheritance of all of humanity the LORD found a way to derive a remnant that belonged to Himself. Through this remnant the LORD prophesied & accomplished the work on the cross that fulfilled the promise of the Abrahamic Covenant, & satisfied the human side of the Mosaic Covenant.

### Plagues in Egypt

The defeat of the lesser gods puts their inferiority on display. One by one the LORD humbles the gods worshiped by the Egyptians, working His way up to Ra & Pharaoh (Ra on earth). The LORD leads His people into the desert & up against what looks like an insurmountable demise. But working through Moses & the strong east wind, the LORD splits the Red Sea waters of judgement, & His people walk across on dry land.

The Egyptians make chase in a final muster of human & lesser god hubris, only to find that the waters of judgement are not so kind to them. Destruction comes on the agents of the fallen world & the long arm of the LORD rescues His people out of Egypt.

### Sin on the Son

Despite the brutality of beating that Jesus took He could not die. This is because He had no sin, so there was no death in Him. Yet on the cross Jesus absorbed the full weight of the sin of the people who will receive Him, & becoming their sin His body died. Again, the long arm of the LORD rescues Jesus the Christ from the illegal murder perpetrated by Satan & the lesser gods. His resurrection brought Him through the judgement, crushed for our sin & alive in His Glory.

### Waiting for the Wrath of the LORD

This brings us to our time as we look forward to the impending judgement. A study of eschatology can bring a lot of concerns about the end times. These are times of trouble without a doubt. To fully unpack these events requires a much deeper study. However, for this study it is important to define a few critical things.

First, the Tribulation is also called the time of Jacob's Trouble. It is a time that will complete the seventy-week prophecy from Daniel.

Second, the Cup of the Wrath of the LORD is the seventh bowl. Regardless of whether we take a view that the seals, trumpets & bowls happen sequentially, or depict the same events from three different perspectives, the same is true. The seventh bowl is the LORD's pent-up Wrath (Rev 16:17-21).

While the Tribulation is a result of the pulling back of the Restraint, the latter is the judgement delivered by the LORD to His enemies. To draw one parallel, the Israelites experienced the first three plagues, witnessed the rest, observed the first & literal Passover event, walked to the desert, were backed up against the shore of the Red Sea, & were trapped by the army of Pharaoh. But God had a plan.

### Harvest of the Righteous

Revelation 14:14-16 describes the harvest of the righteous. Jesus describes this same event in Mark 13:26. A non-Biblical word used for this event is the rapture. I prefer 'Harvest of the Righteous' not only because it is the Biblical name for the event, but it reflects the idea that those who are righteous are only so because of the atoning blood of Christ Jesus.

My read of this event is that it immediately precedes the harvest of the wicked. There are other events that position this event on the timeline, which require a deeper dive. But the take away is that this event occurs just prior to the pouring out of the Cup of Wrath of the LORD. This which initiates the last events of the Tribulation, literally in its last hours, has a fairly important impact for those who are alive & remain to this time.

Many followers of Jesus will be martyred for the cause of Christ Jesus. Many will fall away from the faith to an apostate condition. I believe that as part of his infiltration of the Body of Christ, the enemy has sowed the idea that Christians are somehow evacuated prior to the Tribulation. The impact of this belief is that we are not preparing ourselves for the worst.

That said, if Christians are evacuated prior to the Tribulation, that would be wonderful. This period will be no piece of cake. It is not something I look forward to, & frankly try not to focus on it. Regardless of when the Harvest of the Righteous happens, I take a 'prepare for the worst, hope for the best' attitude.

What the LORD does promise us, & this is our confidence that makes us more than conquerors, is that regardless of how the LORD saves us through this time, He will save us through this time.

### **The Cup of Wrath & the Harvest of the Wicked**

Revelation 14:17-20 describes the harvest of the wicked. Revelation 16:17-21 describes the Cup of Wrath. Neither are what anyone wants to participate in.

The LORD will crush His enemies. The Beast (Antichrist) & False Prophet will be cast directly into the Lake of Fire. There is a chance that the sons of disobedience (rebellious sons of God / gods of nations) will also go to the Lake of Fire.

Satan will be cast into the Pit for the time of the Millennial Kingdom. The LORD will once again allow him to run loose for a short time so that humanity has the free choice to choose the LORD or choose rebellion against the LORD.

All of Humanity will be physically crushed. The Harvest of the Wicked is described like picking grapes & smashing them in a winepress. The blood from their bodies runs as deep as a horse's bridle for 1,200 stadia or about 1,400 miles. I can only imagine it will run further than that, but it is at that dept for that distance in every direction.

The spirits of wicked humanity will be locked in the Pit until the Great White Throne Judgement, when they will be judged based on their works & thrown into the Lake of Fire.





## Section 6

### Humanity

“Then God said, ‘Let us make man in our image, after our own likeness. And let them have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the heavens and over the livestock and over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.’

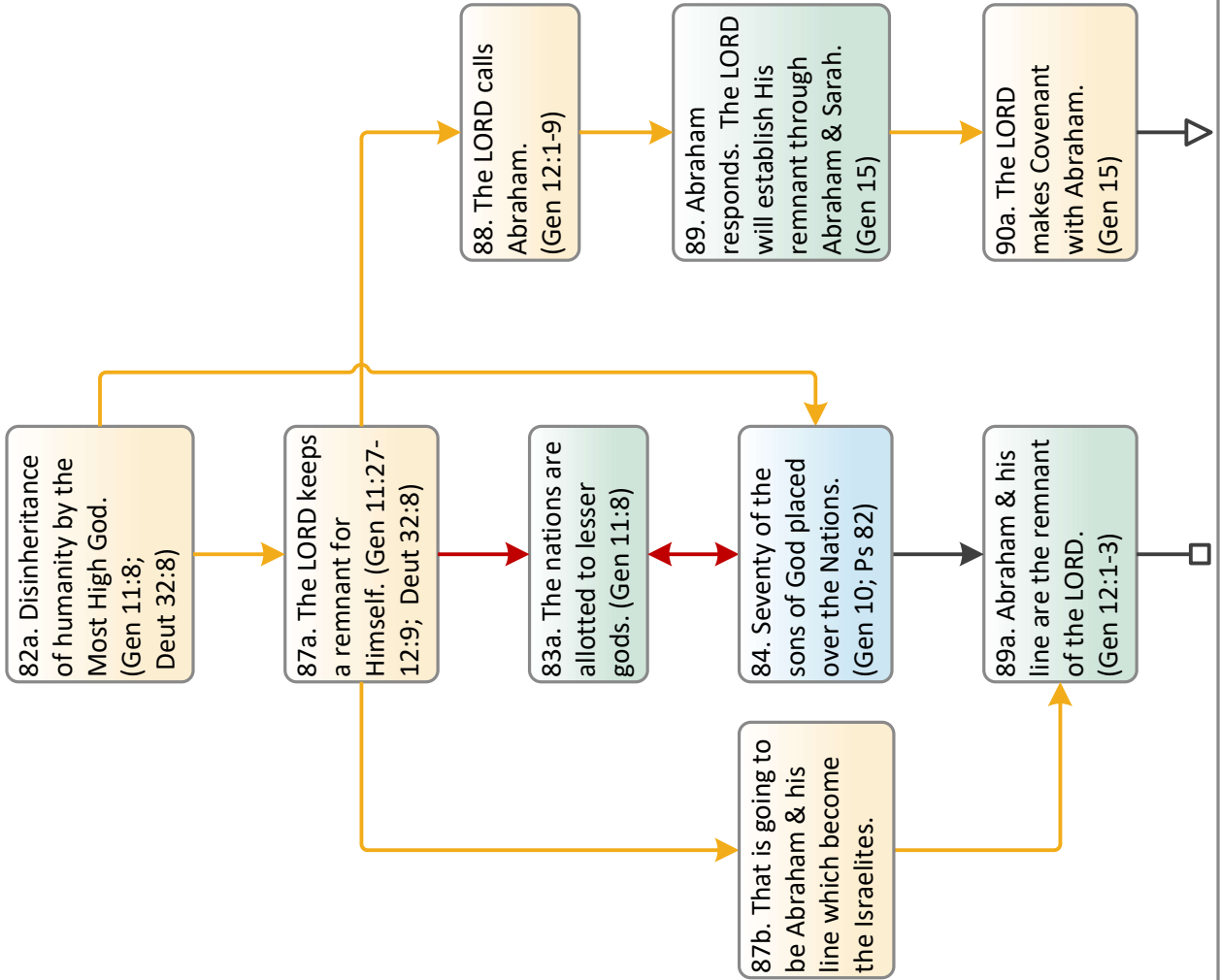
So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him;  
male and female he created them.”

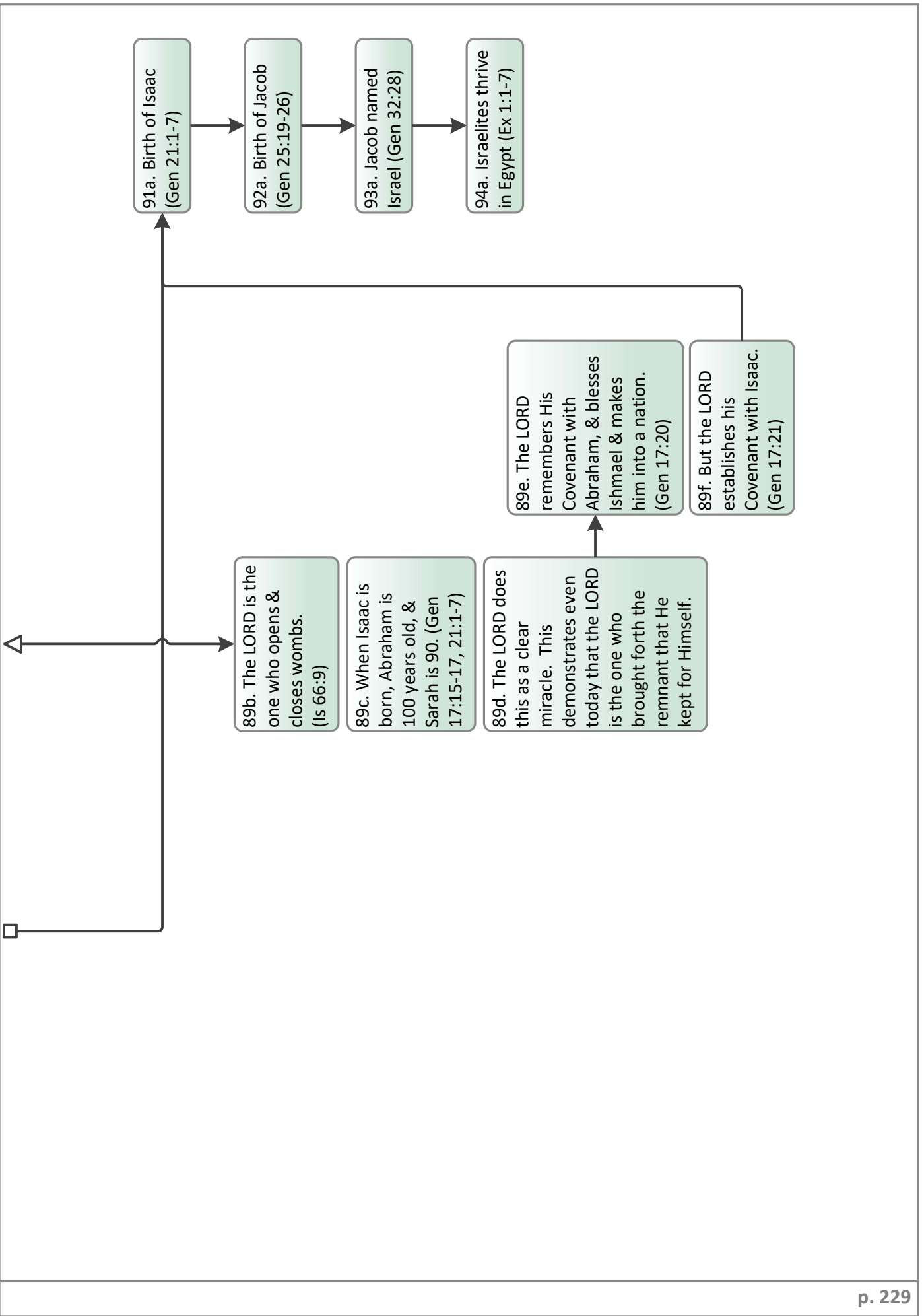
Genesis 1:26-27

Image

6B

Israel – Remnant of the LORD





## Israel – Remnant of the LORD

### **Necessity of the Remnant**

The disinheritance of humanity was complete. The LORD severed His direct relationship with all people, placing them under the authority of administrative angels. From a strategic position, the vantage point of Azazel (Satan) might have looked pretty good. Reflecting on the curse given to him in Eden by the LORD when He prophesied, “I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and her offspring; he shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise his heel” (Gen 3:15).

This begs the question, who are the offspring of Azazel (Satan)? As the story unfolds, we learn of the second rebellion & the defilement of the human genome. Noah is the last of the undefiled genome, but after the flood all of humanity settles into a bloodline of sin. That is, the genetics of humanity carry with it a code of abomination that stems from the rape, offspring (Nephilim), & resulting wickedness in the hearts of mankind. The defilement is pervasive.

Now on the other side of the flood & leading up to Babel, humanity continues to be receptive to influence. The desire to worship false gods in exchange for pleasures is a common spiritual currency. The enemies of the LORD bring increased harassment, temptation, & division to entrench their position as far as they can take it. In fact, if complete destruction were possible that would be a goal. But the LORD as a restrainer won't allow that to happen. As a result, a strategy of pushing the iniquity of mankind to a limit becomes the objective.

The disinheritance itself may have felt like a setback at first. The angels placed as administrators of the nations were in alignment with the LORD. There was an attempt to follow the plan of the LORD. We know this because in Genesis 11:8 the people dispersed from Babel & were led over all the earth. The sons of God would have been responsible for implementing this command of the LORD.

But over time, these administrators would have been tempted into keeping the worship for themselves. No doubt Azazel (Satan) was a motivating factor in this conversion. We don't have line of sight to how it happened, how long it took, whether it was all at once or one at a time, but somehow all of these administrators set themselves up as gods & kept the worship of humanity for themselves.

This was a strong tactical step forward in Azazel's (Satan's) preservation plan. Even though humanity wasn't under his control, it was under the control of the now rebellious sons of God (sons of disobedience) (Col 3:6 NKJV). The spiritual condition of the earth was corrupt, wicked, & once again violent. Because the LORD had made Covenant with Noah where He promised not to destroy the earth with another flood (Gen 9:8-13), the risk of global destruction was low to non-existent.

From the vantage point of the enemies of God, the strategy to deepen the divide between humanity & the LORD was in full effect & as good as it could be. At this point they may have even considered themselves to have an advantage.

### **Creating the Remnant**

After the disinheritance some time goes by. The LORD waits patiently & finds Abraham in the people of the Chaldeans who responds to the call. The LORD makes clear to him that he will become a great nation, & through his line the LORD will reestablish His relationship with all the nations of the earth.

This puts Abraham in the crosshairs of the enemy. However, a hedge of protection, the providence of the LORD is placed around him that delivers Abraham from attacks & his own mistakes.

Many years pass. We read about Hagar, Ishmael, problems, conflict, & separation. We read about the destruction of Sodom & Gomorrah, that rescue of Lot & his two daughters, the sexual immorality, & the beginning of Moab & Ammon.

Finally, when Sarah is eighty-nine years old, & Abraham is ninety-nine, they conceive. This wasn't normal, even in these days. But that was the point. The LORD worked a miracle to demonstrate that He was responsible for the birth of Isaac. To be sure, it was necessary that both Abraham & Sarah were old, but specifically Sarah.

Unlike Hagar, which would have been young enough to be fertile, the birth of Ishmael didn't require a miracle in the same sense. Sarah on the other hand wouldn't have even been capable of becoming pregnant except for the miraculous work of the LORD.

Thus, the birth of Isaac is a bloodline created by the LORD as a lineage for Himself.

### **Development of the Remnant**

It seems like it takes time to work through the patriarchs. The development keeps a dependence on the LORD by these founding fathers & results in the twelve brothers under Jacob (Israel). All of the descendants of Jacob who came in to the land of Goshen were sixty-six, not including the wives of Jacob's sons. Counting Jacob, Joseph & his sons, they totaled seventy (Gen 46:26-27).

Notice the number 70 listed here as the count, which again reflects totality or comprehensiveness. Similar to forgiving seven times seventy, or in other words, forgive completely (Mat 18:21-22).

The population of the LORD's remnant grew over the four hundred years in Egypt. The census ordered by the LORD at Mount Sinai counted 603,550 (Num 1:46). The census ordered by the LORD before entering Canaan was 601,730 (Num 26:51).

### **The Remnant Plan**

The LORD, working through humanity, was still on His original plan. While this required working through broken & rebellious 'stiff necked' people (just like us), the LORD kept moving forward.

Along the way we meet people who have scandalous pasts, but give their lives to the LORD. One of my personal favorites is Ruth, who gives a commitment so wonderful it is worth repeating it here. To set this up, Elimelech left Israel with his family wealthy to escape a famine brought on by the LORD. Elimelech is a composite Hebrew name meaning 'elevated' (Eli) 'king' (Melech) (like we say 'Elijah' Eli – Jah, it's the same, Eli – MeleK, 'ch' as more of a 'k' sound). Why so much about a guy who is dead by Ruth 1:3? Because when we elevate ourselves to be our own king (god) & walk away from trusting the LORD, it is not going to go well for us either. By verse 6 Elimelech's two sons are also dead & his widow Naomi is destitute, & begins a return to Bethlehem in Judah with her widowed daughters-in-law Orpah & Ruth. Culturally this is a tough plight for Orpah & Ruth, being widowed, poor, & Moabites. Naomi urges them both to return to their families, which Orpah does. But Ruth makes an unreasonable commitment, & in her words we can hear what we should all say to the Lord Jesus:

“16 Do not urge me to leave you or to return from following you. For where you go, I will go, and where you lodge, I will lodge. Your people shall be my people, and your God my God. 17 Where you die, I will die, and there will I be buried. May the LORD do so to me and more also if anything but death parts me from you.”

– Ruth 1:16-17

This commitment is made in the face of a brutal life ahead. Ruth has no idea the blessings the LORD will bring her. This four-chapter book is a beautiful look into the world of Israel during the Law, & how the LORD works in such a sweet way in the lives of these people.

This commitment is one of following Naomi where she goes, like we should follow Jesus. Ruth will live with Naomi where she lives, the way we should build our homes around the Lord Jesus. Ruth adopts the Israelites who are Naomi's people to be her people, effectively rejecting the Moabites, the way we should reject our worldly identity & become part of the Body of Christ. Ruth's commitment extends beyond the death of Naomi to her own mortal death, & Ruth makes Naomi's God her own. Our commitment through the death & resurrection of Christ Jesus mirrors our now continued mortal life followed by our resurrection in Him. Finally, Ruth is willing to accept anything that comes her way that could possibly separate her from Naomi, the way we are connected to the LORD through His Holy Spirit.

The comprehensive giving of her life to Naomi demonstrates her devotion to both Naomi & to the LORD. And the LORD must have been so happy, because He blesses Ruth so richly! Not only does the LORD bring her a Godly man in Boaz, a baby, & acceptance within Naomi's community, but we see her listed in the genealogy of Jesus Christ too! (Mat 1:5)

If everyone was like Ruth, perhaps humanity would have succeeded in fulfilling the remnant plan on their own. Then again, even Ruth was a flawed person with a scandalous background that prevented her from being the unblemished sacrifice. Which is a good reminder that no matter how much we may want it, there is no way to the Father without Jesus.

### **The Long Game**

In Mary we see someone much like Ruth who trusts the LORD. Mary would have had significant risk becoming pregnant before marriage. Still, she trusted the LORD. And through her faith the Messiah came to be with us. He was capable of being the unblemished Lamb of God, & His death & resurrection was victory for all of us who believe & receive Him!



Image

6C

The Israelite Camp

## §6: Humanity: The Israelite Camp

- Just in case you'd like to try this yourself, here are proportional blocks for the tribes. This is using the census data given in Scripture when the LORD gives the layout of the camp. Note that this does not include women, children, and livestock.
- These blocks were worked out using an Excel worksheet & bar chart. Also on this point, you may want to consider adjusting the aspect ratios of the camps themselves. I used rectangles, but you may want to use more of a square for instance. If the latter, you could also try using the Figure 1 rectangles.
- I did not include the center temple square. That is because, depending on how you organize these shapes, the square could be different. But while you are doing this, think about towns you know that are similar populations. For instance, I grew up near a town that had (at the time) about 60,000 people. That is a lot of area. While the Israelite camp would be more tightly packed, it helps to consider that each of these blocks (even the small ones) are a lot of people.
- To use these, simply make a photo copy, trace, or print the page. Cut the shapes out & try to organize them how they are described in Scripture. Or make your own proportional shapes to do the same thing. I think you will find that working with the concept in this way will teach you a lot about the camp.
- In my understanding, the most sensible application given the directions of the LORD, is an outcome that looks like & points to the cross. I recognize that this is controversial with modern day Jews. Because I have seen Jews coming to Jesus in recent years as the beginning of the fulfillment of prophecy, my hope is that this connection to Jewish history might evangelize to their hearts.

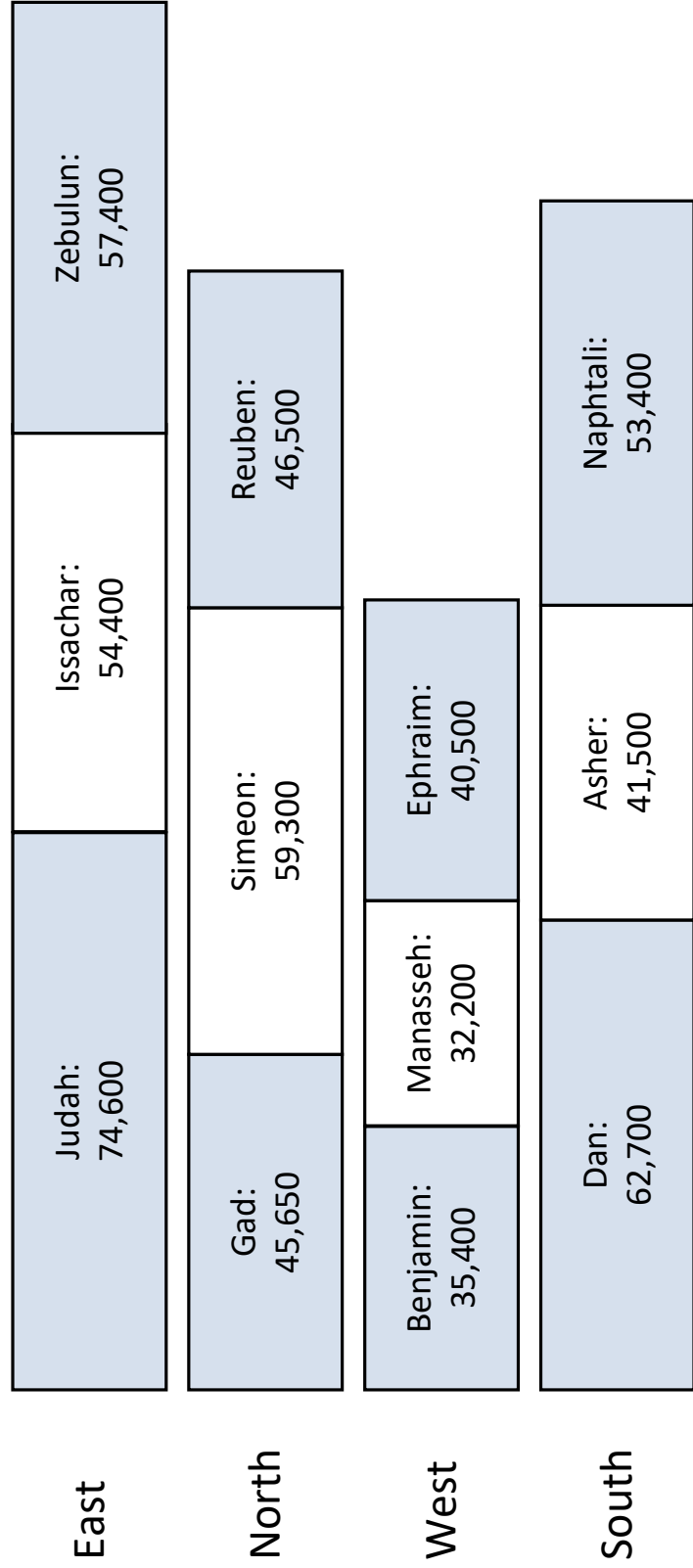
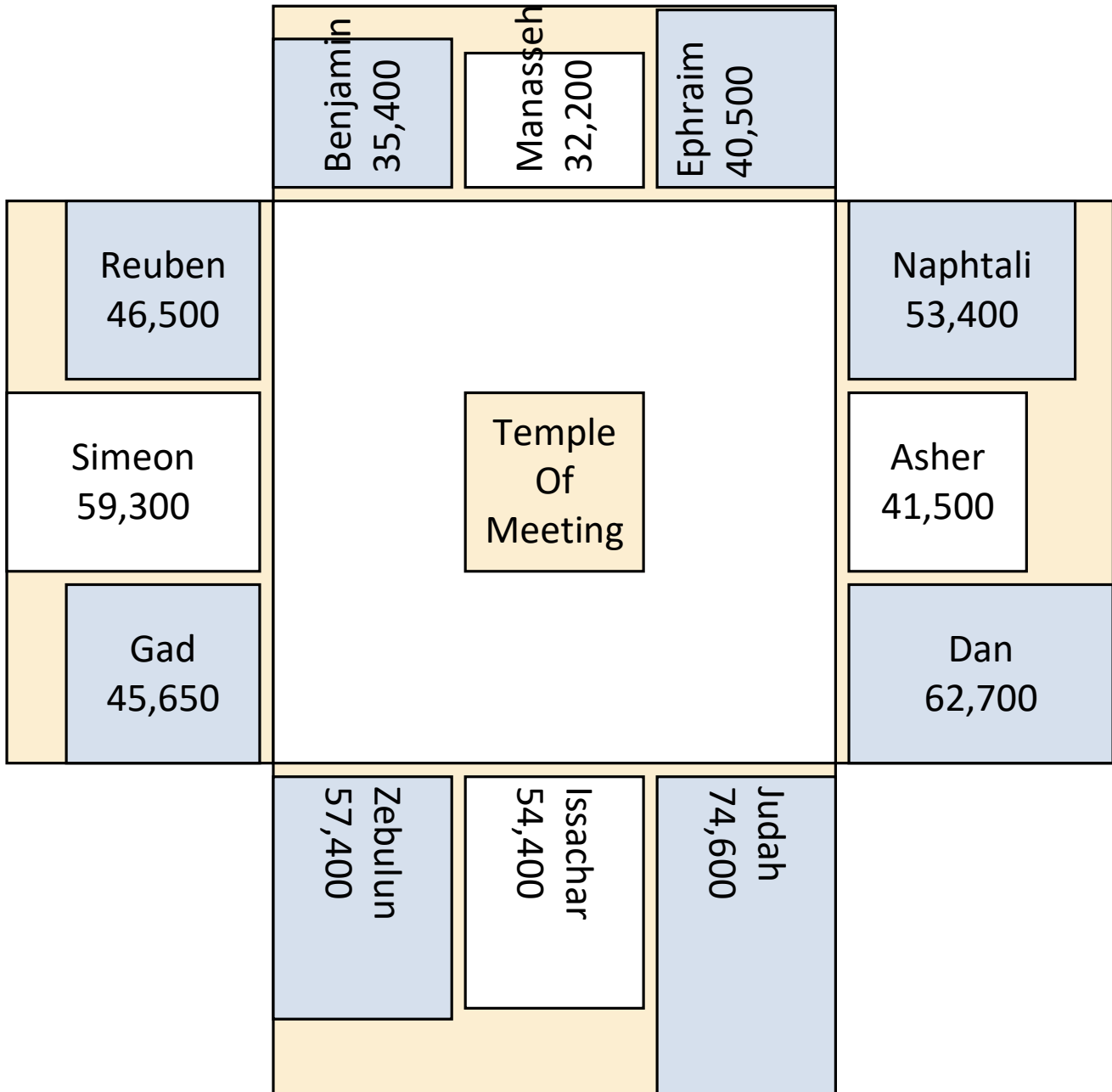
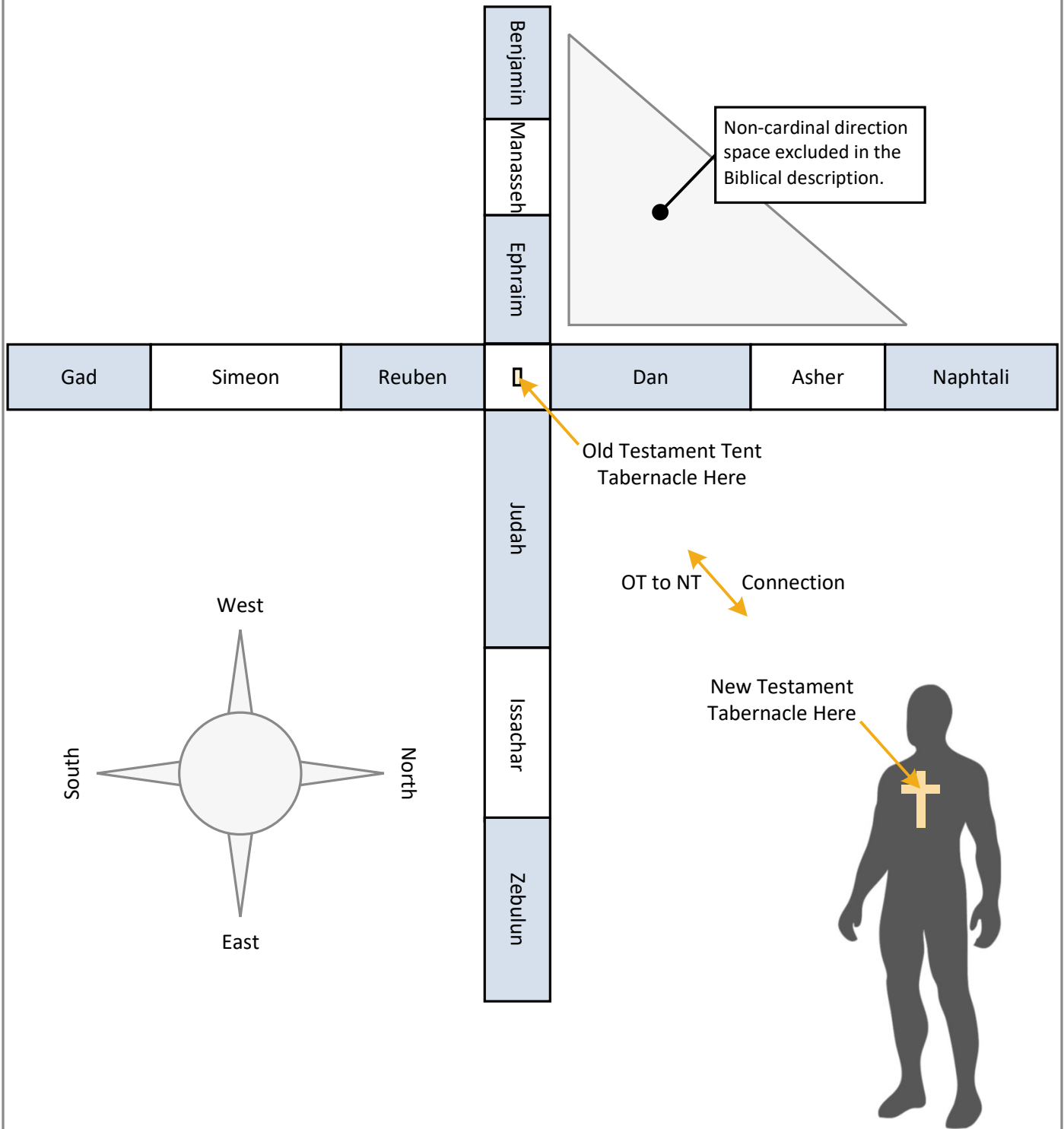


Figure 1



§6: Humanity: The Israelite Camp

Figure 2



## The Israelite Camp

### **Intro to the Analysis**

This is an interesting, & potentially controversial topic. I've seen quite a few diagrams of the Israelite camp described in Numbers 2. In my experience they generally have neat boxes for each tribe that border the square complex in the center that is also home to the Temple of Meeting (the Tabernacle) where the Presence of God resides. What these diagrams don't consider are the populations given for each tribe.

I saw a teaching by Pastor Chuck Missler, who has great videos regarding the formation of the Israelite camp online, & I recommend looking these up. In one of his videos, he recommends investigating these things for ourselves, so I did. You should too.

I've used the numbers given in Scripture & have not accounted for the women, children, or any person that wouldn't have been accounted for in the census. After working through this myself, I arrive at the same concept as Pastor Missler, which is the key take away.

The obvious realization is that all of these formations take the shape of the cross, which is the paramount symbol in Christianity representing the mercy seat of God where the New Covenant was forged.

As I played with the numbers, I moved the geometry around to see what different layouts for the camp would look like. In part, I wanted to see if I could come up with a reasonable configuration that was both practical & not in the shape of a cross.

### **The Center Square**

The Tent of Meeting was approximately forty-five feet by fifteen feet. The courtyard fence surrounding the Tent of Meeting was seventy-five feet wide by one hundred & fifty feet long. The overall structure for the LORD is not that large when we consider the hundreds of thousands of people in the entire camp. What isn't counted is the number of Levites, who lived within the center square.

Each side has three tribes assigned to it, which indicates a symmetry. The most practical shape given the regularly moving complex would also make a case for a symmetrical design to the center complex. For these reasons, I've assumed that the complex in the middle would likely be a square. This would have allowed for the most sensible setup & tear down of the camp complex.

### **Non-Cardinal Direction Space**

Nowhere in Scripture does it talk about occupying the non-cardinal direction space. But it is specific about occupying the sides along the cardinal directions. It also does not talk about the camp being a circle, or surrounding the center part of the camp in a way that fully encircled it. Thus, it is reasonable to presume that the camp extended as spokes along the Eastern, Southern, Western, & Northern directions.

### **The 'Next To' Issue**

I also think the interpretation of the words 'next to' present an interesting challenge. For instance, Judah is the first tribe listed. Following Judah, in Numbers 2 it reads, "Those in the camp next to him shall be the tribe of Issachar..." (Num 2:5). This may seem obvious, but then I realized this could mean two different things.

First, Issachar could be next to Judah, both sharing a border with the center square. This interpretation would put Judah, Issachar, & Zebulun side-by-side along the Eastern edge, each sharing a part of the border with the center square. This solution is the most successful at minimizing the resemblance to a cross. Nonetheless, the depiction is there. To demonstrate this on figure 1 I've placed a max ratio background to bring this comparison out.

Second, Issachar could be next to Judah, where Judah consumes the entire border with the center square. This would place Issachar to the East of Judah, & Zebulun to the East of Issachar. Diagram 2 takes one version of this approach. Averaging this out to create flush borders is conceptually easy to do.

Taking the geometric argument of diagram 2 to a clean proportional aspect ratio according to its three-tribe populational proportion. This would allow the tribes to create flush borders between one another as they stack outward in each of the cardinal directions.

Finally, going back to figure 1, if we were to add in the women, children, & probably the livestock, these rectangles would be forces outward from the center square by their proportion. The result of this would only work to make the shape of the camp more closely resemble a cross.

### **God's Protecting Presence**

In the deep dive "Land & Dominion" I look at how the Lord's presence with Israel was essential for their protection as they traveled from Egypt to the Promised Land, & how this continued for the forty years they spent in the wilderness. The presence of the LORD was observed as a cloud covering the Tabernacle by day, fire by night (Num 9:15).

The gravity of this cannot be understated. The laws instituted & required of Israel during this time were a matter of life & death. While they may seem weird or unnecessary from the perspective of a modern reader, they make sense within the spiritual reality & context of the time.

One example can be seen in Numbers 25:1-5 where people begin to whore with the daughters of Moab. To maintain the spiritual protection of the Israelite camp the LORD sentences these Israelites to be killed. Immediately following this, in Numbers 25:6-9 where one person brought a Midianite woman into the camp. This opens the door to a plague which kills twenty-four thousand Israelites, & is only stopped when Phinehas kills the Israelite & Midianite woman with a spear.

### **New Covenant Implications**

That the camp was in the shape of a cross points to Jesus & the New Covenant. All of the formations of the Israelite camp have the Tent of Meeting at the center of the cross. When we receive Jesus as our Lord & Savior He lives within us, at our center, in our heart (Eph 3:17; 2 Cor 13:15; Gal 2:20; Col 1:27; Rom 8:10).

When the Israelites were in the wilderness, which was under the dominion of Azazel (Lev 16:6-10) & lesser gods (Deut 32:8), their continued existence was absolutely dependent on the presence of the LORD with them. Jesus was born to become the faithful Israelite capable of making covenant with the LORD, & He was & is Emmanuel, God with us (Is 7:14). Thus, as we serve the LORD through the Great Commission (Mat 28:16-20) He walks with us performing His ministry through us.

In the OT, the Tabernacle contained the Holy of Holies, where the Arc of the Covenant & the Holy artifacts were kept. In the New Covenant the LORD sanctifies us & keeps His artifacts of the Covenant within our hearts we are the new Tabernacle.

**Leading of the Presence of God**

In Numbers 9 it reads, “17 And whenever the cloud lifted over the tent, after that the people of Israel set out, and in the place where the cloud settled down, there the people of Israel camped. 18 At the command of the LORD the people of Israel set out, and at the command of the LORD they camped” (Num 9:17-18).

You might have noticed that the people grumble quite a bit about where the LORD is taking them. In Exodus 14:12 they even claim they would have been better remaining in Egypt than to ‘die in the wilderness.’

It is easy to chastise the Israelites, but we do the same thing. Every Christian is all about the free gift of salvation. Thank the LORD that it is free, because we could never earn it! But Jesus did ask us to do something – which we can find in Matthew 28:16-20. We were saved by Grace, & if we Love Jesus then He asks that we go out & share the Gospel of Christ Jesus with others. Here is where I’ve heard people say things like: ‘Evangelism isn’t really my calling.’ ‘I’d mention Jesus, you know, if they bring it up first.’ ‘I just don’t want to offend anyone.’ ‘I would, but I don’t really know what to say.’ ‘You always seem to bring up Jesus, but I don’t know how you do it.’

Today we are in the camp of Jesus. Our camp isn’t shaped like a cross, but is because of the cross where Jesus Christ paid the price for our Salvation. His presence & Holy Spirit dwell within us. He can teach you how. For our love of Jesus, it is worth getting uncomfortable. Our faith without works is dead! (Jm 2:14-26)

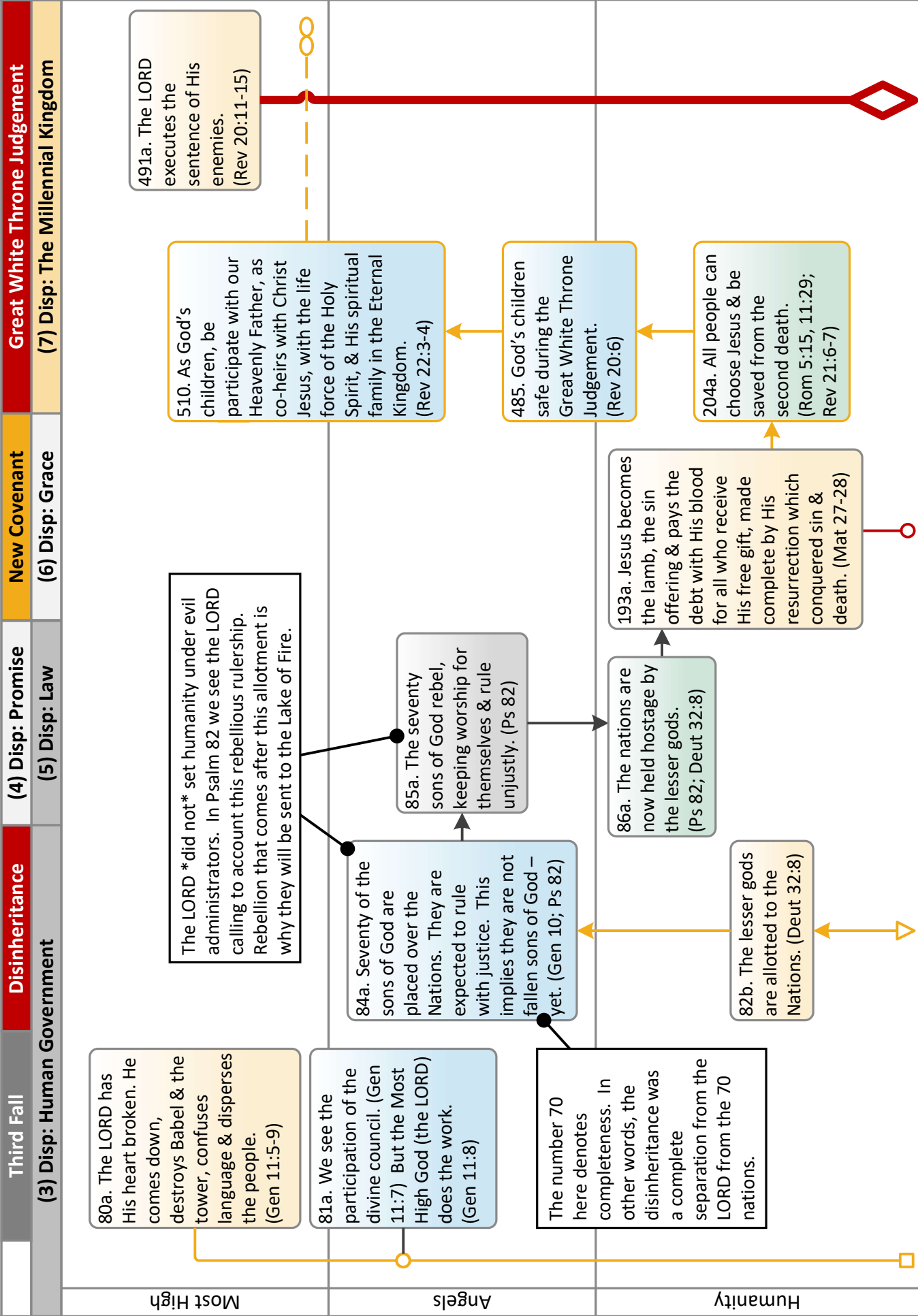
Image

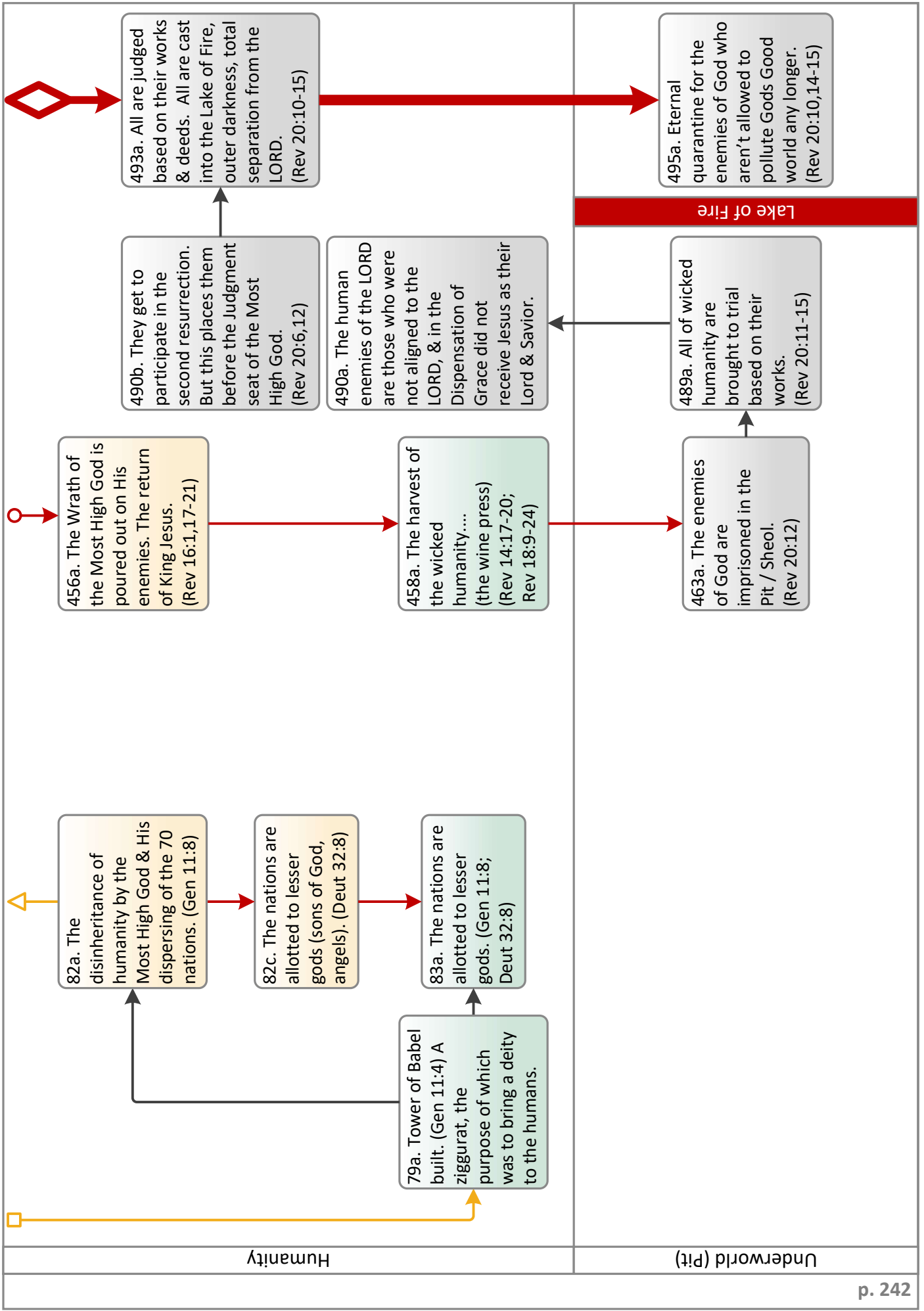
6D

People Held Hostage by lesser gods



\$6: Humanity: People Held Hostage by lesser gods





## People Held Hostage by lesser gods

### Overview

Sometimes I think about this when I hear or say, 'we don't want to leave money on the table.' It's a business idea that implies there is money (or value) available for the taking. To not take advantage of it by picking it up seems foolish.

While the value of the blood of Jesus is too great to be compared to money, the metaphor of value left unrealized resonates. Given the spiritual reality in which we live, the greatest value we could ever receive is that of Salvation through Christ Jesus. Money can't buy it. Works can't earn it. Being a 'good person' by human standards doesn't come close to an infinite measure of perfect behavior.

Still, there are many who don't want it. Who view receiving Jesus as silly, stupid, irrelevant, or superfluous. There is an idea that following Jesus is boring, prudish, or legalistic. Who wants to follow a bunch of 'dumb rules' when we can have fun? Whoever dies with the most toys wins, right?

I suspect that the followers of Jesus, in their broken humanity have hurt people. They have not done a great job at demonstrating the Love of Jesus. Then again, even Jesus had people stop following Him when He wouldn't feed them (Jn 6:60-66). Nonetheless, I think many equate the hurt they experienced by a follower of Jesus with being hurt by Jesus. And many people become consumed with a worldly life & forget about the faith. It becomes unimportant in the grand scheme of their mortal lives.

But I also suspect that if these same people really knew, & really saw their eternal fate, nothing would become more important than reconciling to Jesus. But this is the challenge of believing without seeing isn't it. Like the metaphor of a woman who marries a rich man. Did she marry for love or money? But if she marries a poor man, & only after the wedding finds out he is wealthy, the man knows it was for love & enjoys sharing his wealth with her all the more. This is the model of faith in Christ Jesus & the rewards in heaven.

### Those Who Conquer

Jesus tells His disciples that they should rejoice that their names are written in the Book of Life (Lk 10:20). In the revelation to John, Jesus reiterates this by saying, "6 It is done! I am the Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. To the thirsty I will give from the spring of the water of life without payment. 7 The one who conquers will have this heritage, and I will be his God and he will be my son" (Rev 21:6-7).

The way we conquer is by receiving Jesus as our Savior, who gives a gift that the LORD will not take away & cannot be changed (Rom 5:15, 11:29).

### The Second Death

Jesus goes on in His revelation to John, explaining who will not receive eternal life. "But as for the cowardly, the faithless, the detestable, as for the murderers, the sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all the liars, their portion will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulfur, which is the second death" (Rev 21:8).

The purpose of the Lake of Fire is for the devil & his angels (Matt 25:41). The wish of the LORD would be that all people would reconcile to Him. Jesus tells us, "Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul; but rather fear Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell" (Mat 10:28). This message is clear. Hell exists, & the LORD will execute judgement over all people who reject Jesus.

### **Wicked Humanity**

The word 'wicked' means 'twisted.' It is a twisting of the truth into some untrue thing that is believed & followed. Like every lie, there is always a bit of truth in it. But in the end these philosophies fall apart. Still, they are potent enough to deceive many. And those people are deceived are twisted into unalignment with the LORD.

Like a lock where all the pins need to align for the door to open. One pin that is off means the door is still locked. Jesus is the only door, the only way to the Father, the only path to Salvation. But it requires a humble understanding of who Jesus is in order to receive Him. All people who don't are twisted, or wicked in some way. This won't unlock the one door, it fails the infinite measure, & requires a commensurate infinite punishment.

Thus, 'wicked' is not entirely 'evil,' but having one or more components of evil while looking good. The effects of being separated from the LORD with a hardened heart are evil. The LORD will not abide with evil, which is to say, it must be properly disposed of.

### **Where do the Dead Go?**

Jesus talks about 'paradise' on the cross (Lk 23:43). Jesus uses the term 'Abraham's bosom' in the parable of the Rich Man & Lazarus (Lk 16:22-23). Conversely, the terms 'Sheol,' 'Hades,' & 'the Pit' refer to the underworld where wicked people go.

These are like two sides of a holding tank, divided by a wide expanse or chasm. It is hard to understand what this space is like, whether there is time there, & what it would be like to experience either side. But the parable of the Rich Man & Lazarus gives us a flavor (Lk 16:19-31).

### **What is the Purpose of Hades?**

This holding tank serves two purposes. For the righteous who are reconciled to the LORD, they will participate in the first resurrection. This will take them into the Millennial Kingdom to participate in the reign of King Jesus.

For the wicked, those who are not reconciled to the LORD & have not received Christ Jesus as their Lord & Savior during the Dispensation of Grace, they will be held here until the Great White Throne Judgement. Hades is not the Lake of Fire, but it is absolutely torment at the doorstep of even worse torment.

### **The Second Resurrection & Great White Throne Judgement**

All souls in Hades will participate in the second resurrection. This is a time when all of the enemies of God contained in the Pit will be brought forth to the court of the LORD, where King Jesus sitting as judge will determine their fate based on their works.

This is an example of how the LORD provides judgement by giving what was asked for. We saw this with Azazel (Satan) who wanted to be 'like the Most High,' & received a judgement where he tried in futility to rule a kingdom of rebellious spirit beings. We saw this with the disinheritance, where humanity wanted to worship lesser gods, so administrators were placed over them who ultimately rebelled & set themselves up as gods.

At the Great White Throne Judgement, we see all the people who will tell you they are a 'good person,' or follow a religion where Isa (Jesus in the Quran) or some other god will judge them. The LORD honors this performance-based approach. He sets up the infinite standard of the Messiah in Jesus, & measures each person by their works. Of course, none will pass, because all have fallen short of the Glory of God (Rom 3:23).

**The Lake of Fire**

This is the eternal death, permanent quarantine. It is the area Jesus said was prepared for Satan (Azazel) & his angels. It was not intended for humanity, although humanity enjoyed sin so much that they determined for themselves to drink the cup of this judgement as well.

The LORD is working to bring things back to His plan. He has found a way to teach us many things along the way, give us free will in the process, & ultimately reconcile those who believe back to Himself through Jesus Christ. The Eternal Kingdom will be eternal life in the fullness of the presence of the LORD, in partnership with Him as part of His family.

For all this to happen, those who have rebelled against the LORD must be removed. Evil cannot persist in the presence of the LORD. A quarantine is necessary. And so, the punishment of the Lake of Fire is a complete removal & permanent separation from the LORD.

Knowing that most will reject the LORD, taking their own way instead, as followers of Jesus we must press forward. We must search for the elect as we evangelize the Gospel, hoping that every person we reach is converted by the Love of Christ & brought into the Kingdom of God.

Image

6E

Sin Transgression & Iniquity

## Sin, Transgression, & Iniquity

### Understanding Our Rebellion

The Bible teaches us that we have all sinned. Yet the LORD loves us & found a way to atone for our rebellion. In Romans 3 Paul teaches:

“21 But now the righteousness of God [Jesus] has been manifested [came to earth as a man] apart from the law [separated from the LORD at the cross], although the Law and the Prophets bear witness to it [this event was prophesied] – 22 the righteousness of God through faith in Jesus Christ for all who believe. For there is no distinction: 23 **For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God,** 24 **and are justified by his grace as a gift, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus,** whom God put forward as a propitiation [action of appeasing a god, spirit, or person] by his [Jesus] blood, to be received by faith.”

– Romans 3:21-24

Many people will tell you that they are a ‘good person,’ & that they ‘deserve to go to heaven.’ But this is not true by the standard set by the LORD who created all things including the heavens & the earth. We have all sinned, & we all deserve eternal punishment for our rebellion.

To a human mind it may not seem fair. We are doomed from the start! We are born into a life with pre-existing sin, because we come from a lineage of sin. The LORD understands this. But He doesn’t expect us to do it alone, & in fact He knows it is impossible for us to do it without Him, because we are not Him. Since we can’t do it, He did the work Himself & made Salvation from this damnation which is the eternal second death a free gift for all who receive.

Doing this requires humility because we must be willing to say that we are not God, & cannot make ourselves god. We must put aside the sins that are pleasurable for a time, in exchange for an eternity of true love & peace with His Divine Love & Presence. We must realize that all other gods that present themselves as supernatural personalities or things to be worshiped are all idolatry & not the Living Most High God.

In a nutshell, we must set aside the worldly thinking that is cultural & align ourselves to a relationship with the LORD by receiving His Son, Jesus, as our personal Lord & Savior. In one sense, it’s not hard at all. In another, it’s the hardest thing in the world, because it requires us to forgive all those other people who hurt us so that we can come to the LORD with a humble attitude of forgiveness that subjugates our will & places it under Him as our Merciful & Graceful Judge, Savior, & Lord.

To help accomplish this, let’s define the categories of behavior that involve sin.

### Sin – Missing the Mark

Sin is missing the mark. A way to understand this metaphorically is like trying to hit a bullseye with a bow & arrow. We try, but we’re not going to hit the bullseye every time. And when we get better at it over time, we need to back up & attempt it from a further & further distance.

The LORD hits the bullseye every time. He meets His infinite standard always. It doesn’t matter how far away or small the target is, He’s going to make it happen. But it is easy to understand how that is impossible for us.

When we see Jesus get angry at the thieves in the Temple we might think from a worldly view that He is sinning (Mat 21:12-17). But the reality is that Jesus is in perfect alignment with the LORD, because these people were deceitful in their business. We might think that when Jesus calls the Pharisees hypocrites & whitewashed tombs, that He is sinning, because He is calling them names which isn't nice (Mat 23:27). But again, the Pharisees were prideful, practiced secret sins, & judged people unfairly. What Jesus said of them was true, & He warned the people to watch out for the leaven (false teaching) of the Pharisees & Sadducees (Mat 16:6).

Jesus always operated in perfect alignment with the Spirit of the LORD. This allowed Jesus to remain in perpetual alignment to the Will of the Father while He was here on earth, & qualified Him as the unblemished Lamb.

When we receive Jesus, we also receive His Holy Spirit. Through the Holy Spirit & His seven Personalities we are edified (improved) through a process of refinement compared to the refining of gold by fire (1 Pt 1:7). Our fire is the Truth of the LORD, & we are made like gold as Holy Children of the Most High God!

### **Transgression – Choosing to Sin**

Transgression requires a conscious choice. I've even heard it taught that when we sinned before receiving Salvation from Jesus, we did it out of ignorance, but after we've received His free gift, all sin becomes a choice. I understand the point, because once we have access to the Holy Spirit, we should continually learn from Him & take His guidance.

Nonetheless, we made decisions that are sin. One way to think about this is that out of our own pride we make decisions that hurt or fail to demonstrate love to others. We can commit sins of commission – where we choose to do a sin – like punching someone in the face. We can commit sins of omission – where we decide to not do something we're supposed to – like not helping someone in need.

Deciding to lie, cheat, steal, all seem fairly obvious. More subtle are decisions to pursue success without Godly stewardship, spend time in activities that have sinful implications for us or others, or put effort into hobbies rather than relationships with others & with God.

More subversive are decisions to not do things when the Lord places an unction on our heart. Not leaning in to service at our church, or stopping the car to help a homeless person, or not getting involved because it's not our problem. If we listen to ourselves, it is easier to not do these things. If we listen to the Lord, & He is telling us to do something, then we need to listen & act or we commit a sin of omission.

Finally, it is worth mentioning that we are currently three-part beings: body, soul, & spirit (Heb 4:12). Sin is in our flesh. The Holy Spirit is fused to our spirit. The soul connects the two. Paul talks about the war between these in Romans 7:15-20. To fully detail this out would require a deeper dive into this specifically. But as it relates to this point of choosing to sin, the 'I' who hates to sin is our spirit, the mortal flesh is where the sin resides, & the soul is either hardened to our own will or softened to the Divine Will of the LORD through the Holy Spirit. Thus, the choice to sin resides in the soul, where the spirit would be incapable of sin.

### **Iniquity – Habitual Sin**

An easy way to understand iniquity is through addiction. We can become physically or psychologically dependent on anything. But in some way, whatever it is, it satisfies a desire of our heart that is not in alignment with the Lord. If what we are doing hurts us or others then it doesn't demonstrate love or the Character of Jesus.



One of the easiest & most difficult areas for everyone is with our speech. The anonymity of the internet has taken us to a cultural extreme unseen in human history. The wickedness of the human heart is put on display as we thrash each other with violence, disrespect, & hate. The unfortunate reality is that we can see the spirits of rebellion operating behind the words we type & the evil we proclaim against each other. None of this is the Character of Jesus.

“8 No human being can tame the tongue. It is a restless evil, full of deadly poison. 9 With it we bless our Lord and Father, and with it we curse people who are made in the likeness of God. 10 From the same mouth come blessings and cursing. My brothers, these things ought not to be so. 11 Does a spring pour forth from the same opening both fresh and salt water? 12 Can a fig tree, my brothers, bear olives, or a grapevine produce figs? Neither can a salt pond yield fresh water.”  
– James 3:8-12

Certainly, the complexity of iniquity is not limited to our speech, but it serves as a potent example of habitual sin that afflicts all people.

### **Relationship Despite it All**

The Good News for all of humanity is that the LORD wants are relationship with each of us. We are all special to Him, & He wants to reconcile us all to His Goodness through Christ Jesus.

Something you will hear a lot if you witness the Gospel of Christ Jesus on the street will be people telling you that they can't (or wont) believe in Jesus because they have defined their life as one kind of sin or another. I submit to you that we all have sin. And while it is heartbreaking to the Most High God, what is more heartbreaking is when we make these sins a greater god by putting then in between ourselves & a relationship with Him. Most people don't want to hear it. But I will tell you this.

**It is better to be a Jesus follower with a sin problem  
Then a sin follower with a Jesus problem.**

Or said another way:

**It is better to have a relationship with Jesus & a sin problem  
Then a relationship with sin & a Jesus problem.**

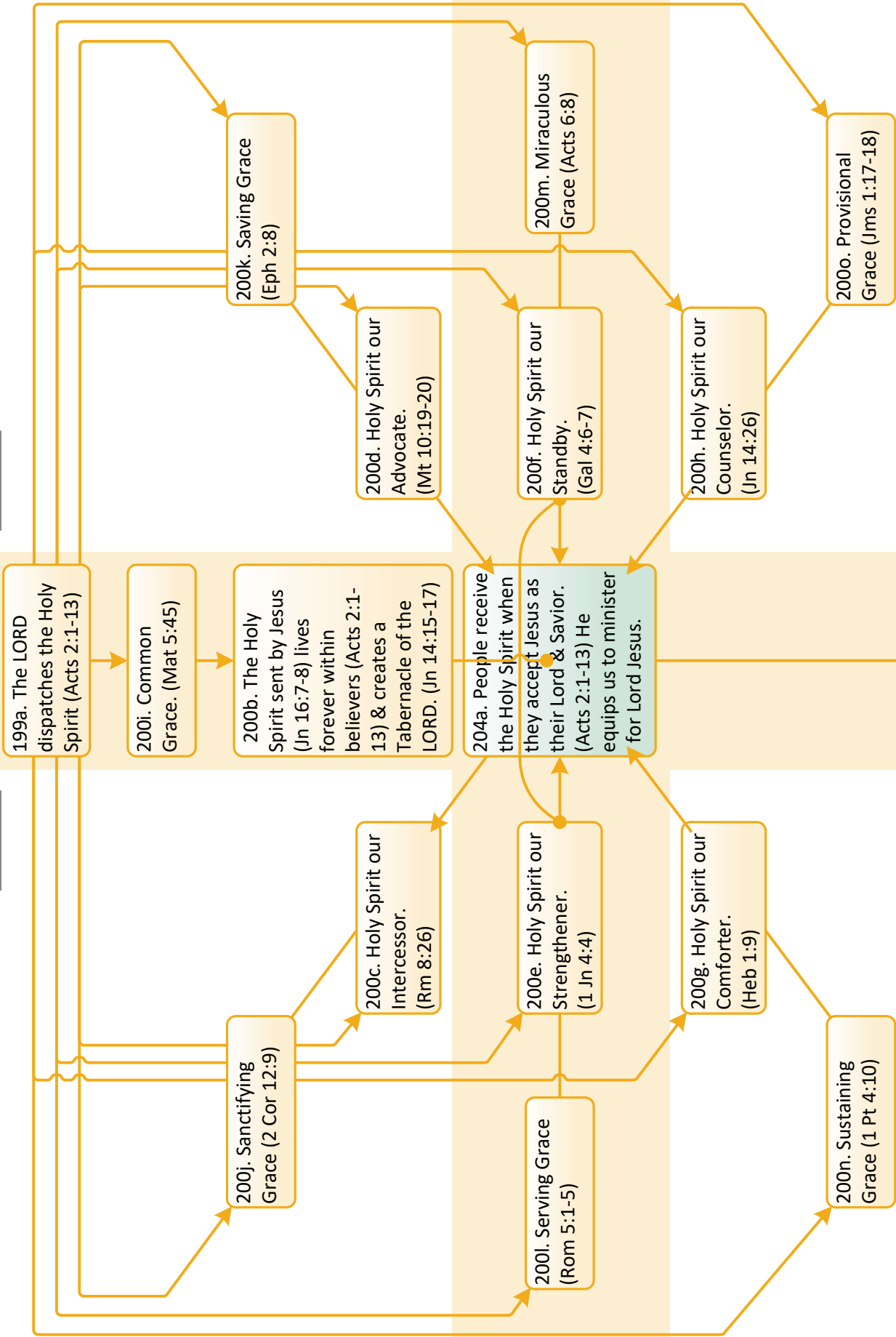
No sin is worth eternal separation from the Most High God. If you don't believe because you think Jesus won't have you, know that He died for you while you were still a sinner, His enemy, & He loves you no matter what. Jesus is just that good.

Image

6F

Christian Soldiers & the Great  
Commission

The New Covenant



## Spirit of Repentance

## Spirit of Rebellion

205. The job of every believer is to partner with the LORD as His ambassadors here on earth. Our mission today is the fulfilling of the Great Commission. (Jn 14:18-21; Mat 28:16-20)

204c. Humanity that receives Jesus as their Lord & Savior are reconciled to God, made part of His family. (Rom 8:23-24)

204b. Every knee that humbles themselves & bows to Jesus (Phil 2:10-11) reconciled to God, made part of His family.

207. The Holy Spirit powers the Great Commission. (Jn 15:16-17, 26-27)

86a. Humanity that does not receive Jesus free gift of salvation remain short of the infinite measure fulfilled by Jesus the Messiah. (Rev 20:11-15)

204b. Every knee that humbles themselves & bows to Jesus (Phil 2:10) are judged by King Jesus based on their works.

195a. The prophesied destruction of all enemies of the LORD is now guaranteed.

## Christian Soldiers & the Great Commission

### **The Great Commission**

In Matthew we read about Jesus giving His followers the Great Commission of His ministry, which includes 'nation' language and the goal of grafting those held hostage back into the family tree of the LORD:

“16 Now the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain to which Jesus had directed them. 17 And when they saw Him they worshiped him, but some doubted. 18 And Jesus came and said to them, ‘All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. 19 Go therefore and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, 20 teaching them to observe all that I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, to the end of the age.’”

– Mat 28:16-20

### **Understanding Our Mission**

You've probably read this passage before, heard it in church, or maybe in a Bible study. If you're familiar with the spiritual reality, then there are several things in this passage that you probably recognize. But if this book is your first experience with the spiritual reality, then you probably have read & understood this like most of the current Body of Christ. Either way, if you've gone through all the previous studies in this book, then several things about this mission statement probably stand out.

### **The Resurrected Christ**

It isn't just anybody. It couldn't be just anybody. It is Jesus, who is risen from the dead. His perfect life was the only one that could meet the measure. He qualified as the unblemished sacrificial Lamb of God, who's death & resurrection was the victory.

### **All Authority**

All the Authority in heaven & on earth has been given to Jesus. This tells us more than that He has the ability to guarantee our salvation from the second death & sanctification from sin. It also means that He has ALL Authority.

This includes removing Satan's (Azazel's) dominion over the world that was stolen from the first Adam. Now reclaimed by the last Adam. It also removes Satan's authority over the nations.

The rebellious sons of disobedience (gods of nations / sons of God) no longer have authority over the nations. The allotment of the people to their stewardship has been dismantled.

The demons (unclean spirits) now have no right to harass people who receive Jesus as their Lord & Savior. Attacks by demons happen to believers, but they are illegal, & can be prayed against in the Name of Jesus.

### **All Nations**

The nations that were under the authority of the lesser gods have been destroyed. That cosmic geography now belongs to Christ Jesus. His Authority extends worldwide. All other lesser gods running around do so illegally.

### **Make Disciples**

The people who were under the authority of the sons of disobedience, the Gentiles, are now able to receive Jesus directly & can now come to the Father through the Son.

People have a choice. They can choose to receive Jesus as their Lord & Savior or not. It's up to them. It's an individual decision every person must make.

### **Spirit of Rebellion & Repentance**

Disciples are those who choose to believe & follow Jesus. The discipleship program starts the moment a person receives Jesus, & continues through the end of their mortal life & on into the next as we are all conformed to the Character of Christ Jesus.

The two thieves on the crosses to either side of Jesus represent the spirit of repentance & rebellion. In Luke we read:

“39 One of the criminals who were hanged railed at him, saying, ‘Are you not the Christ? Save yourself and us!’ 40 But the other rebuked him, saying, ‘Do you not fear God, since you are under the same sentence of condemnation? 41 And we indeed justly, for we are receiving the due reward of our deeds; but this man has done nothing wrong.’ 42 And he said, ‘Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom.’ 43 And he said to him, ‘**Truly, I say to you, today you will be with me in paradise.**’”

– Luke 23:39-43

### **The End of the Age**

Each dispensation has a purpose in the LORD’s plan. The Dispensation of Grace, which is the ‘age’ Jesus is referring to here, is an allotment of time for the Gentiles to come in to the Kingdom of God by receiving Jesus. In other words, Jesus is reassuring us that He is with us as we participate in the Great Commission (Mat 28:16-20).

These had been peoples held hostage by the lesser gods in the nations. But the authority of the lesser gods was removed by Jesus work at the cross & resurrection. Now Jesus holds the ultimate Authority as the Christ.

As we go forward with the mission, Jesus tells all of us that He is with us until the end of the Age. This implies both that we have a mission (to make disciples for Christ), & that Jesus is with us helping us do it.

### **Powering the Great Commission**

In a previous study we’ve looked at how the Holy Spirit is fused to us, & how His seven Personalities function within us.

In another study we looked at how the types of Grace function in a similar way, & posit that the Holy Spirit is the conduit through which Grace is delivered. This study also discusses how the LORD is the only judge of the Divine Law, is the only one who can extend Mercy & Grace as part of His role as judge, that Mercy is a prerequisite to Grace, & thus the grace that we show others is really the Divine Grace of the LORD working through us to demonstrate the character of Christ Jesus to others.

Understanding the mechanics of this underpin our understanding for concepts like love, forgiveness, generosity, hospitality, & so much more.

An example can be found in the Lord’s prayer, his template that teaches us how to pray. In Matthew 6 it reads, “**and forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors.**” (Mat 6:12) If we don’t first forgive others, we are not able to receive the LORD’s forgiveness. Developing that idea, if we don’t first extend these things to others, we form a block within us that prevents these things from being received by us from the LORD.

When Jesus is talking to Nicodemus in John 3, He tells him, “The wind blows where it wishes, and you hear its sound, but you do not know where it comes from or where it goes. So it is with everyone who is born of the Spirit” (Jn 3:8). While Jesus was talking to the woman at the well in John 4, He says, “13b Everyone who drinks of this water will be thirsty again, 14 but whoever drinks of the water that I will give him will never be thirsty again. The water that I will give him will become in him a spring of water welling up to eternal life” (Jn 4:13-14).

The idea of ‘blowing’ & ‘welling’ imply movement. We become a ‘spring of water.’ Living water moves. In the natural we might imagine a stream, not a pool of stagnant water. The former is good for drinking & contains life. The latter can make us sick & becomes a breeding ground for bacteria & mosquitos.

As a Christian we should desire to be like the former, not the latter. But to accomplish that we must begin to extend these things to other people. Only then will the Holy Spirit begin to move through us. Keep in mind that the Salvation Grace & connection to the Holy Spirit cannot be removed. But to develop in the Character of Christ it necessitates that we begin to ACT like Christ. We can act, as in move, go, do. We can act as in behave, reflect, copy.

Serving our hearts out at our church is great practice. The church is – or should be – boot camp for Christians. Not just the start & end of our service to the Kingdom. Church should develop us through learning, serving, & practice.

But the practice should convert into outreach like visiting a retirement home, or volunteering your time at rescue center, handing our food & supplies to the needy, & yes, even standing on the street evangelizing the Good News!





## Section 7

### The End of This Dispensation

“Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything by prayer and supplication with  
Thanksgiving let your requests be made known to God. And the peace of God,  
which surpasses all understanding, will guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus.”

Paul  
Apostle of Christ Jesus  
Philippians 4:6-7

## Introduction to the End Times

### **Encouragement**

Before heading into this section, the first thing to receive is encouragement in the Name of Jesus. He has conquered all things, & He makes us more than conquerors! (Rom 8:31-39) Our Heavenly Father loves us & has a plan. We need to trust Him.

### **Dealing with End Times Prophecy**

John didn't write Revelation as a secret code to be deciphered. There are a lot of things going on, & the apocalyptic language makes it hard to piece everything together. In fact, I'd encourage you to labor through the events of Revelation & create your own version. No doubt you will learn a lot, but you will begin to see how difficult this exercise really is.

Voddie Baucham gave a sermon titled "Worship the Son of God" (December 2021: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ciOH1thFP4s&list=WL&index=20>) in which he identified Revelation as one of, if not the most Christ glorifying books in the Bible because it writes of the ultimate victory of Jesus over all the enemies of God as He brings justice.

But Pastor Baucham points out something else that is interesting. Revelation quotes all but three of the other books in the Bible. He asserts that we don't understand Revelation because we don't know our Old Testament. I couldn't agree more. You can't understand the purpose of the last week, if you don't understand what the Bible narrative tells us up to this point. This is one of the reasons I've gone back to the beginning & worked forward. If you don't, you will misunderstand what is coming, & miss things altogether.

### **Global Map Metaphor**

To understand some of the struggle, let's relate the Scripture to a globe map. But not a spherical globe, a flat map of the globe. There are many ways to try to do this, but none are completely accurate, & all have to sacrifice something. To me, the end times prophecies feel similar on this side of the events. Sometimes several of them talk about the same thing. Other times they give detail on one thing, sometimes several. The prophecies are spread out over nearly the entire Bible. They use different names, references, sequences. Even in the same scriptures the events are out of sequence. And they are told in many different literary styles, by many different authors, with different voices, at different points in history, with various different time periods blended in to the duality of prophecy. This is not a simple problem.

After working through these scriptures for many years, trying to get a linear start-to-finish timeline, I found it easier to draw this timeline flow, because it allowed for multiple simultaneous threads of events occurring together... or, apart, as the case may be.

Again, this timeline should be a tool to reference as a resource. It should encourage you to get into the Bible where you can begin to labor in these things for yourself.

### **Controversies Aside**

As I was authoring this work there was a time where I started to place options in the timeline like 'if you believe this' or 'if you believe that.' But the Holy Spirit didn't like that, so I took it out. At the end of the day, this is His document, & it should be for the edification of the Body of Christ & the glorification of King Jesus!

I know there is part of us as humans that want other people to agree with us. I'm not worried about that. You can agree with my timeline or not. If you don't like it, study the Bible & come up with your own.

The more someone tries to get me to agree with their doctrine, the more suspect I become, & the more I will work to figure it out for myself. You should apply that same principle here.

### Clarification of Nomenclature

It is important to delineate the time of Jacob's trouble, from the last week of Daniel's seventy week prophecy, from "the Tribulation" (common use). These are equivocated so commonly, that I only just realized that while these overlap, they are distinct from one another. Let's look at the verses from which they derive.

### Time of Jacob's Trouble

The title 'time of Jacob's trouble' is based on Jeremiah 30:5-7 where it reads, "5 Thus says the LORD: We have heard a cry of panic, of terror, and no peace. 6 Ask now, and see, can a man bear a child? Why then do I see every man with his hands on his stomach like a woman in labor? Why has every face turned pale? 7 Alas! That day is so great there is none like it; it is a time of distress for Jacob; yet he shall be saved out of it."

The LORD gives us the purpose of this time in the subsequent two verses which read, "8 And it shall come to pass in that day, declares the LORD of hosts, that I will break his yoke from off your neck, and I will burst your bonds, and foreigners shall no more make a servant of him. 9 But they shall serve the LORD their God and David their king, whom I will raise up for them."

Thus, this period of time is intended to save Jacob – or the Jews who have not yet received the LORD. The naming is not inconsequential here. After Jacob wrestles with God in Genesis 32:22-32, & receives the name Israel in verse 28, he is still referred to as 'Jacob' when he is following his will, & 'Israel' when following the will of the LORD. Thus, the 'time of Jacob's trouble' intimates that this period is for those of God's Nation of Israel who are following their own will. This concurs with what Paul describes in Romans 11:25-26 where it reads, "25 a partial hardening has come upon Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in. 26 And in this way all Israel will be saved, as it is written, 'The Deliverer [Jesus] will come from Zion, he will banish ungodliness from Jacob.'"

### Last Week of Daniel's Seventy Weeks

Daniel 9:24 reads, "Seventy weeks are decreed about your people and your holy city, to finish the transgression, to put an end to sin, and to atone for iniquity, to bring in everlasting righteousness, to seal both vision and prophet, and to anoint a most holy place."

God's prophetic clock stopped to allow time for the Gentiles – people from the nations who were held captive by lesser gods – to receive Jesus as their Lord & Savior & enter the family of the LORD. Let me draw you to Luke 21:24, where Jesus prophesies that "Jerusalem will be trampled underfoot by the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled." In the 6-Day War, on June 7, 1967, the Old City was recaptured by Israel – a fulfillment to this prophecy & setting the stage for the season of the end of the current dispensation. However, this event didn't restart the clock, something will happen when the Antichrist helps bring about a 7-year peace treaty.

In the flows I've used the terminology of the 'Last Week' because it correctly spans the full seven years. Please see the study on Daniel's seventy weeks for more of the math if you are interested, but the bottom line is that 69 weeks of 7 years (or 483 years) have passed, & 1 week (or 7 years) remain. This is understood to be the final seven years of this dispensation.

### The Tribulation

Jesus prophesied in Matthew 24, "21 For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world until now, no, and never will be. 22 And if those days had not been cut short, no human being would be saved. But for the sake of the elect those days will be cut short."

Let's deal with the last part of this first. This prophecy clearly points out that there are elect, or those who will be saved, present on the earth during the time of tribulation. In my flow I've depicted my understanding, that the Harvest of the Righteous occurs just prior to the outpouring of the Bowls of the Wrath of the LORD, because

## §7: The End of This Dispensation: Introduction to the End Times

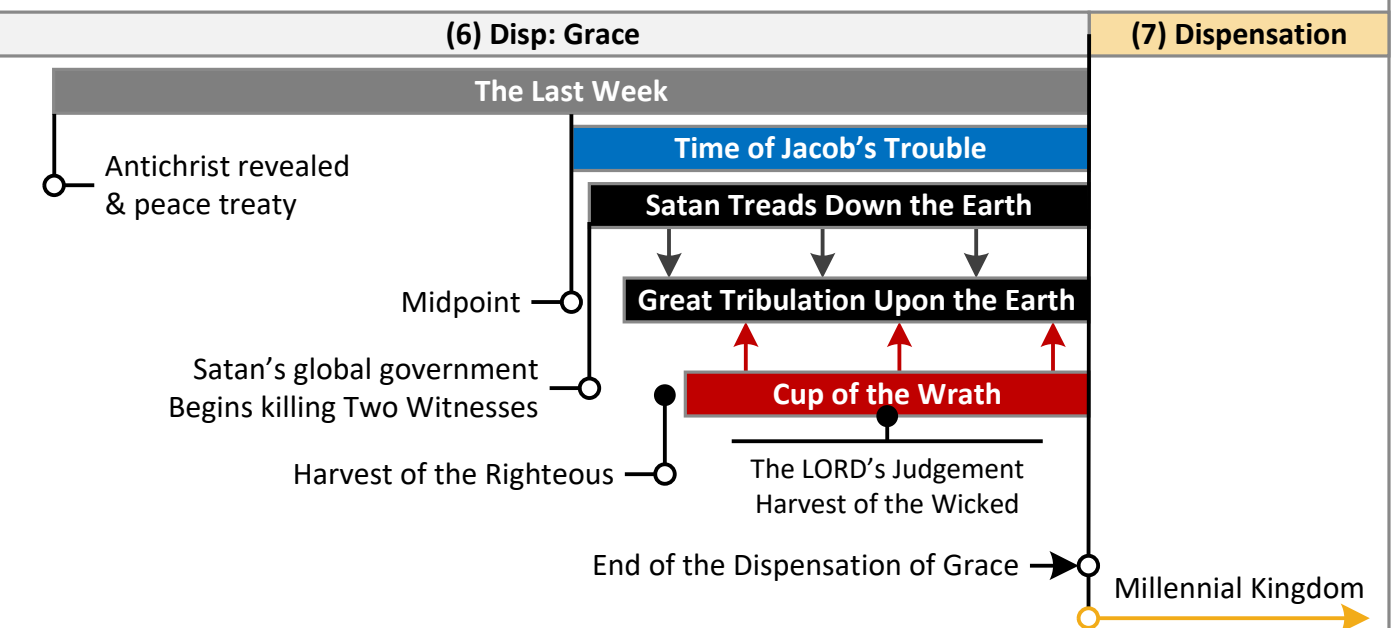
the fullness of the Gentiles has come in. On one hand I can reconcile this, because all who have received at that point are caught up to King Jesus who comes in the clouds at that point. Also, the subsequent time of judgement is what I believe to be the Great Tribulation, through which some people do survive, because it is cut short for the sake of the elect. I know that there are those from Israel who receive the Lord Jesus as their Savior during this time, because King Jesus saves the house of Judah as part of His return. Ultimately, however, the exact sequence is known to the LORD, & our job is to trust that His way will save all who believe in & receive the free gift of Salvation from Jesus.

Going back to the first part of this prophecy by the Lord Jesus, the tribulation is will be great. I think this correlates to the time described by the angel Gabriel in Daniel 7:23, "Thus he said: 'As for the fourth beast, there shall be a fourth kingdom on earth, which shall be different from all the kingdoms, and it shall devour the whole earth, and trample it down, and break it to pieces.'" This fourth kingdom will be different & terrible, because it will be led by Satan incarnated into the body of the Antichrist through the 'false resurrection.' Not only will this time be terrible because of the evil let loose by the kingdom of the enemy, but the LORD will be outpouring every last drop of His bowls (i.e., bigger than just a cups) of wrath. Because the wrath of the LORD is not intended for His children for whom the Blood of Christ Jesus was given, the Harvest of the Righteous must come immediately before this event.

### The Overlapping

This all happens during the Dispensation of Grace, because the age is not done until the Judgement is complete. This agrees with the pattern established by the LORD in all prior dispensations.

- The last week of Daniel's seventy weeks is a period of seven years, the last years of this dispensation.
- The time of Jacob's trouble likely begins when the Antichrist betrays the Jews by defiling the temple.
- The Harvest of the Righteous happens after the midpoint & before the Wrath of the LORD is outpoured.
  - The midpoint is when Satan is given the power to overcome the Two Witnesses & kill them.
- The Great Tribulation on the earth is a result of:
  - Satan's global government treads down the earth.
  - The LORD's Cup of Wrath is outpoured on the earth.
- The Great Tribulation on the earth is a result of the treading down by Satan & outpouring



### **End Times Wager**

Many people I talk to believe that 1) the Tribulation is the whole 7-year period, & 2) that they will be ‘raptured’ before or immediately after the start of this period, meaning that 3) they won’t be around during any of what is the Last Week of Daniel’s prophecy of seventy weeks or the last seven years of this dispensation.

I’d posit that our approach to this period is worth taking a ‘hope for the best, plan for the worst’ approach. You will notice that I lean toward believing that we will be reunited with Jesus at the Harvest of the Righteous. This is because that is what I read as a coherent version of reality when I study the Bible.

For example, one land mine is when we will be ‘raptured.’ I use language like ‘Harvest of the Righteous,’ because that is what the LORD calls it. I avoid trigger words like ‘rapture’ which seem to polarize people within the Body of Christ that should be working together to figure things out. Moreover, it defeats the purpose, which is to get more people into the Bible themselves. Disagree with me – fine. Take your pastor’s word for it without studying it for yourself – dangerous. The LORD is the only one who knows the future & the only teacher you should depend on.

What I will tell you, is that if I’m wrong, & Jesus comes before all this stuff goes down, that will be awesome! The Great Tribulation is not a party to be sure, & understanding it has pushed me to deepen my relationship with Jesus & get into His Word in a way that has grown me in my relationship with Him. I’m aware of & thinking about things by the edification of the Holy Spirit that are at new levels for me personally.

When I speak to ‘pre-Tribulation rapture’ brothers & sisters, I worry for them, because I’m not sure if they really understand the reasons for & purpose of the last seven weeks. If they are wrong, they won’t be equipped to witness the Gospel & will end up in a situations that will be incredibly challenging without having prepared themselves in Christ Jesus. I don’t want that for them because I love them. It is unfortunate that within the Body of Christ we can’t openly discuss these topics. It also makes me worried that people want an easy way out, & I will tell you that in this part of our life following Jesus isn’t & won’t be easy. He isn’t a lottery ticket, Santa Clause, & isn’t your quick ride out of this planet when things get really harry, scary, & rough. Hopefully this work has put forward an argument to consider this possibility in your own study with the LORD & His Word.

Study your Bible. Come to your own conclusions. The Bible & the teaching directly from the LORD will never hurt you.

### **How Everything Fits Together**

The first part of this resource covers the flow of the Bible start to end. It identifies the spiritual bad guys, how they ended up under Azazel (Satan), the falls, & ultimately who we are as followers of Jesus & what our mission is. This part of the timeline unpacks the recent history of the Dispensation of Grace, the last week of the dispensation, outpouring of the Wrath of God, the Millennial Kingdom, & our ultimate destination the Eternal Kingdom. I’m so excited about this, because it is just dripping with hope & glory & all that really awesome goodness of the LORD!

These two massive timelines combine to give us a reference to the Bible as an Epic Story. As I read the Bible now, I feel like I’ve got a feel for where I’m at, who I’m dealing with, what is overt in the text, & what is operating in the spirit world behind what is depicted in plain view. Of course, this can’t answer everything. But as a complement to sermons, Bible studies, etc., this should provide a way to zoom in & zoom out.

Finally, a study of end times (of this age) in isolation is not enough. This is why I’ve gone back to the beginning. Why I’ve needed context about the bad guys, the rebellions, the dispensations, & the implication to humanity. All of this is the groundwork to understanding what the LORD is doing, why He is doing it this way, & what He is ultimately driving at. This context then tells us, as Children of God, where we fit in the plan, what we are asked to do, how we will be saved, about when things will happen, & give us the things we need to prepare. In short, it’s the holistic view beginning to end.

## Picking Things Up At The New Covenant...

To underscore, it is impossible to understand what is coming without looking back. Learning how dispensations work, what the active covenant is, what the LORD expects of us, the current drift into apostasy, & the judgement that is coming to end this age, etc. All of it, & how it fits together is relevant. The many human generations since Christ Jesus' work on the cross is intentional & requires current believers to walk in faith, believing without seeing. (Jn 20:29)

Many theologians point to the parable of the Good Samaritan. In Luke 10:35 Jesus teaches, "And the next day he took out two denarii [which was a day's wage] & gave them to the innkeeper, saying, 'Take care of him, and whatever more you spend, I will repay you when I come back.'"

In John 20:7 we find that Jesus left a folded napkin by itself apart from the other clothes. The cultural significance at a dinner table told a butler whether the master was done (crumpled napkin) or coming back (folded). Jesus is coming back.

In 2 Peter 3:8 we learn that to the Lord one day is like a thousand years, & a thousand years like a day.

In other words, in two days (two denarii), Jesus is coming back (folded napkin), measured in earth years will be two thousand years (a day is like a thousand years), or on the third day. It is also not a coincidence that this coincides with the resurrection of Christ Jesus on the third day!

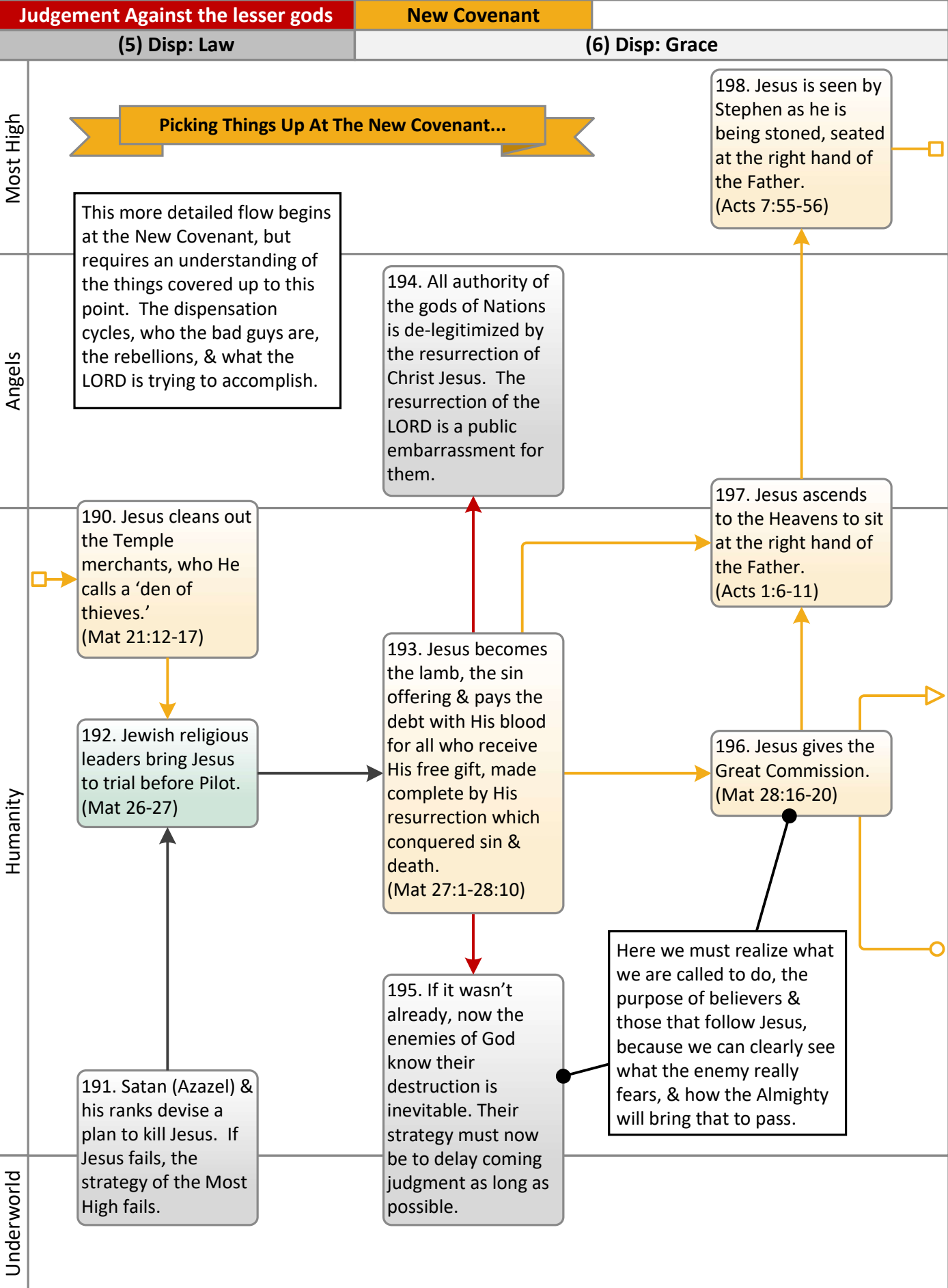
Certainly more scripture stands around this, but that makes the argument. So this more detailed flow picks up at the New Covenant & provides more detail about the coming judgements, Millennial, & Eternal Kingdoms.

### **Correlating the Flows**

You will notice that the numbers in the first long flow skip numbers. These details are worked out here now that we have understanding about the LORD, the enemy, & humanity, & the dispensations. I have no doubt that much more detail could be added, but in the end, only the LORD knows everything. Hopefully this will provide more insight to what lies ahead, & may bring to light things that you've never been taught in church.

Finally, keep in mind that the 'doom & gloom' & all the debates only creates fear & contention within the Body of Christ. If you are bent because of one view or another, you've missed the point. All of that is interesting, but our mission given by Jesus (if I haven't said it enough) is to go into the world, find the people held hostage by the lesser gods who will believe. These are the elect, the chosen. Evangelize the Gospel of Christ Jesus so that we can bring in the fullness of the Gentiles, so that King Jesus will return. Review Matthew 28:18-10.

§2: Spiritual Events Bible Flow: The New Covenant



(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

Who We Are

The Holy Spirit is fused to us as our life force, dominion, & teacher. He develops the Children of God. We are in partnership with the Kingdom of God. This is what it means to have Jesus Living and active within us. Those with ears, understand – Shema!

199. The LORD dispatches the Holy Spirit. (Acts 2:1-13)

200. The Holy Spirit is the Paraclete Jesus said He would send. (Jn 15:26-27)

201. The Holy Spirit comes on the day of Pentecost to permanently live with believers. (Acts 2:1-13)

202. The Holy Spirit bonds to believers as their life force to God. This creates the 'new man,' or the Tabernacle. (Jn 14:15-17)

203. As a Tabernacle of the LORD, the believer is Holy cosmic ground under the dominion of the Most High. (Jn 14:18-21)

204. Believers at the day of Pentecost, & ever since, receive the Holy Spirit when they accept Jesus as their Lord & Savior. (Acts 2:1-13)

This happens when we are saved. Our salvation is not based on works.

The presence of the Holy Spirit is essential to the believer, a reality confirmed by cosmic geography. Without the Holy Spirit, we are in enemy territory. Humanity's ability to operate in partnership with the Almighty requires this direct connection to the Holy Spirit of the Most High.

205. The job of every believer is to partner with the LORD as His ambassadors here on earth. Our mission today is the fulfilling of the Great Commission. (Mat 28:16-20; Jn 14:23-26)

This is our work. Time with the LORD, church... it is all to prepare us to do this mission.

206. Satan (Azazel) & his horde realize that the longer it takes to fulfill the Great Commission, the longer they survive. That is their goal.



(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

**Our Mission**

Before Christ entered our lives, the meaning of our life was for Him to find us. Now that we are found, we are a new creation, & the meaning of our life is to find the remaining elect. Jesus continues His ministry working through us, powered by His Holy Spirit, to bring in those who will choose Him as their Lord & Savior.

212. Through the Holy Spirit the Father & Son provide prophetic revelations to believers. (Jn 14:26)

Angels

208. Great harassment & chaos come upon governments & groups, even the church itself, by the rulers, authorities, & powers (the lesser gods) to disrupt the Great Commission. (Eph 6:12)

It isn't that corporate harassment is only fulfilled by fallen angels, & individual harassment is only by unclean spirits. Harassment occurs in a complex way by the spirits over this age of current darkness.

Humanity

207. The Holy Spirit powers the Great Commission. (Mat 28:16-20; Jn 14:23-26)

209. All the functions of the church support this mission.

211. God partners with individuals to find & save the elect.

214. Revelations of the return of King Jesus in Scripture include the conditions of the world just before the return of King Jesus. (Jn 14:26)

Underworld

210. Great harassment comes to individuals from demons (the unclean spirits). The goal is to inhibit participation of believers & blind the hearts of non-believers.

215. The forces of darkness know the Scripture, & the prophecy, & their judgements. The NT confirms prophecies in the OT.

216. Satan (Azazel) & his forces quicken their pace because they know their time is short. (Rev 12:12)

217. The condition of the world 2,000 years from Christ reveals a desperation by the enemy. (Dan 7:9-12)

(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

213. The Lord Jesus opens up the first four seals.  
(Rev 6:1-8)  
Seal one: the white horseman of conquest.  
Seal two: the red horseman of war.  
Seal three: the black horseman of famine.  
Seal four: the pale horseman of death.

219. By developing a network of alliances within the nations, the sons of disobedience (rebellious sons of God) under Satan (Azazel) set off a domino effect that launches the world into World War 1.

220. Isaiah describes the world wars.  
(Is 19:2)

221. Azariah prophesies to King Asa who makes reforms in the Kingdom of Judah.  
(2 Chron 15:6)

222. Jesus prophesies the world wars using this same idiom to describe them.  
(Mat 24:7-8)

224. WW1: June 27, 1914, Archduke Franz Ferdinand assassinated.

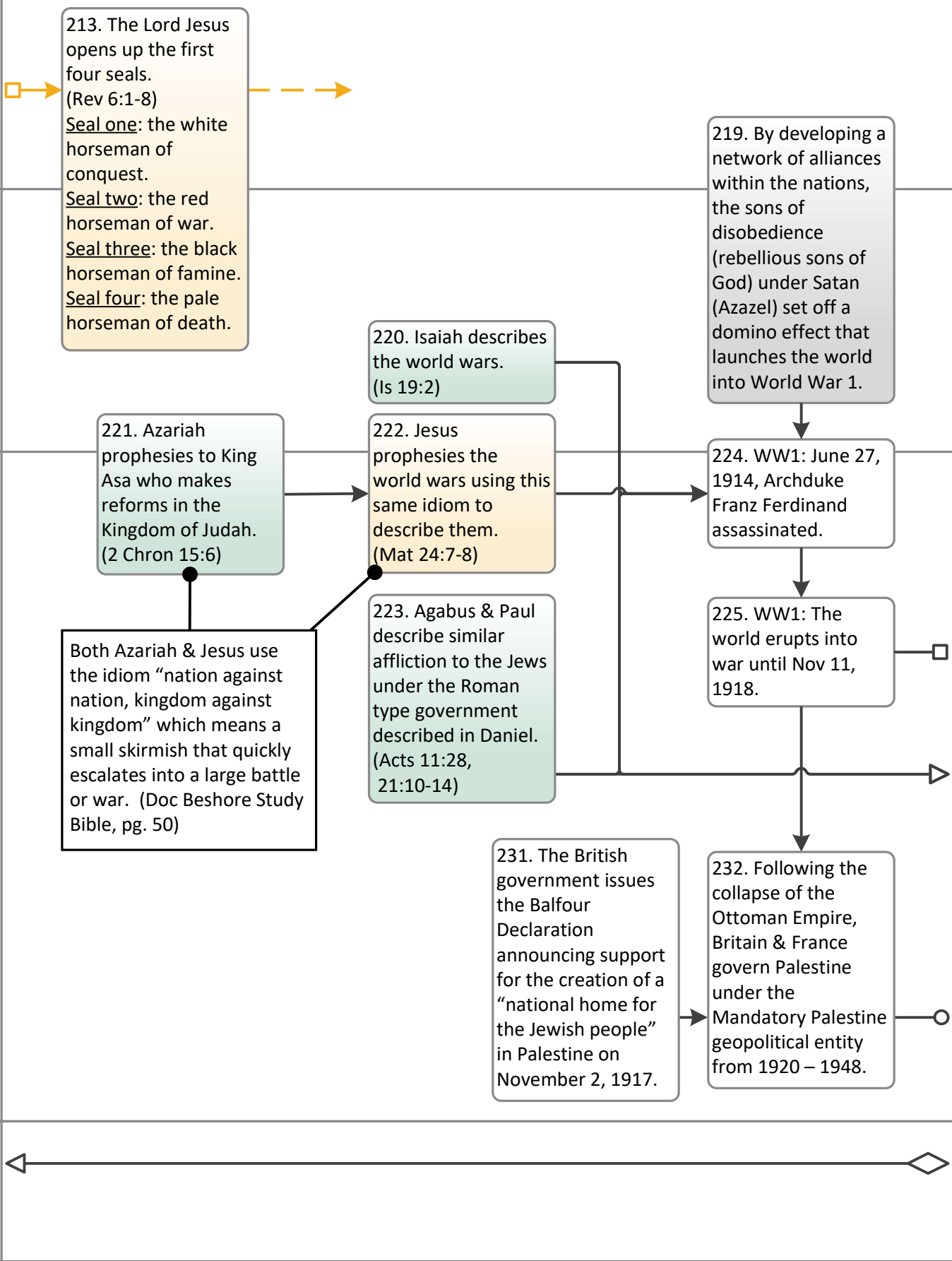
Both Azariah & Jesus use the idiom "nation against nation, kingdom against kingdom" which means a small skirmish that quickly escalates into a large battle or war. (Doc Beshore Study Bible, pg. 50)

223. Agabus & Paul describe similar affliction to the Jews under the Roman type government described in Daniel.  
(Acts 11:28, 21:10-14)

225. WW1: The world erupts into war until Nov 11, 1918.

231. The British government issues the Balfour Declaration announcing support for the creation of a "national home for the Jewish people" in Palestine on November 2, 1917.

232. Following the collapse of the Ottoman Empire, Britain & France govern Palestine under the Mandatory Palestine geopolitical entity from 1920 – 1948.



(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

226. Through Hitler's Third Reich, Satan (Azazel) & the sons of disobedience launch World War 2 after twenty one years of peace.

227. WW2: Sept 1, 1939, Germany invaded Poland.

228. WW2: Sept 3, 1939, UK & France declare war on Germany.

229. WW2: By 1941 the whole world was at war. Aug 1945 the U.S. drops 2 nuclear bombs.

230. WW2: Surrender: May 7-8, 1945 EU; Aug 15, 1945 Japan.

233. Regathering of Israel prophesied. (Zeph 2:1-2; 2 Chron 20:3-4; Joel 1:14; Ezk 34:11-17)

234. Israel is made a modern nation on May 14, 1948.

The Hebrew word "shame" can also be translated "longing." it is a reference to the longing for the messiah. (Doc Beshore Study Bible, pg. 12, 44) Tom Cantor (Friendship with God Bible Study) also points out, "the cultural Israel is modeling itself after the great European experiment, which is, life without a need for God in it. To be an Israeli National today is to be an atheist or agnostic living a secular non-spiritual life devoid of the God of Israel."

235. Jesus prophesies the recapture of Old City is the end of the age of the Gentiles. (Lk 21:24)

236. The Old City is recaptured, in 6-day war, June 7, 1967.

237. Israel with no shame (messianic longing) prophesied. (Jer 3:2-3; Zeph 2:1)

238. Israeli nationals today are culturally "not practicing Jews." In other words, they're agnostic, not following any faith.

218. The Enemy twists truth into whatever lie a person will believe. This has resulted in many modern ideologies that replace God with some version of agnosticism or atheism.

(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

**Next Tetrad:**  
2032 – 2033 Lunar Eclipse, near alignment with the Jewish holidays.

- 2032:
  - Lunar 4/25
  - Pesach (Passover) 3/27
  - Lunar 10/18
  - Sukkot 3/20
- 2033:
  - Lunar 4/14
  - Pesach 4/14
  - Lunar 10/8
  - Sukkot 10/8

241. The LORD creates the sun & the moon in the heavens & says they are signs for seasons (common & prophetic). (Gen 1:14)

Angels

251. Paul prophesies the Tribulation will not come until the falling away & the man of sin revealed. (2 Thes 2:3)

242. Blood Moons in 2014-2015 as a tetrad (4 in 2 years).  
Passover, Apr 15, 2014. 1st Blood Moon.  
Sukkot, (Festival of Booths or Tabernacles), Oct 8, 2014. 2nd Blood Moon.  
Passover, Apr 4, 2015. 3rd Blood Moon.  
Sukkot, Sept 28, 2015. 4th Blood Moon, a super blood moon, & darker than expected.

252. Jesus prophesies the apostasy of the church. (Mat 24:9-14; Jn 6:65-66)

This dropped 60% in 2020 due to COVID-19 according to ICAO. By June of 2021 travel was expected to recover to ~70% of pre-COVID levels.

Humanity

239. Jesus prophesies signs in the sun, moon & stars. (Mat 24:29; Mk 13:25; Lk 21:25-28)

240. Also prophesied by Joel (Joel 2:30-32), repeated by Peter on the day of Pentecost (Acts 2:20), & John [the sixth seal] (Rev 6:12-14)

253. Also prophesied by Paul (2 Thes 2:1-2; 1 Tim 4:1; 1 Cor 10:12) by Peter (2 Pt 2:1, 2:17, 3:17) by John (1 Jn 2:19)

245. 4.5 billion passengers rode on flights in 2019 according to The World of Air Transport (ICAO, a UN specialized agency)

COVID-19 is a demonic effect, not just because it is a virus, but also because of how humanity has been influenced to fear it.

Underworld

244. People will be traveling, a lot. Never has travel been easier, faster, further, & more affordable. (Dan 12:4)

243. The unclean spirits are associated with diseases.

(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

254. The enemy hates the church because they hate the LORD. Jesus told us this. (Jn 15:18-25) The enemy has brought all sorts of defilements to believers through the church, & ideologically uses false teaching to deceive believers into false belief.

258. With the restraint of the LORD pulled back, the enemy takes every advantage to unleash the unclean spirits at the command of Satan (Azazel) & the sons of disobedience (rebellious sons of God / nations).

259. The purpose of false teachers is more than simply infiltrating the Body of Christ. The Enemy uses them to create a conflicting outward appearance. Moreover, the 'believe whatever you want' theology of 'I'm a good person' is not the Gospel & is a good fit to slow the coming in of the fullness of the Gentiles.

255. Jesus prophesies that many will turn back & hate one another. (Lk 8:13; Mat 24:10)

256. Paul warns people to separate from apostate churches & their apostate believers. (2 Cor 6:14-18)

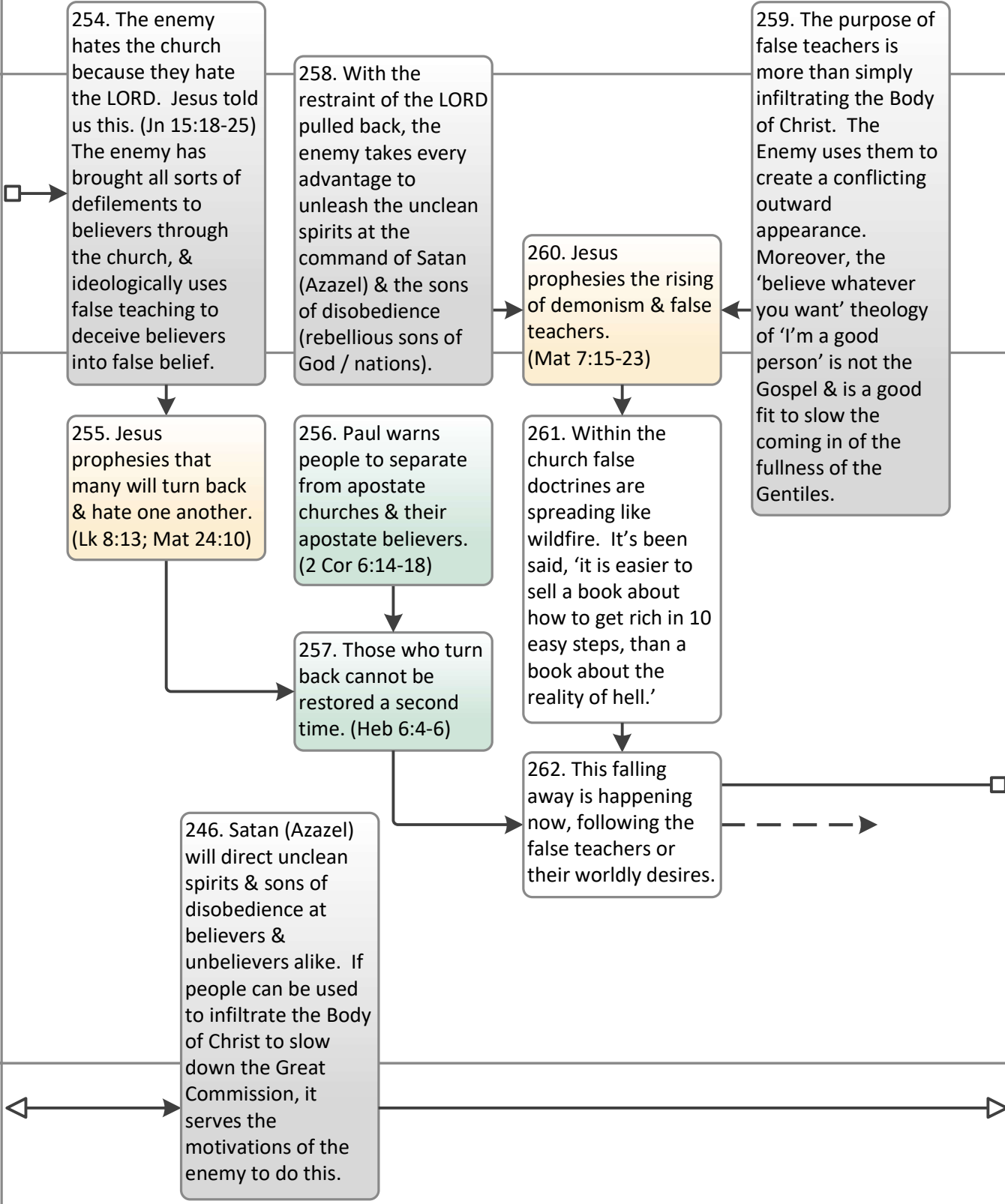
260. Jesus prophesies the rising of demonism & false teachers. (Mat 7:15-23)

261. Within the church false doctrines are spreading like wildfire. It's been said, 'it is easier to sell a book about how to get rich in 10 easy steps, than a book about the reality of hell.'

257. Those who turn back cannot be restored a second time. (Heb 6:4-6)

262. This falling away is happening now, following the false teachers or their worldly desires.

246. Satan (Azazel) will direct unclean spirits & sons of disobedience at believers & unbelievers alike. If people can be used to infiltrate the Body of Christ to slow down the Great Commission, it serves the motivations of the enemy to do this.



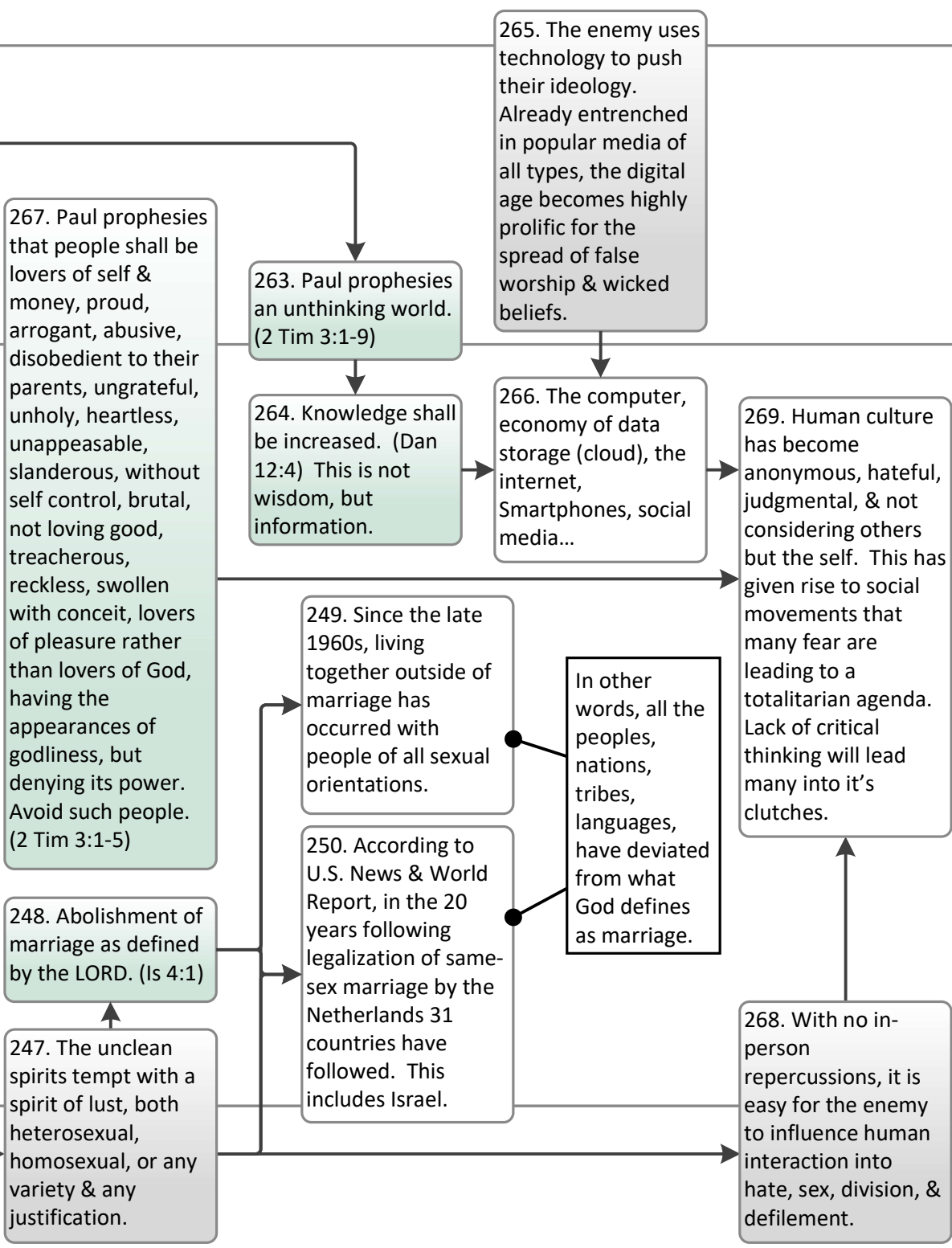
(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld



(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

The one world government may be a literal globalized government. It may also refer to a globalized ideology that governs them all. It may also refer to both – at least initially. At the midpoint of the Great Tribulation the Antichrist when inhabited by Satan (Azazel) will use this to manifest his dominion over the entire earth.

This is exactly what Satan (Azazel) & his horde do following the midpoint of the Tribulation.

Angels

These will continue to get worse as we approach & enter the Tribulation.

270. Decay of civil government in the last days . (Dan 2:27-28) Capital & labor markets in the last days will be corrupted & in contention. (Jm 5:1-5)

273. Satan (Azazel) & the sons of disobedience (rebellious sons of God / nations) are hard at work developing a global totalitarian regime. If they can gain control of humanity & kill followers of Jesus off, they would prevent the fullness of the Gentiles from coming in.

275. The condition of humanity will continue to become worse. As with all wars of attrition, the enemy continues to exercise waves of terror & control followed by reprieve. This approach lulls people into believing that things will get better as they are continually becoming worse. It disincentivizes rebellion, because it allows for reprieve. Over history this has been shown to be the fastest method of developing totalitarian rule – the ultimate goal of Satan (Azazel), who is still trying to be 'like the Most High.'

Humanity

272. Secular leaders pushing social justice, governmental reform, & ecological policies are leading people into a worship of government. This focus of human worship is becoming globalized at a rapid pace, & the ideology will contribute to a one world government.

274. Unclean spirits support these movements by bringing physical sickness, mental afflictions, fear, confusion, & immorality, & idolatry. They develop a dependance on the human rulers controlled by Satan (Azazel) & the sons of disobedience.

Underworld

271. The enemy knows the path to hell is laid with good intentions. When secular leaders push what sounds like inclusion, progress, & development is actually defilement & separation from the LORD.

(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

276. The LORD has allowed a partial hardening of the hearts of Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles comes in. (Rom 11:25-27)

The fact that some Jews are coming to receive Jesus as their Lord & Savior is an indication that the hardening is starting to thaw.

Angels

277. The revival of the Jews begins pre-Tribulation. This is already underway. (Ezk 39:7; Joel 2:23, 27)

284. Satan (Azazel) knows that the two conditions for the return of King Jesus are 1) the fullness of the Gentiles coming in, & 2) the reawakening of Israel. This invasion is an attempt to kill off all Israeli Nationals. If they are dead, they can't be reawakened. Thus, the 'survival through delay' strategy may have a lasting impact.

Humanity

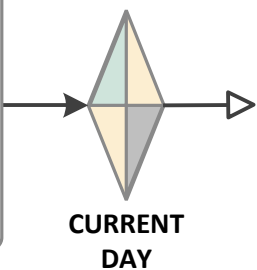
281. Ezekiel prophesies that Israel will be invaded prior to the Tribulation. (Ezk 38:1-16)

282. & that peace will be a sign that the invasion is about to happen. (Ezk 38:14)

283. Some believe Persia (current Iran) will lead the invasion. (Ezk 38:6)

285. The invasion will be a confederacy of participants. (Ezk 38:1-6)

286. Currently Iran has been building up forces on several borders of Israel with help from adjacent nations that are either in agreement or too weak to refuse.



Underworld

279. & that world powers offer a mild but vacuous protest. (Ezk 38:13)

278. This is evidence of Satan's (Azazel's) program taking effect within governments across the developed world.

280. Reaction to the military build up has gone largely unnoticed by the international community of nations.

In the current world we can see the shifting powers & policies that could easily be blamed, ensuring a total lack of response by the world allies.

291. Mild protest continues today, & nations like the U.S. are de-militarizing their support under the influence of Satan.



(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

287. The lesser gods lead an attack on Israel, influencing the leaders of their nations to a war on Israel. (Ezk 38:15-16)

288. The Nations surrounding Israel corporately attack under the leadership of Persia (modern day Iran) & in partnership with Magog (modern day Russia). (Ezk 38:15-16)

289. Enoch prophesies the wars of Gog & Magog in the time of the Messiah. (3 En 45:5)

290. The invasion of Israel will begin.

292. Ezekiel prophesies that other nations will offer a mild protest, but will not come to the defense of Israel. (Ezk 38:13)

293. The Most High defends Israel from the attacking Nations. It takes 7 years to bury the destruction. (Ezk 38:17-39:10)

294. An earthquake & pestilence (a disease) overtakes the invading armies. (Ezk 38:19-20)

295. ...the LORD will create confusion within these armies... (Ezk 38:20-21)

296. & disarm the attacking forces. (Ezk 38:22-23)

297. & destroying the enemy forces invading Israel. (Ezk 39:3-8)

299. The pre-last week Jewish revival will accelerate after seeing the LORD rescue Israel against all odds. (Ezk 39:7; Joel 2:23-27)

298. In the aftermath of their destruction, the implements of war are burned for seven years. (Ezk 39:8-9)

300. However, this is only those from the remnant (Israel) called by the LORD. (Joel 2:32) This implies that 'the rest' (likely most) of Israel will remain as they are today.

301. The Antichrist will come as an offshoot of the fourth beast (Dan 7:9-12)

The fourth beast is Roman-style government. This has been around since the time of Jesus. It is possible, given how the LORD defines nations, that the four beasts are the 'world powers' of the time. If that is today, it could represent China, Europe, the U.S., & Russia. Regardless, it is thought that the Antichrist will come from, or in association with, the world of politics.

(6) Disp: Grace

**The LORD Who Encourages (Jn 16:33)**

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

305. The LORD who declares the end from the beginning will accomplish his purpose. (Is 46:9-10)

306. Jesus tells us to be ready. (Lk 21:34-36) His teaching, work on the cross, & example prepare & encourage us.

307. The Holy Spirit through His seven personalities is our helper that fortifies us. (Jn 15:26-27)

308. Jeremiah uses the olive tree as a prophetic metaphor for the house of Israel. (Jer 11:16-17)

311. John sees Jesus standing in the midst of seven lampstands. (Rev 1:12-13)

314. The prepared church is aligned with King Jesus & ready to serve Him, against whom the enemy will not prevail (Mat 16:18), as we seek to bring in the elect through the fulfillment of the Great Commission. (Jn 14:18-21; Mat 28:16-20)

309. The two olive trees & two golden pipes. These are the two anointed ones standing by the Lord of the whole earth. (Zech 4:11-14)

312. The lampstands are the seven churches. (Rev 1:20)

313. Five of the churches Jesus has something against them. But two (Smyrna & Philadelphia) He does not. (Rev 2-3)

310. Paul explains the grafting in of the Gentiles as a grafting in of olive trees. (Rom 11:13-18)

302. Paul prophesies the Tribulation will not come until the falling away & the man of sin revealed. (2 Thes 2:3)

318. Recall the Great Commission given by Jesus. (Mat 28:16-20)

315. The two olive trees & the two lampstands are the two witnesses. (Rev 11:4)

319. The two witnesses are those from the original tree who receive their Messiah (Messianic Jews) & the grafted in Gentile followers of Jesus (Christians). (Rev 11:3-6; Zech 4:1-3, 11-14)

303. The antichrist revealed. (2 Thes 2:3) The person who negotiates this agreement will be the prophesied Antichrist.

317. Recall the prophecy "her offspring; he shall bruise your head, & you shall bruise his heel." (Gen 3:15)

316. Jesus knows who will receive His gift. (Jn 6:64) But He works through us.

304. The ten kings who are ruling when the Antichrist comes on the scene. (Dan 7:24)

This could be the respective world powers regionally around the Globe.

The Last Week Starts

The Last Week

(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

320. The LORD requires as part of His Law two or more witnesses. (Deut 19:15-21) Because the LORD is faithful to His Own Divine Law, He also uses two witnesses to minister to the world.

322. Through the Holy Spirit, the LORD brings His Two Witnesses to find the elect. (Rev 11:1-14)

327. The restraint of the LORD will be pulled back. His Spirit will allow supernatural capabilities by followers of Jesus. (Acts 2:17-20)

323. Powered by the Holy Spirit, followers of Jesus will minister the Gospel of Jesus during the Great Tribulation as part of the Great Commission. (Mat 28:16-20; Jn 15:26-27)

Preparation for this event has been under way. In Jerusalem, plans for the new Temple have been created by the Temple Institute of Jerusalem.

326. Jesus said the Gospel of the Kingdom will be preached as a testimony to all nations, then the end will come" (Mat 24:14)

330. Clothed in sackcloth (repentant). (Rev 11:3)

321. Followers of Jesus do this today as part of the Great Commission. (Mat 28:16-20)

325. Jesus said "He was with us "until the end of the age." (Mat 28:20)

331. Fire (truth & power of God) flows from their mouth. (Rev 11:4; Jer 5:14; Is 26:11)

338. The Anti-Christ identifies himself by brokering the prophesied 7-year peace treaty between Israel & it's enemies. (Dan 7:9-12, 9:27)

324. Each dispensation (age) ends with the LORD's Judgement. Yet to come with the outpouring of the Wrath of the LORD.

332. Power to shut up the sky so it won't rain while they prophesy. (Rev 11:6)

This will start the last week (& the LORD's prophetic clock) prophesied by Daniel.

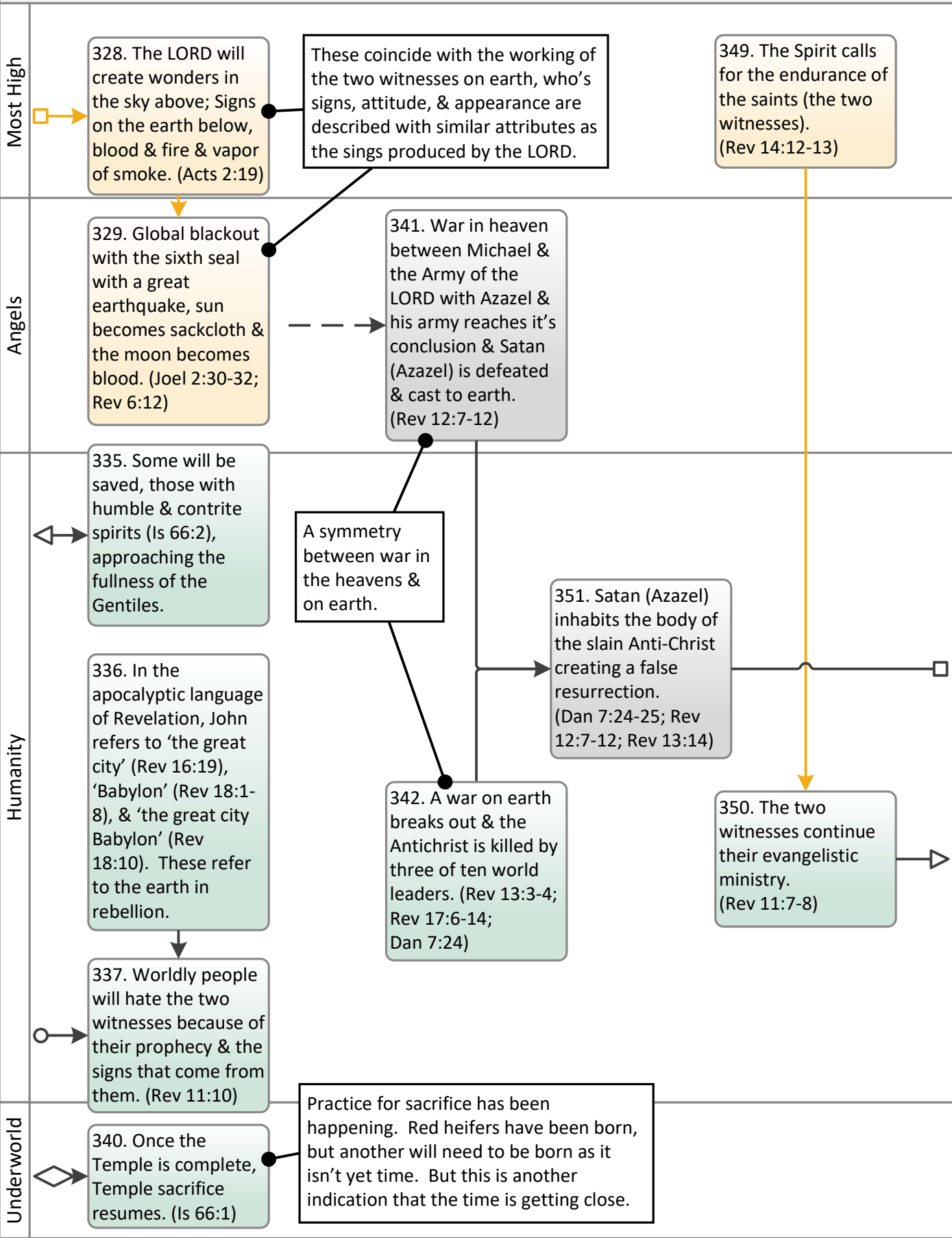
339. As part of the peace treaty, the Jews will be allowed to rebuild the Temple. (Is 66:1)

333. Power to turn the waters to blood. (Rev 11:6)

334. Power to strike the earth with every plague. (Rev 11:6)

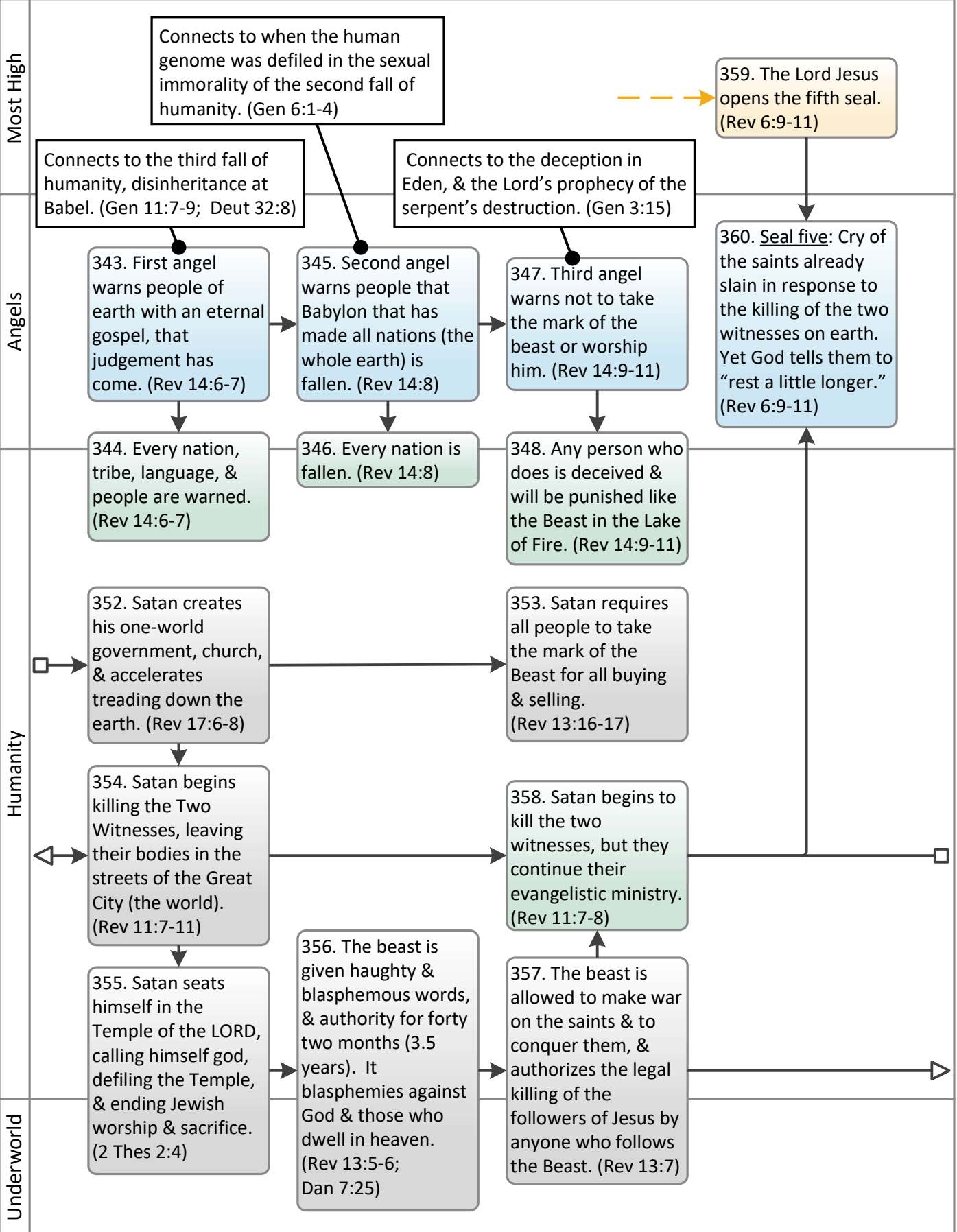


(6) Disp: Grace



The Last Week

(6) Disp: Grace



The Last Week

(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

365. The Lord Jesus opens the sixth seal. (Rev 6:12-17)

368 The Lord Jesus opens the seventh seal. (Rev 8:1-5)

Angels

366. Sixth seal: A great earthquake, blackened sun, blood moon, stars of the sky fall to earth, & the sky vanishes like a scroll being rolled up. Every mountain / island, king / powerful person removed from their place. (Rev 6:12-14)

369. Seventh seal: Silence in heaven for about half an hour, then the seven trumpets are given. (Rev 8:1-5)

This description in the Bible sounds very much like geothermal nuclear war, people hiding in bunkers & wherever they can.

370. An angel takes his censor, fills it with fire from the altar, & throws it on the earth. (Rev 8:5)

Humanity

367. People hide in caves & among rocks of mountains, calling for the mountains & rocks to fall on & hide them, for the great day of their wrath has come & who can stand? (Rev 6:15-17)

371. Seventh seal: This brings peals of thunder, rumblings, flashes of lightning, & an earthquake. (Rev 8:5)

361. When their testimony is complete, the Beast will overwhelm & kill them. (Rev 11:7-8)

362. The beast was given over every tribe & people & language & nation. All who dwell on earth worship the beast. Everyone who was not written in the Book of Life of the Lamb who was slain. (Rev 13:7-8)

363. People from the tribes & tongues & nations will look on the dead bodies of the two witnesses for 3½ days. (Rev 11:9-10)

364. People won't burry their bodies, but will rejoice & celebrate & send gifts to one another because the torment of the two witnesses is over. (Rev 11:9-10)

Underworld

With understanding of the disinheritance at the third fall in Babel, we can interpret that the tribes, tongues, & nations are people all over the earth. With understanding of year to day prophecy, we know this will be for 3½ years.

The Last Week

(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

372. The LORD gives the seven trumpets to seven angels. (Rev 8:2)

First Fall Connection: "I will put enmity [contention] between your offspring and her offspring. (Gen 3:15) Second Fall Connection: The use of the unclean spirits draws a connection to the second fall of humanity, when they 'came out' of the Nephilim when they died. (1 En 15:8-10) Third Fall Connection: Affects those who worship the Beast, like Babel, those who worshiped the lesser false gods.

Angels

373. First trumpet: The first angel blows his trumpet. (Rev 8:7)

377. Third trumpet: The third angel blows his trumpet. (Rev 8:10-11)

382. Fifth trumpet: The fifth angel blows his trumpet. (Rev 9:1)

Humanity

374. First trumpet: Hail & fire mixed with blood kills 1/3 of the earth; 1/3 trees; all grass. (Rev 8:7)

378. Third trumpet: A meteor falls on 1/3 of the rivers & springs; 1/3 of the waters become wormwood & kill many people. (Rev 8:10-11)

381. First woe warning: Eagle (angel) crying "woe, woe, woe to those who dwell on the earth, at the blasts of the other trumpets that the three angels are about to blow!" (Rev 8:13)

384. Fifth trumpet, first woe: Smoke rises from the shaft of the bottomless Pit. The sun & air are darkened with smoke. Locust come from the smoke. (Rev 9:2-3)

Underworld

376. Second trumpet: Underwater volcanoes (something like a burning mountain) kills 1/3 of the sea creatures. (Rev 8:8-9)

380. Fourth trumpet: 1/3 of sun, 1/3 moon, 1/3 stars are struck. 1/3 of their light is darkened. 1/3 of day & night they are kept from shining. (Rev 8:12)

383. Trumpet five, first woe: Global blackout as the demons are let loose from the Pit by Satan. (Rev 9:1-6)

385. Harassment from the unclean spirits becomes even more severe as all the unclean spirits are let loose from the Pit (Rev 9:3-6)

The Last Week

(6) Disp: Grace

Most High

1. Some are still around who have the mark of the LORD & are protected from the demon locust of Trumpet 5. (Rev 9:1)

2. The fullness of the Gentiles has not been reached, because this will cause the reawakening of Israel.

3. Both of these will make the harvest ripe for the harvest of the righteous.

397. Harvest of the Righteous: Jesus compares the kingdom of heaven to a field, where the weeds grow along with the wheat until the reapers gather them separately. (Mat 13:24-30)

Angels

391. Sixth trumpet: The sixth angel blows his trumpet. (Rev 9:13)

390. Second woe warning: Revelation teaches us & reads, "the first woe has passed; behold, two woes are still to come (Rev 9:12) likely announced by an angel.

394. Third Woe Warning: Revelation teaches us & reads, "the first woe has passed; behold, two woes are still to come. (Rev 9:12) This is likely announced by an angel.

Humanity

389. Non-believing humanity & the earth severely afflicted for five months. (Rev 9:5-11)

386. The LORD protects the grass, earth, green plants, trees from the unclean spirit locust demons. (Rev 9:4)

388. Some of the two witnesses are still ministering the gospel because some people still have the mark of the LORD. (Rev 9:4) Israel has not fully reawakened, so the fullness of the Gentiles has yet to come.

392. Sixth trumpet, second woe: Four angels are released, who have been prepared & bound at the river Euphrates. (Rev 9:14)

393. Sixth trumpet, second woe: The angels kill 1/3 of mankind. (Rev 9:13-21) The implication is that these are non-believers who are killed.

Underworld

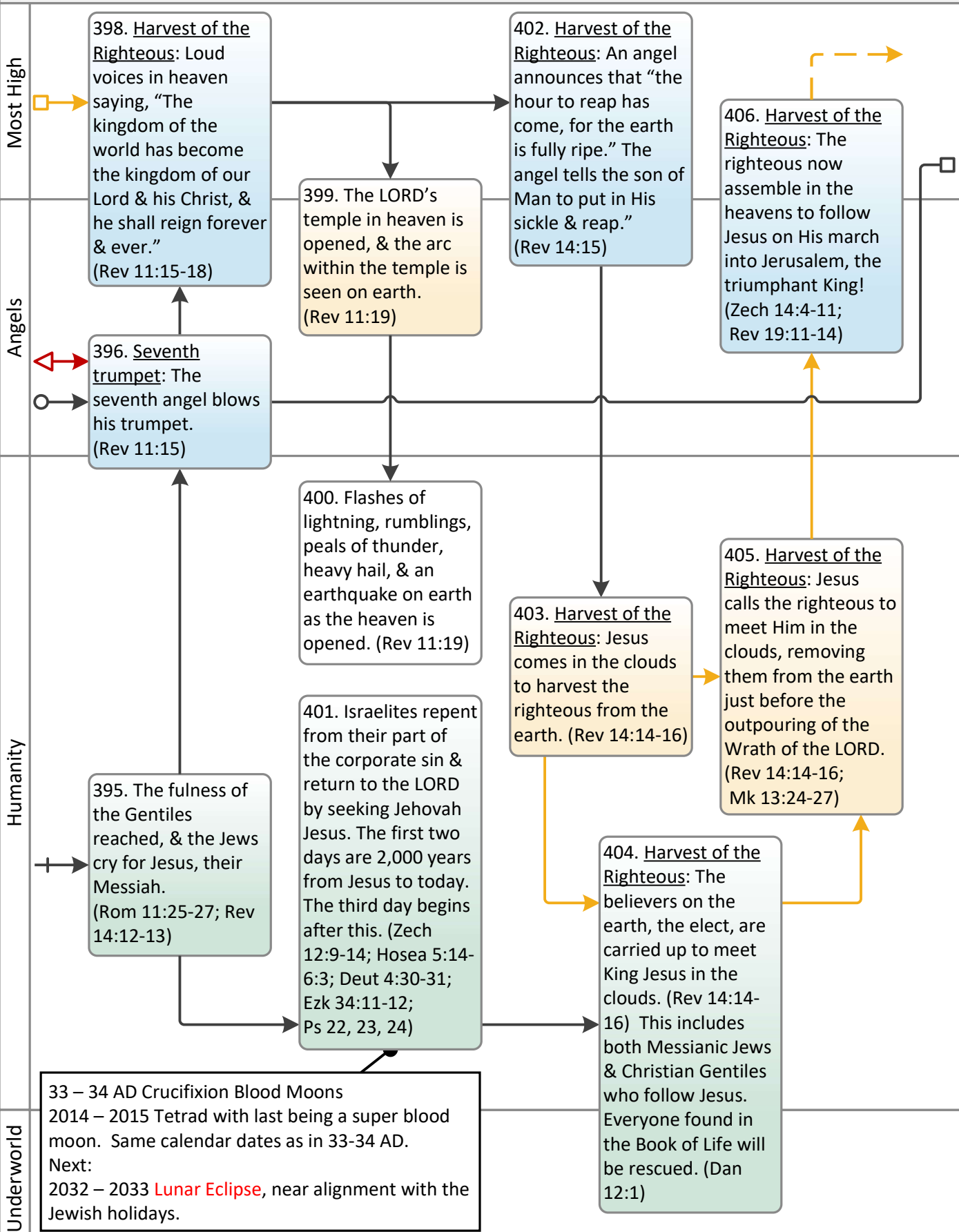
387. The unclean spirits are not permitted to harm any grass, earth, green plants, or tree, or any people with the seal of God on their foreheads. (Rev 9:4)

First Fall Connection: The use of four angels appears to point back to the earth & creation. E.g., the four winds (Dan 7:2, Jer 49:36, Ezk 37:9), the four cardinal directions. (Gen 13:14; Ps 107:3; Lk 13:29)



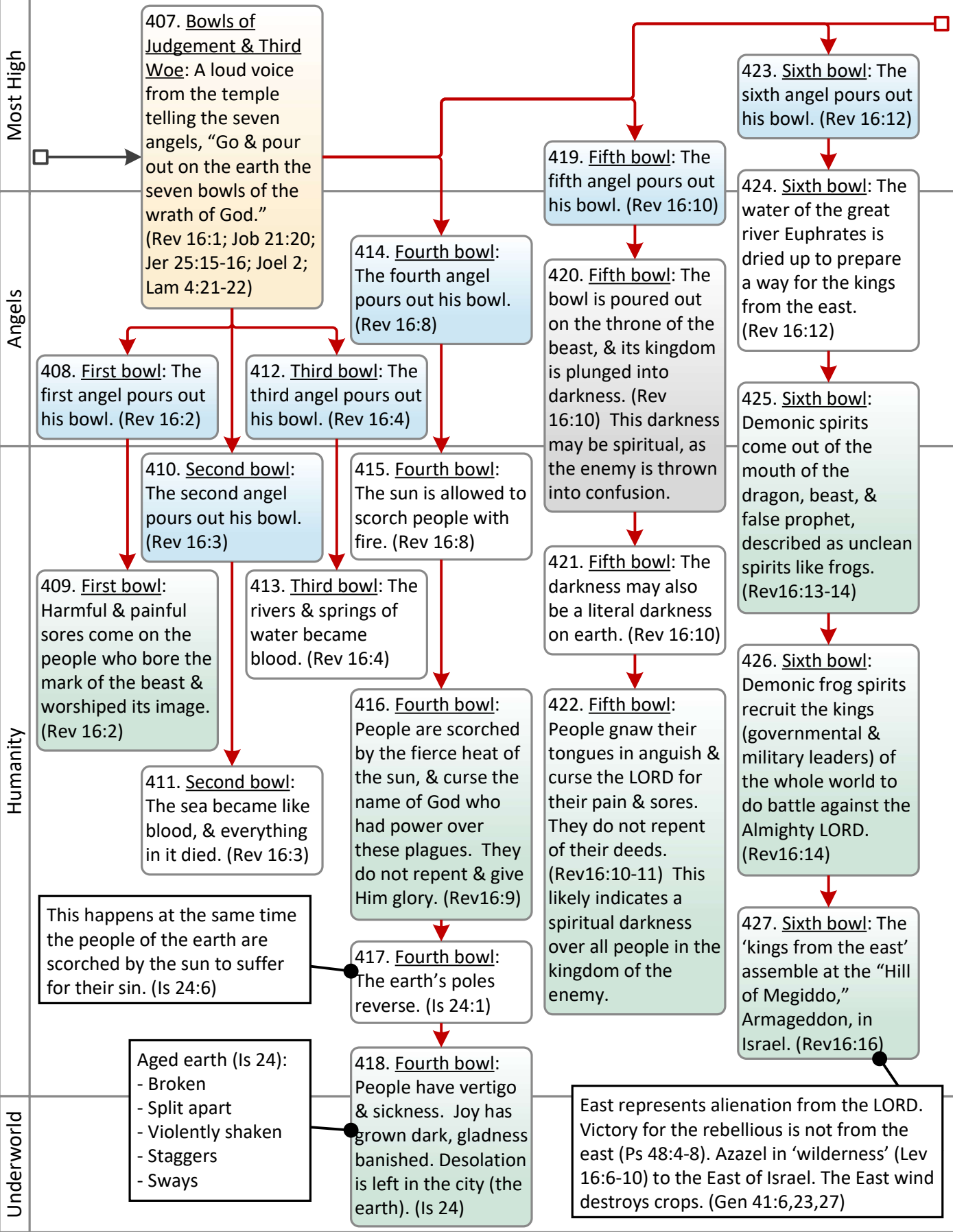
The Last Week

(6) Disp: Grace



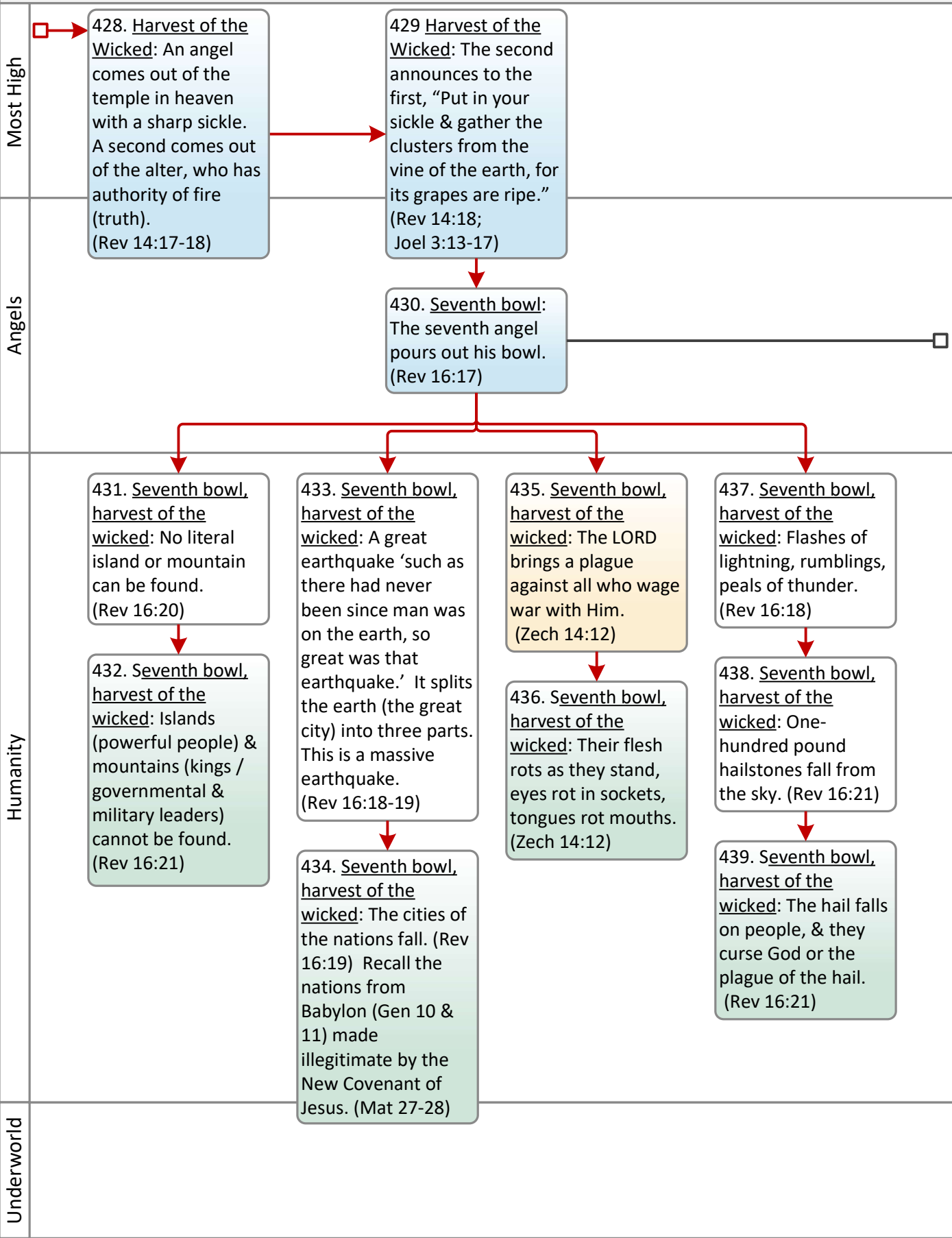
The Cup of the Wrath of the LORD

(6) Disp: Grace



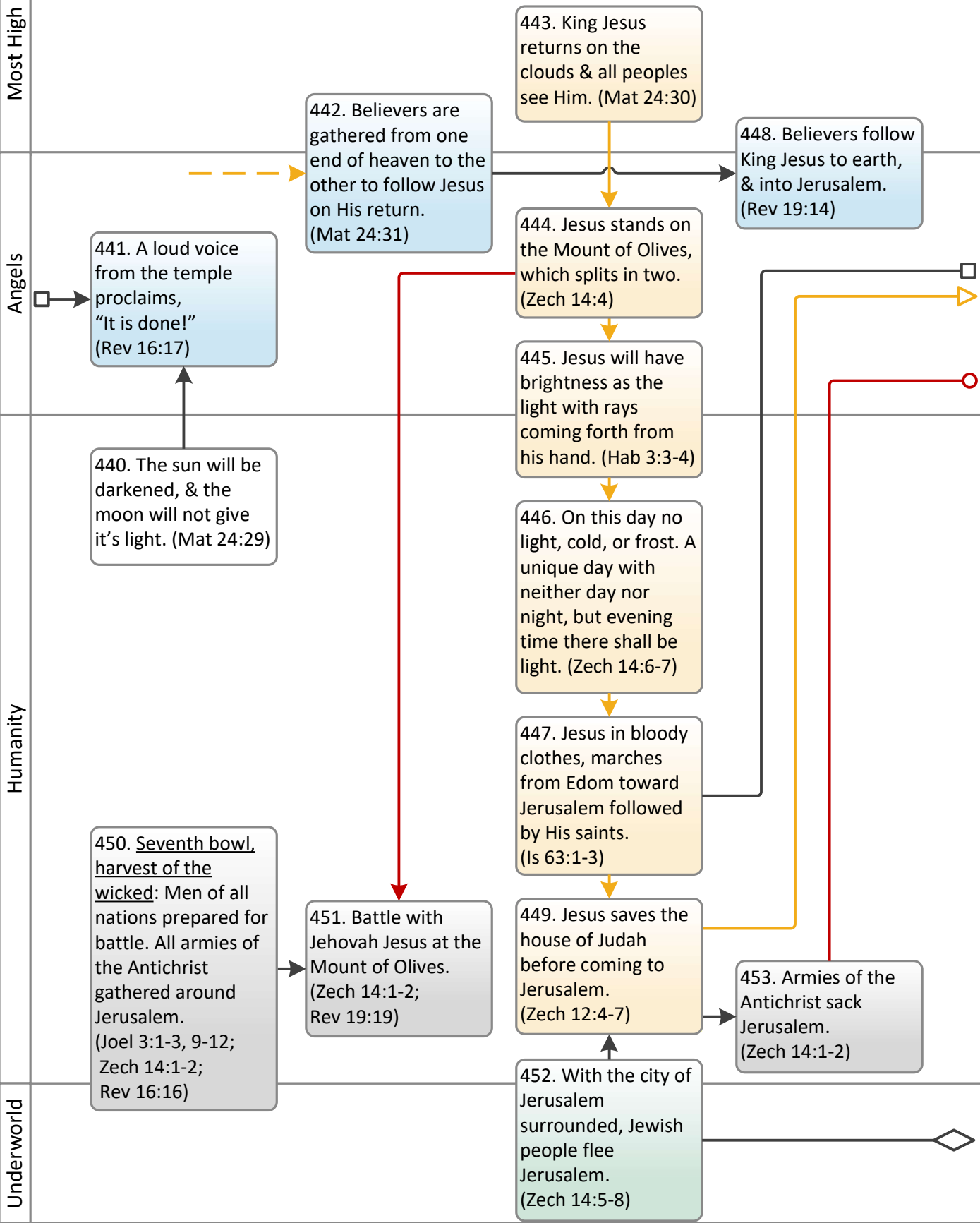
The Cup of the Wrath of the LORD

(6) Disp: Grace



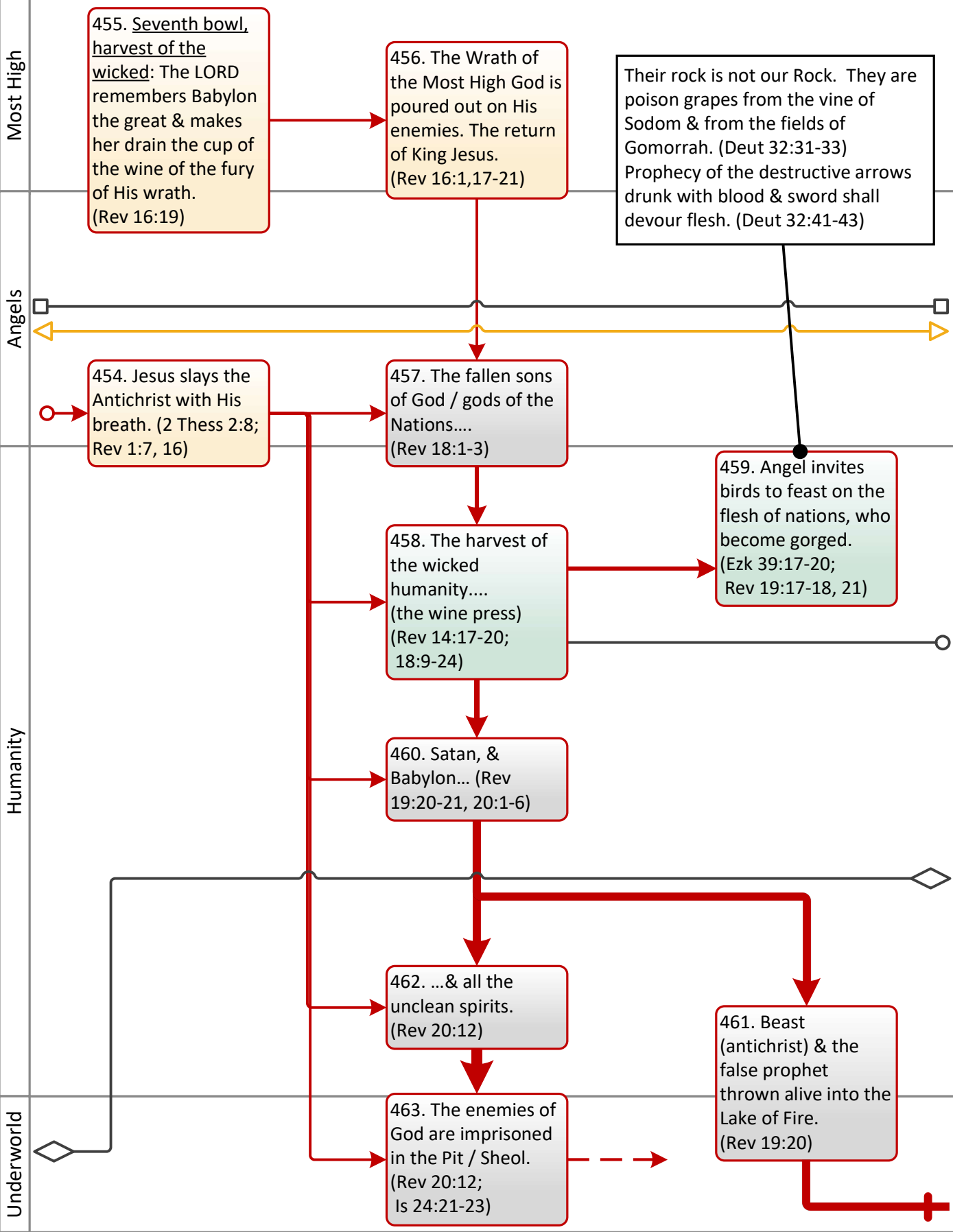
**The Cup of the Wrath of the LORD**

**(6) Disp: Grace**



The Cup of the Wrath of the LORD

(6) Disp: Grace



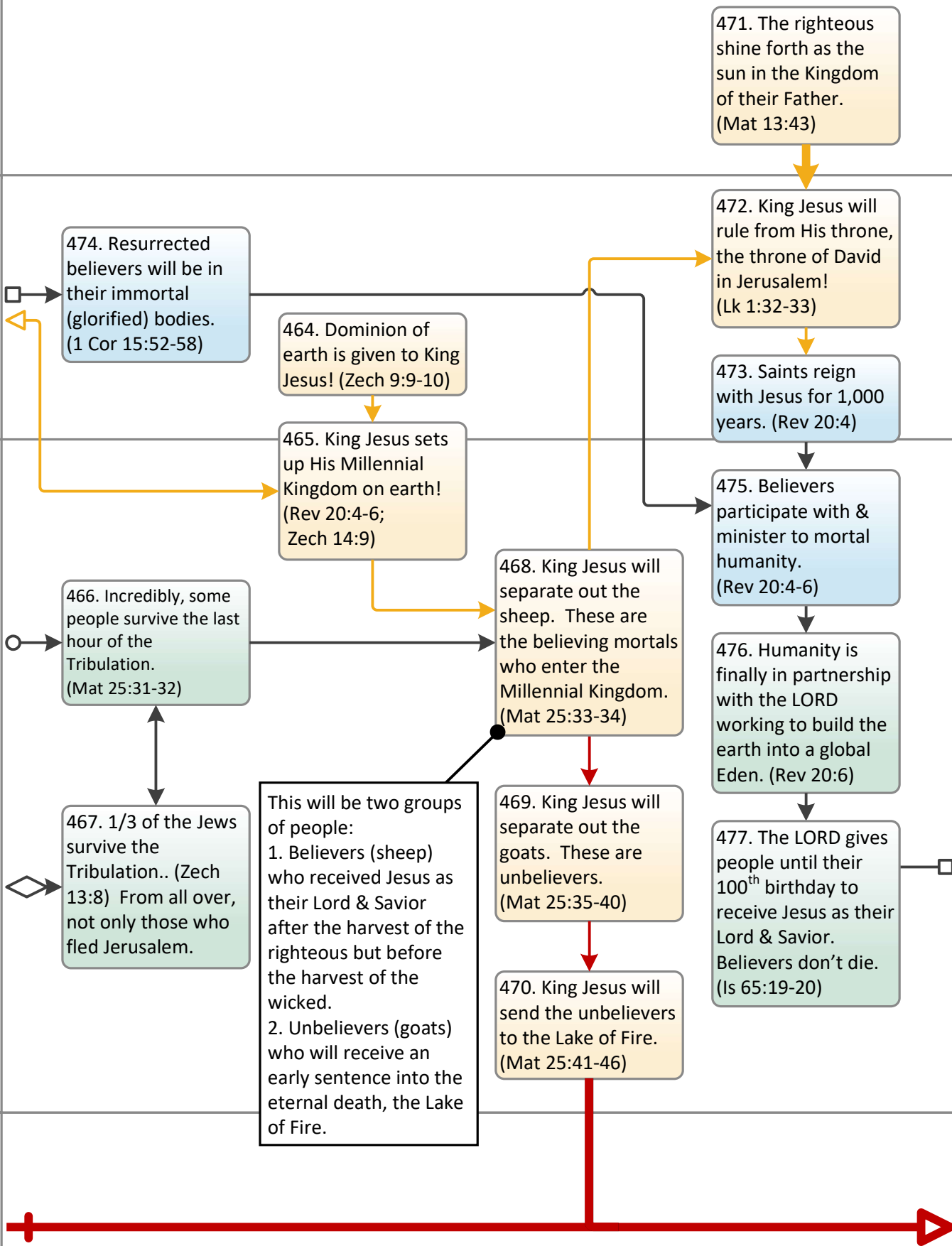
(7) Disp: Millennial Kingdom

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld



(7) Disp: Millennial Kingdom

Most High

Angels

Humanity

Underworld

486. The LORD sends fire from heaven. (Rev 20:9)

488. The LORD brings judgment on His enemies. (Rev 20:11-15)

485. God's children safe during the Great White Throne Judgement. (Rev 20:6)

484. All of God's children are spared from judgement, being cleansed by the Blood of Christ. (Rev 20:6)

483. Jesus tells His disciples to rejoice that their names are written in the Book of Life. (Lk 10:20)

487. The LORD ends the rebellion before it can begin. (Rev 20:9)

482. Satan (Azazel) deceives & gathers the rebellious Nations & leads a rebellion against God's Holy City (the earth). (Rev 20:8-10)

481. At the end of the Millennial Kingdom, unbelievers under the age of 100 are still alive. (Is 65:20)

478. Unbelievers die & join the others in the Pit (Sheol). (Is 65:20)

479. All enemies of God are still imprisoned in the PIT / Sheol. (Rev 20:12)

480. After 1,000 years (at the end of the Millennial Kingdom) Satan is let loose from the PIT once more 'for a little while.' (Rev 20:1-3,7)

490. All the enemies of the LORD get to participate in the second resurrection. But this places them before the Judgment seat of the Most High God. (Rev 20:11-13)

489. The fallen sons of God, the unclean spirits, & all of wicked humanity are brought to trial based on their works. (Rev 20:11)



The Great White Throne Judgement

(7) Disp: Millennial Kingdom

Most High

491. The LORD executes the sentence of His enemies. (Rev 20:11-15)

506. No longer, will anything accursed (no rebellion or sin) exist. (Rev 22:3)

Angels

492. Add iniquity to their iniquity, and may they not come into Your righteousness. May they be blotted out of the book of life and they not be recorded with the righteous. (Psalm 69:27-28)

493. All are judged based on their works & deeds. All are cast into the Lake of Fire, outer darkness, total separation from the LORD. (Rev 20:10-15)

From a timeline perspective, the division between the heavens & the earth becomes irrelevant. While the Lake of Fire is a quarantine that is separated from the rest of God's good world, the future for those of us who have received Jesus as our Lord & Savior is the incredible reality of the Eternal Kingdom.

Humanity

499. Cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, & immoral persons & sorcerers & idolaters & liars. (Rev 21:8)

494. Anyone whose name is not found in the Book of Life is cast into the Lake of Fire. (Rev 20:15)

500. Furnace of fire, weeping & gnashing of teeth. (Mat 13:42)

501. Wrath of the LORD that goes forth like fire, none can quench it. (Jer 4:4)

498. The eternal fire prepared for the devil & his angels. (Mat 25:41)

502. The worm dies not die & the fire is not quenched. (Mk 9:47-48)

497. The eternal fire. (Mat 18:8)

503. The second death, lake of fire. (Rev 20:14)

496. Eternal destruction away from the presence of the Lord & from the glory of His power. (2 Thess 1:8-9)

495. Eternal quarantine for the enemies of God who aren't allowed to pollute Gods Good world any longer. (Rev 20:10,14-15)

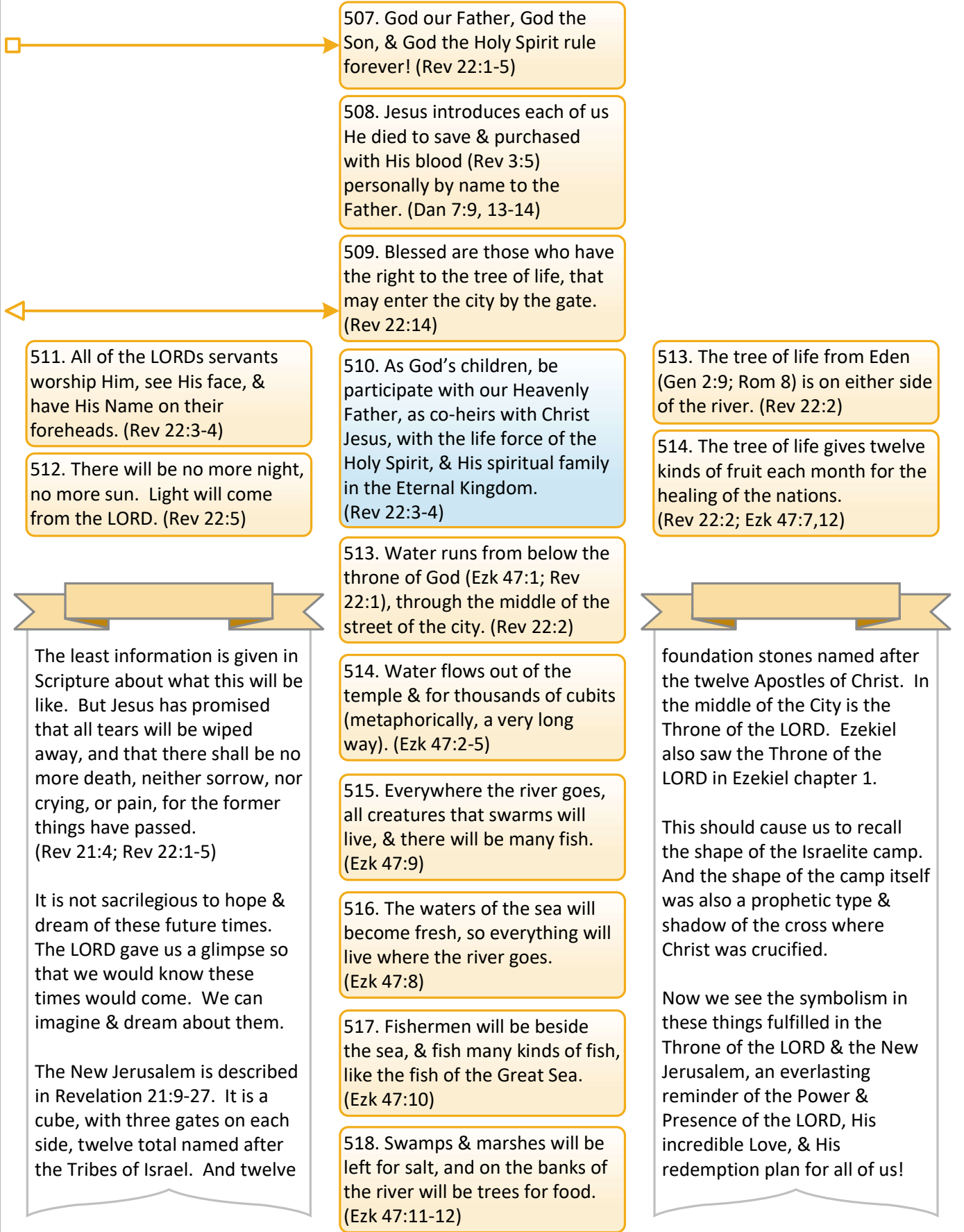
504. Burns with fire & brimstone. (Rev 21:8)

505. The pits of darkness reserved for judgement. (2 Pt 2:17)

Lake of Fire



**(8) Disp: The Eternal Kingdom**





## Section 8

### Commentaries About the Future

“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control; against such things there is no law. And those who belong to Christ Jesus Have crucified the flesh with its passions and desires. If we live by the Spirit, let us also keep in step with the Spirit. Let us not become conceited, provoking one another, envying one another.”

Paul  
Apostle of Christ Jesus  
Galatians 5:22-25

## Seeing Prophecy from the LORD's Perspective

### **The Most Important Question**

Really, I can't think about how else to approach the Bible. We must set aside the ideologies & dogmas created by man trying to figure out God. All these lead to religion, & all we should care about is RELATIONSHIP with our Heavenly Father through Christ Jesus! He is, can, & should be our teacher.

But we can't all know everything, so we lean on the understanding we each get. The Bible says this is iron sharpening iron in Proverbs 27:17. Even so, we should each take this to the LORD whose Spirit will guide & instruct us. Because He always agrees with Himself, He will bring us to the proper understanding.

Thus, the most important questions becomes...

### **What does the LORD mean by all this prophecy?**

Have you ever wondered which translation the LORD uses? Or how He thinks about baptism? Or if He looks down on someone who holds a this-Trib-rapture or that-Trib-rapture opinion?

We really get bend over our dogmas, when really, we should be laboring in the Word of God to understand more. So, I'm not all that worried about whether you agree with me, so much as I'm praying that all this gets you into the Bible & deeper into a relationship with Him. Jesus is coming back soon, praise the LORD, & I pray you will join us!

### **The LORD is Spirit**

You may have noticed in this flow of the Bible that I've attempted to use a lens that brings this reality to the surface. It highlights things that aren't in focus or even on stage in many churches.

That the LORD is Spirit is obvious. That angels exist is acceptable, since most of them are still the good guys. If our own eternal salvation didn't depend on a spirit man, that might be a hard pill to swallow.

Then there are all of those things that have been swept under the bed. The demons, the fallen angels, the spiritual gifts, the personalities of the Holy Spirit, the miracles, the odd components of the falls, the giants, & so much more. I suspect they are uncomfortable because we don't have what we might call 'typical' human experience with them. I further suspect a line of thinking that believes if we don't mess with anything spiritual then we won't step into the dangerous areas.

None of what we do or think changes what is. To say to ourselves, 'there is danger over there so I'll pretend over there isn't really there,' is foolish. The LORD provides His Spirit who will teach & give us discernment. Are we not Children of the Most High? Will He not edify us & grow us into His Character?

I'd encourage you to take a similar journey into the weirder areas of the Bible & learn what the LORD says exists. Fear of the danger that is over there is not from Him. But one of the elect might be, & if the LORD is calling you to work in another person's life, then you might miss it.

Jesus came into this physical world, suffered, & died so He could buy us with His blood. Reading His Bible from this physical world should consider a spiritual reality. Not somewhere 'out there,' or in a way that doesn't apply to us. But in a way that is all around us. It becomes tangible when you let it. Just like emotions, ideas, dreams, goals... He loves us. We don't all have to be the same. But we should embrace each other as the Body of Christ as He embraces us.

### **Three Circles**

When I was younger, I thought myself into empiricism. I would have told you that materialism was right. That God was irrelevant because it was an unknowable answer. He might be, He might not be, but either way, He wasn't for me. I challenged what I thought was a question about God with this:

If God is real, I'd be able to experience Him with my senses, & since that is impossible, then I suppose I can move on to other things & put this question away.

What I thought was a challenge to a question was a challenge to a Living God. That God has a Son named Jesus who died for me when I was a sinner, when I rejected Him, & when I thought He was unknowable.

After my daughter was born, I started to see things, hear things. Dark things. But with the veil lifted in my own life I started to experience the Holy Spirit. When you hear & become aware in a way that is all too real, His reality becomes undeniable.

**Every skeptic should play chicken with God.  
You will lose, but in your losing you will win!**

To answer some of these questions for myself, I wrote a dissertation to myself that used philosophy to go from Descartes 'I think therefore I am' to what I believe are solid assumptions about the reality of the physical & spiritual world. To sum that up, when I was young, I thought I was the center of three concentric circles, had to take a small leap to assume the physical world, & a much larger leap beyond that to a spiritual reality. I was not able to take this last leap, a Kierkegaardian leap of faith. It was just too much.

With the reality of the Spirit of the LORD God in front of me, He helped me see that I was not the center circle, He was. I was blessed to orbit Him. In my solipsistic state the very tiny leap to Him was so close & the most natural to take. The leap to the physical world was out there, on the other side of me, quite distant & more difficult to make. Yet the deception is that the physical world is the tangible reality, when it is simply an armature placed to hold our existence in a place where we can realize our relationship & dependence on Him.

### **Applying End Times Prophecy**

These are sort of 'history of the future' studies. How it is going to happen is how the LORD Wills it to happen. In trying to be prepared for the soon coming events, this body of work should hopefully help as a launchpad to connect dots through this Epic Story, & allow greater learning wherever we are studying.

While the best I can do is explain what I've come to understand, I will always point you back to Jesus & His Holy Spirit, to study of the Holy Bible, & to be led by Him in your studies. The LORD puts His Truth on our hearts as we labor in trying to understand these things. But never should our disagreements create division, which happens too often, & unfortunately has become a cultural response to disagreement. Let's labor together for the edification of the Body of Christ.

As it comes to things that haven't happened yet, the following studies are intended to outline what will shake out, or wrestle with the concepts in a fresh way. I've put together my thoughts in an attempt to answer some of the eschatological questions that roll around in my head. Maybe these will help you too, or be a starting point for you to study & learn from the Holy Spirit also.

May the LORD through His Spirit be with you, & guide you on your own journey as He has with me. May His edification along the way grow you in His Character, & may we all develop as a Body of Christ. In the most powerful Name of our Lord & King Jesus, amen.

## One World Government Governing Ideology

### Daniel's Prophecy

As he interprets the dream of King Nebuchadnezzar, Daniel gives us a description of the fourth type of government. Daniel chapter 2:

“40 And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron, because iron breaks to pieces and shatters all things. And like iron that crushes, it shall break and crush all these. 41 And as you saw the feet and toes, partly of potter's clay and partly of iron, it shall be a divided kingdom, but some of the firmness of iron shall be in it, just as you saw iron mixed with the soft clay. 42 And as the toes of the feet were partly iron and partly clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong and partly brittle. 43 As you saw the iron mixed with soft clay, so they will mix with one another in marriage, but they will not hold together, just as iron does not mix with clay. 44 And in the days of those kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom that shall never be destroyed, nor shall the kingdom be left to another people. It shall break in pieces all these kingdoms and bring them to an end, and it shall stand forever, 45 just as you saw that a stone was cut from a mountain by no human hand, and that it broke in pieces the iron, the bronze, the clay, the silver, and the gold. A great God has made known to the king what shall be after this. The dream is certain, and its interpretation sure.”

– Daniel 2:40-45

### This Fourth Government

The succession from Nebuchadnezzar, to the Persians & Medes, to the Greeks, to Rome show an ever-expanding source of input to the government type. Nebuchadnezzar was, as sole king, able to lead in a more or less unilateral way. The dual kingdom of the Persians & Medes divided this. The Greeks brought democracy, but really leadership from the wealthy & elite. Rome was even more imperialistic, & grew so large that it eventually struggled to maintain power & control suitable for healthy economic growth. Today the Roman style has evolved into every person thinking of themselves as self-ruling their own cause & kingdom. Just as the metals in the dream become less precious as they move downward, so do the types of government.

### A Culture of Rome

Something that occurred to me is that the LORD may not have been talking about a literal government at all. I think this has been the historical & accepted vantage point. However, I wonder if the rulership of the global world is a spiritual government. This would be under the direction of Satan (Azazel), & seems to reflect something like what we see happening today.

What we don't see is a homogeneous approach to culture, something that may not ever totally manifest. However, the general sociological foundations seem to be trending toward a common band of acceptance. Moreover, this has been happening at a rapid pace. The Internet itself may be one of, if not the most destructive things ever created by mankind. It seems to fulfill the prophecy given to Daniel by the angel in Daniel 12, “But you, Daniel, shut up the words and seal the book, until the time of the end. Many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall increase” (Dan 12:4).

Many theologians have studied this verse, & seem to agree that ‘run to and fro’ is an idiom that means ‘travel significant distance.’ I’m paraphrasing here, but ultimately that is the thrust of the meaning. It is also important to note that the angel did not say ‘wisdom’ but ‘knowledge’ or ‘information’ shall increase.

The increased global travel & advent of the internet has been bringing commonality to every corner of the planet. While this sounds like a good thing, the moral, philosophical, & cultural standards being set are not those aligned with the LORD. The search for meaning, love, personal value, satisfaction, & our own identity has become rooted in a deception that through our own effort the world can deliver. We just need that next shiny object to make everything ‘right in our world;’ we just need to, take a bite of the fruit and our eyes will be opened. Sound familiar?

Here is what Paul teaches in Romans 1:

“28 And since they did not see fit to acknowledge God, God gave them up to a debased mind to do what ought not to be done. 29 They were filled with all manner of unrighteousness, evil, covetousness, malice. They are full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, maliciousness. They are gossips, 30 slanderers, haters of God, insolent, haughty, boastful, inventors of evil, disobedient to parents, 31 foolish, faithless, heartless, ruthless. 32 Though they know God’s righteous decree that those who practice such things deserve to die, they not only do them but give approval to those who practice them.”

– Romans 1:28-32

I don’t feel like I need to try very hard to make a case that this is the trending cultural norm. Moreover, it is being advanced at a progressive rate through the medias we’ve come to love & make indispensable in our lives. That we can’t imagine a life without a Smartphone, or WIFI connection. That devices are daily in use with people of all ages able to interact with them. The enemy is working through us to create the upcoming global culture – one that in fact has already arrived.

### **A Godly Culture**

Relativism through self-definition as a standard may be what we want, but it isn’t the way we thrive. The Bible compares people & culture to agriculture. Letting a plant or a vine grow wild will not yield the best fruit. Farmers must regularly prune, fertilize, & care for the plants so that they are prepared for the growth of good fruit. Parallels can be drawn to everything we do. Discipline & persistence are the framework for success.

The Heavenly Father has the heart of a Father, & seeks to develop us into the best. But doing this involves struggle & things that don’t seem all that great at the time. The problem with the LORD’s plan is that we don’t get to do what we want.

### **The One World Governing Ideology**

The world under Satan (Azazel) however, will let you do whatever you want. Today the governing baseline is everything Paul describes in Roman 1:28-32. The wickedness of the world has twisted each of these into something good. We’ve legalized with our governments of man so many things the LORD considers abominations. Anyone who speaks out against these things is rejected – so much so the term ‘cancel culture’ has become a common idiom. Today truly is like the days of Noah (Mat 24:37).

I don’t think the enemy needs to wait to somehow unify the governmental rulers into a single governmental body. Rather, consider whether the world is already under a common spiritual ruler, the prince of this fallen world. What is different about today than any other point in history is that he can control & disseminate information & ideology instantaneously. It is as close to being ubiquitous & omnipresent as he will become in his quest to be like the Most High.

If this interpretation is correct, it would mean that we’ve been tricked into looking for the distraction, while being indoctrinated into the deception. What is worse, an actual single government will occur at the midpoint of the last week when Satan (Azazel) sets up his earthly government. No longer will Satan (Azazel) have the limitation of having to influence people, because he will be physical bodied himself. With an indoctrinated global population following him, his ability to wreck destruction on earth will be unparalleled in time. All of the cultural of wickedness is leading to this, & as followers of Jesus we need to be wise to Paul’s warning to “go out from their midst, and be separate from them,” now more than ever (2 Cor 6:17).

**Woe to the World**

Isaiah's warning in Isaiah 5 holds true today:

“20 Woe to those who call evil good and good evil [post truth culture], who put darkness for light and light for darkness [relativism, materialism, Darwinism, atheism, etc.], who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter! 21 Woe to those who are wise in their own eyes [my truth], and shrewd in their own sight! [social justice warriors] 22 Woe to those who are heroes at drinking wine, and valiant men in mixing strong drink [legalized immorality, self-redefined identity (e.g., pronouns)], 23 who acquit the guilty for a bribe [governmental & judicial corruption], and deprive the innocent of his right! 24 Therefore, as the tongue of fire devours the stubble, and as dry grass sinks down in the flame, so their root will be as rottenness, and their blossom go up like dust; for they have rejected the law of the LORD of hosts, and have despised the word of the Holy One of Israel.”

– Isaiah 5:20-24

This sounds eerily like the woe of the third angel in Revelation 14:

“9 And another angel, a third, followed them, saying with a loud voice, ‘If anyone worships the beast and its image [these rebellions above, the created not Creator] and receives a mark on his forehead [meditates on] or on his hand [takes action] [the anti-Shema], 10 he also will drink the wind of God's wrath, poured full strength into the cup of his anger, and he will be tormented with fire and sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb. 11 And the smoke of their torment goes up forever and ever, and they have no rest, day or night, these worshipers of the beast and its image, and whoever receives the mark of its name.”

– Revelation 14:9-11

Brothers & sisters in Christ Jesus, be encouraged, because victory is coming. Jesus teaches in Luke 21:

“12b ...they will lay their hands on you and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons, and you will be brought before kings and governors for my name's sake. 13 This will be your opportunity to bear witness. 14 Settle it therefore in your minds not to meditate beforehand how to answer, 15 for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which none of your adversaries will be able to withstand or contradict. 16 You will be delivered up even by parents and brothers and relatives and friends, and some of you they will put to death. 17 You will be hated by all for my name's sake. 18 But not a hair of your head will perish. 19 By your endurance you will gain your lives.”

– Luke 21:12b-19



# The Two Witnesses

## Debate About the Two Witnesses

It is interesting to me that this is a debated topic. I think that may have happened as Christian theologians argued their way out of the hard work of the upcoming last week of this dispensation. In doing so I think we've ended on a position that supports an 'it's someone else's problem, not mine' attitude. As Kyle Idleman points out in "not a fan" (pgs. 12-13), many people walking around following Jesus while He was literally here on earth were just in it for the free food. When that isn't being offered anymore & Jesus is all that is available, they leave. What does that say about us? Jesus doesn't soften the blow when He said, "if the world hates you, know that it hated me before it hated you" (Jn 15:18). Or that Jesus was unclear about our participation & responsibility when Jesus directed **all of us that follow Him**, "18b All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. 19 Go therefore and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, 20 teaching them to observe all that I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, to the end of the age" (Mat 28:18b-20).

The last week is going to be hard. But let's not confuse the pulling back of the Restrainer of the LORD on one hand with His Judgement on the other. And if you are not convinced, I'd tell you that I'd rather be prepared in a strong relationship with Christ Jesus & not go through it, then be wrong & end up in a hard situation where I am not grown up in His Character. Regardless of the Great Tribulation, the Church seems to sleep, & we could all use more Jesus. We all need more Jesus.

## Interpretation & Point of View

Let me start by saying I could be wrong. Fine. I accept that. But in taking a more conservative view I'm preparing for the worst & hoping for the best. I started from a traditional "pre-Tribulation" position a few years ago & the more I read in the Bible directly, the more I began to realize several things about who we are & the times coming.

Psalms 7:6-17 & Isaiah 56:9-12, 57:1-2, & Joel 2:28-29 are used to support a pre-Tribulation ['tribulation' conflated here as a pre-last week] rapture. I'd encourage you to start by considering these verses for yourself with an open mind, regardless of your position. As part of that, to investigate the original language yourself, you can use free tools like the Blue Letter Bible online. The follower of Jesus has never had more available to them to dig into the deeper meaning of these things.

What I found is that when viewed from a 'the rapture happens before the Tribulation [again, 'last week']' viewpoint, then we can read what we want into these verses. When I started by trying to understand these verses in context to what else was happening, I learned a lot more. In other words, Bible first, viewpoint second – not viewpoint first, doctrine second, Bible third.

## Things to Think About

These are questions that helped mold my thinking in this area.

- We Are Important: As Christians will say, the LORD could do it Himself, but He works through us. So why would He take the team off the field right before the last quarter / inning / battle? Shouldn't we be ready to lay down our lives for the LORD?
- The Elect are Important: The Bible teaches us to view all other people as potential Children of God, & that we battle with the spirits behind the person not the person in front of us. If finding the elect are important to our Father, shouldn't that be important to us? After all, He found us, right?
- Foiling the Enemy's Plan: If the enemy is in a 'delay & stay' strategy, shouldn't we be partnering with the LORD to defeat the enemy? We do that by fulfilling the mission the Lord Jesus gave us, which is the Great Commission. It isn't by becoming a demon slayer or having a bunch of supernatural spiritual gifts. It is in the block & tackle of taking the Gospel of Jesus Christ into the world.

- The LORD's Team: Jesus selected you & me to be on 'Team Jesus.' That we are a 'team' implies we have responsibility for something. Now, we all know that isn't our salvation. Only Jesus our Messiah could accomplish that. But He told us what we can do as part of the team. It's the Great Commission, again (Mat 28:16-20).
- The LORD's Plan: If we are important, & the LORD works through us to accomplish His mission, & the mission is to find the others – the elect (the LORD's chosen) - & bring them into the Family of God, which defeats the enemy, satisfies our responsibility, & ultimately is the way all glory will be given to the Most High God... Shouldn't we be on board with that?

### **Identity of the Two Witnesses**

I'll break this down quickly:

1. God uses two witnesses to satisfy His own law (Deut 19:15-21).
2. Zechariah sees the olive trees & lamp stands (Zech 4:1-3).
3. The Angel defines the olive trees as two people or groups of people (Zech 4:11-14).
4. Jeremiah defines the olive tree as Israel (the Jewish people, a group) (Jer 11:16).
5. Paul defines the olive tree as the root of Israel (Rom 11:18).
6. Paul explains the Gentiles are grafted in, supported by the root (Rom 11:17).
7. Paul again on the grafting in of Gentiles as the wild olive tree (Rom 11:23-24).
8. Paul & the hardening of Jewish hearts to allow Gentiles to come in (Rom 11:25-26).
9. John has a vision of the seven golden lamp stands (Rev 1:12,20).
10. John sees the coming of the two witnesses (Rev 11:3-6).
11. The Angel: olive trees & lamp stands, those that stand before the Lord (Rev 11:4).
12. God brings His Spirit on mankind in the last days (Acts 2:17-20; Joel 2:28-29).
13. Signs of the two witnesses agree with what John sees in Revelation (Acts 2:19-20).
14. The LORD uses us to push back His enemies (Ps 44:5).
15. Jesus knows who will receive His free gift –the elect who receive His gift (Jn 6:64).
16. We search for these elect who will follow Jesus (Mat 28:16-20)
17. Paul teaches that God's peace will crush Satan under our feet! (Rom 16:20).
18. Paul teaches to put on the full armor of God to withstand in the evil day (Eph 6:13).
19. Jesus tells us the Tribulation is coming (Mat 24:21).
20. Jesus says survivors who preach the Gospel to the end are saved (Mat 24:13-14).
21. Paul teaches those alive & left, will meet Jesus in the clouds (1 Thess 4:16-17).

But don't take my word for it. Use these as a starting point in your own Bible study. Take this to the LORD & let the Holy Spirit guide you. He is the most trustable source.

A book could probably be written about this, & probably has. But the above is a quick scriptural theorem that outlines how to go from the metaphorical prophecy, to how the two witnesses are us (believing Jews & Gentiles), & how the LORD will use us. If you've ever dreamed about the game-winning shot, getting the award, promotion, raise, recognition, or anything else in our natural life, the good news is that we get to participate with the LORD in the ultimate conquering of the enemy. Not because He needs us, but because He wants to work through us in partnership.

### **The LORD's Plan Accomplished**

There is already evidence of the Jewish reawakening starting to happen. I'm not surprised by this, because they are the root we are grafted into. This must start happening prior to the last week & continue into it. During the first half of the last week both the reawakened Jews & Gentiles will be ministering the Gospel of Christ Jesus. As this happens, more Jews will reawaken & more Gentiles will come to the Lord. As a dual offensive, the LORD's plan will be accomplished – the fullness of the Gentiles coming in & the reawakening of Israel who will repent of their corporate sin & cry for their Messiah, Yeshua!

### **Power & Behavior of the Two Witnesses**

From the perspective of a modern mind, we might put too much stock in super powers. The truth is that the Holy Spirit will be the one working through us to manifest these signs & wonders. And for good cause, because they will be proof points that activate the faith in yet-to-be-believers & bring them into the family. Our faith is really His faith active in us, & as we relax into that by humbling ourselves the manifestation of His Power & His Glory will put the LORD on display – not us.

Nonetheless, this will be pretty awesome! The LORD grants authority to the two witnesses who can work these wonders because we are in alignment with Him, working for His Kingdom. None will be able to withstand this Power because they are not on the LORD's side – we are. Recall Joshua 5:13-15! Attack on the two witnesses is only successful when the LORD allows Satan (Azazel) the authority to overpower us.

In Acts 2 – Peter's sermon on the day of Pentecost:

“17 'And it shall be in the last days, God declares, that I will pour out my Spirit on all flesh, and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams; 18 even on my male servants and female servants [we are His bond servants] in those days I will pour out my Spirit, and they shall prophesy. 19 And I will show wonders in the heavens above and signs on the earth below, blood, and fire, and vapor of smoke; 20 the sun shall be turned to darkness and the moon to blood, before the day of the Lord comes, the great and magnificent day.”

– Acts 2:17-20

In Revelation 11 – the Authority of the Two Witnesses:

“3 And I will grant authority to my two witnesses, and they will prophesy for 1,260 days [3½ years], clothed in sackcloth [repentance]. 4 These are the two olive trees and the two lampstands that stand before the Lord of the earth [clearly the Lord's church of Messianic Jews & church of the Gentiles]. 5 And if anyone would harm them, fire [Truth of the LORD] pours from their mouth and consumes their foes. If anyone would harm them, this is how he is doomed to be killed. 6 They have the power to shut the sky, that no rain may fall during the days of their prophesying, and they have power over the waters to turn them into blood and to strike the earth with every kind of plague, as often as they desire.”

– Revelation 11:3-6

## Full Spiritual Armor Needed

### Jesus Works Through Us

Jesus suffered, & we suffer with Him as He works through us – especially in these last days as we seek out the elect.

Can you name all the pieces of the Spiritual Armor from memory? Try to write them down as a fun exercise.

### The Cultural Acceleration

Knowing who we are in Christ Jesus is the key to dealing with hard & difficult situations today. As we enter increasing tribulation on the earth these things will continue to be more difficult. Think back to February or early March of 2020. Was COVID-19 on your radar? Did you anticipate how quickly the world would become a shelter in place, socially distanced, work from home, culture of fear & panic? I didn't, & I don't think many people did. But it overtook the world in record time. We can debate the actual danger, but setting that aside, the global response was fantastically quick.

Rate of cultural & informational distribution is a relevant component to understanding today, as well as the Great Tribulation. Remember, the only One who is all places at all times is the LORD Himself. That means that Satan (Azazel) & his horde have the limitation of being where they are. Yet, to operate a global tyranny they will require the tools to do so. Let's consider the following as examples:

### Pandemics

The first pandemic of bubonic plague started as early as 1346, & didn't reach all of the Mediterranean & Europe until as late as 1351. That's 6-7 years to cover the continent. COVID-19 was global in less than three months.

### Speed of Travel

The speed of culture has been the speed of boat & horse since pre-history. As recently as the 1950s global travel was still by boat for most. That accelerated in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century with the general availability of the automobile & airplane.

### Light Speed Information

Information, products, disease, & culture has depended on the mobility of people. We have never been more mobile. And while a person can get nearly anywhere in about a day, information travels at the speed of light from device to device through the internet.

### Call to Come Out

The Bible teaches us to come out of this world (2 Cor 6:17; Jm 4:4; Rom 12:2; Rev 18:4). Consider the following, 1 John 2:

“15 Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. 16 For all that is in the world – the desires of the flesh and the desires of the eyes and pride of life – is not from the Father but is from the world. 17 And the world is passing away along with its desires, but whoever does the will of God abides forever.”

– 1 John 2:15-17

Are we reaching for the LORD, or reaching for creation, in the things we do every day?

### **The Spiritual Armor**

Let's step through what Paul teaches in light of the spiritual world view. Ephesians chapter 6, Paul teaches:

“10 Finally, be strong in the Lord and in the strength of his might. 11 Put on the whole armor of God, that you may be able to stand against the schemes of the devil. 12 For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the cosmic powers over this present darkness, against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly places.”

– Ephesians 6:10-12

Having looked at the rebellions & the falls. The creation of the Nephilim, & the resulting unclean spirits (demons). The administrative authorities placed by the LORD over the disinherited nations & their ultimate rebellion. Knowing that these are under the authority of Satan (Azazel) based on how he can legitimately offer the nations to Jesus in the wilderness as a temptation. We've unpacked quite a lot that goes to answering the seemingly simple question, 'who are the bad guys.' Paul leaves no question. These bad guys are cosmic powers & spiritual forces. Even if we interpret their influence over evil people, it does not absolve human sin or displace the culpable participation with the evil. But Paul is telling us directly that we do not wrestle against flesh & blood – people – but spirits in rebellion that are evil. These guys have been around for at least many thousands of years, they are not stupid, & we absolutely need all of the Spiritual Armor the LORD gives us to have a chance.

“13 Therefore take up the whole armor of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand firm” (Eph 6:13).

There is an interesting duality of prophecy happening here in verse thirteen. The 'evil day' can mean any day that we face (the evil of the day), or a particularly evil day. But it also implies that there is a particularly evil day coming. While there have been many horrific & terrible times looking forward from the time of Paul, we get the answer from Jesus Himself in Matthew 24 where He teaches, “For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been from the beginning of the world until now, no, and never will be” (Mat 24:21). In other words, we are preparing to stand on the Rock, the truth of Jesus, even to the point of our death.

### **Ephesians 6**

“14 Stand therefore, having fastened on the belt of truth,” (Eph 6:14a).

This is the truth of the LORD. We get that by studying the Holy Bible. As I've mentioned, this body of work is a reference guide intended to get you into the Bible itself. I did this to accelerate my learning, & it's made available to others to help accelerate the learning of the Body of Christ, put on my heart by the Holy Spirit. We NEED to understand the Truth so we can stand.

“...and having put on the breastplate of righteousness” (Eph 6:14b).

It's amazing what the Blood of Christ does for us isn't it? I can't raise Holy hands in praise on my own, because they are filthy rags of sin & iniquity. But the Blood of Christ makes us white as snow! Know Child of God that He sees you as His! He paid for you! No matter what, if you keep stepping to Him, He will run to you! We are righteous in His sight, because of what He did for us! Praise the LORD!

“15 ...and, as shoes for your feet, having put on the readiness given by the gospel of peace” (Eph 6:15).

I always think of Joseph running from Potiphar's wife (Gen 39:11-12). We should exercise good judgement. We should want the LORD to win in our lives. Sin is pleasurable for a time, but it is the path to destruction.

## §8: Commentaries About the Future: Full Spiritual Armor Needed

“16 In all circumstances take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming darts of the evil one;” (Eph 6:16).

I think about Jesus, using the Word of God to defeat the temptations in the wilderness. He trusted the Father & the Father’s plan, & this trust is faith. We know that we too wander the wilderness, strangers in this world that hates the LORD & hates us. The enemy wants to tempt us into submission, & slow down our Great Commission.

“17 ...and take the helmet of salvation,” (Eph 6:17a).

Know that we have been saved through the work of Christ Jesus on the cross. We belong to Him. We should take our journey of edification seriously to learn who we are & who we can become in Jesus. We think about ‘career pathing,’ what about ‘relationship pathing’ with Jesus! He already did the Salvation work, so let’s do what we need to do to develop as we become conformed to the Character of Christ. Knowing that in Him we are a Child of God, the enemy has no case against us, & that we are powerful as His Power works through us.

“...and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God” (Eph 6:17b).

Knowing our Bible is critical. I don’t quote chapter & verse, but the LORD works with me in understanding the concepts, the ‘Spirit that undergirds’ these things. Nonetheless, memorization of Scripture is important & should be developed as part of our regular studies so we are not caught off point like Eve was in Eden (Gen 3:3).

“18 ...praying at all times in the Spirit, with all prayer and supplication” (Eph 6:18a).

I believe Paul is talking about prayer in heavenly tongues, as he teaches in 1 Corinthians 14:18, “I thank God that I speak in tongues more than all of you.” It isn’t about being a ‘varsity Christian,’ but about welcoming the Power & Presence of the Holy Spirit of the LORD. Regardless, we should all pray, & seek to press into Him.

“To that end, keep alert with all perseverance, making supplication for all the saints” (Eph 6:18b).

Team, we have been allowed to participate in a war that has been raging, but that the LORD allows so we can learn to trust Him & be developed. We wouldn’t take a “one day a week” approach to a battlefield in the natural. We should take even more seriously the spiritual battlefield unfolding all around us by putting on every piece of Spiritual Armor at our disposal.

## The Elect

### Who Are the Elect?

You may have heard this term before, or read it in the Bible depending on your translation. Some translations use the term 'chosen.' The term 'elect' is familiar to us in democratic governments when we talk about those elected to public office. In the context of the Bible, the elect are those selected by the LORD.

In church you hear terms like believers, followers, faithful, parishioners, Christians, etc. While these are true descriptions, all of these start with us & reflect our faith or behavior. The difference with the terms 'elect' or 'chosen' is that they start with the LORD & imply a choosing of us by Him.

### The Elect are the Chosen

Jesus tells us that “**many are called, but few are chosen**” (Mat 22:14). Paul unpacks this a bit more in his second letter to Timothy where he teaches:

“8 ...do not be ashamed of the testimony about our Lord, nor of me his prisoner, but share in suffering for the gospel by the power of God, 9 who saved us and called us to a holy calling, not because of our works but because of his own purpose and grace, which he gave us in Christ Jesus before the ages began...”

– 2 Timothy 1:8-9

There are two key take-aways here. First, that many are called but few chosen. This is also underscored by the 'eye of the needle' parable by Jesus (Mat 19:24). This is generally understood by many, & is appealing even in our human 'us versus them' nature – because we view ourselves as 'us' & the lost or people we don't love as 'them.' However, the elect adopt an 'us, but reach them' attitude. This leads us to the second point.

### The Elect Serve

The second point is that the elect serve the Kingdom. Service is a fruit demonstrated by the elect. The letters to the seven churches in Revelation chapters 2 & 3 should motivate action. In the teaching by Paul above he tells us to 'share in the suffering for the gospel.' The Salvation Grace is irrevocable, & we are not judged by our works. Nonetheless, the LORD very clearly expects us to work for the Kingdom of God because of or out of our love for Him who saved us.

To make our faith even a second priority should be alarming & ever follower of Jesus should go to Him for direction about this. Even so, we can look at what Jesus has John write to His church in the second & chapters of Revelation as a mirror to our own lives. How do we make our workplace our mission field? How do we serve at our local church? How do we dive deeper into edification through Bible study, prayer, & praise? How do we go the second mile to reach the yet-to-be-found elect?

### They are in the Great Tribulation

Jesus tells us that the length of the Great Tribulation will be cut short because of the elect, & if it were not no humans will survive (Mat 24:22; Mk 13:20). This directly tells us that followers of Jesus who have been chosen – the elect – are around during the Great Tribulation & working for the Kingdom of God to find the remaining elect.

Jesus also explains that people will survive the last hour of the Great Tribulation. This seems incredible given the descriptions of the events. However, the LORD has Mercy for His Children, who are the elect. The outcome of this will be the separation of the sheep (elect) & goats (not-elect) (Mat 25:31-34). Combine this with the parable of the wheat (elect) & the tares (not-elect) where Jesus says, “**Let both grow together until the harvest, and at harvest time I will tell the reapers, 'Gather the weeds first and bind them in bundles to be burned, but gather the wheat into my barn'”** (Mat 13:30).

Another example can be seen when Jesus is talking privately to Peter, James, John, & Andrew (Mk 13:3-4). In other words, He was teaching plainly. He wasn't using parable, prophetic metaphor, or skipping back & forth in time, but giving a straight forward account of things. If we move down the chapter, Jesus teaches:

**“24 But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, 25 and the stars will be falling from heaven, and the powers in the heavens will be shaken. 26 And then they will see the Son of Man coming in clouds with great power and glory. 27 And then he will send out the angels and gather his elect from the four winds, from the ends of the earth to the ends of heaven.”**

– Mark 13:24-27

The good news for the elect is that His Mercy saves us for eternity, & also protects us from the outpouring of the Wrath of God. We will be gathered like wheat & put into the Lord's barn, spared from the fate of all the rebellious spirits & non-believing people. We will go through suffering, but He is with us until the end of the age (Mat 28:20)! Praise Jesus!

### **Satan Seeks to Deceive, Even the Elect**

Jesus taught about the deception of the enemy. This aligns with the enemy's 'delay & stay' strategy, because the longer he can delay the fullness of the Gentiles from coming in, the longer he remains.

**“24 For false christs and false prophets will arise and perform great signs and wonders, so as to lead astray, if possible, even the elect. 25 I have told you beforehand. 26 So, if they say to you, 'look, he is in the wilderness,' do not go out. If they say, 'Look, he is in the inner rooms,' do not believe it. 27 For as the lightning comes from the east and shines as far as the west, so will be the coming of the Son of Man. 28 Wherever the corpse is, there the vultures will gather.”**

– Matthew 24:24-28

In games & war there is offence & defense. If our faith is not in the primary position of our lives we may not think in these terms. But there are ways to identify & respond to all situations in the Character of Christ. Developing the qualities of His character builds a strong offense, & discernment a strong defense. But the use of offense & defense in a Godly sense is counterintuitive to how we use these in a natural sense.

### **Clothed in His Character – Offense**

In his letter to the Colossians Paul teaches:

**“12 Put on then, as God's chosen ones, holy and beloved, compassionate hearts, kindness, humility, meekness, and patience, 13 bearing with one another and, if one has a complaint against another, forgiving each other; as the Lord has forgiven you, so you also must forgive. 14 And above all these put on love, which binds everything together in perfect harmony. 15 And let the peace of Christ rule in your hearts, to which indeed you were called in one body. And be thankful. 16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly, teaching and admonishing one another in all wisdom, singing psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, with thankfulness in your hearts to God. 17 And whatever you do, in word or deed, do everything in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him.”**

– Colossians 3:12-17



This teaching by Paul should be impactful for every follower of Jesus, because it centers on our behavior. Notice what he didn't say. That we are better because of which church we go to, which translation we use, how we were baptized, whether we speak in tongues, or any of that. The church should be a place for us to practice & develop our character for use as we go out into the world, not just a place we go on Sunday. Developing the peace of Christ which is to rule in our hearts is an outcome of practicing these things. Descriptions like compassion & kindness may not sound like the offensive line we typically think of, but this is how the Spirit of God works through us into situations.

**Do Not Be Conformed to the World – Defense**

“The more the world loves it, the less it looks like Jesus” - Pastor Mark Driscoll

Let's go to Paul again:

“1 I appeal to you therefore, brothers, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies as a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable to God, which is your spiritual worship. 2 Do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewal of your mind, that by testing you may discern what is the will of God, what is good and acceptable and perfect.”

– Romans 12:1-2

The gentleness of love demonstrated by how we live shows the world that we have an inner peace, even in times of trouble. Our peace is in the midst of the storm, not apart from it. This supernatural peace comes from Jesus. As our desires are conformed to His, He draws us away from the things of this world. A question we can ask about anything in our life is whether it causes us to reach for Him, or reach for creation. When we worship creation over the Creator it separates us from the LORD.

When we declare the goodness & mercy of God (1 Pt 2:9-10) we are active & engaged in the Great Commission mission given by King Jesus. Let's not be ashamed or afraid or concerned about the judgement of others. Let's be bold in our ministry for the Gospel. Let's let the waves of the sea break against us because the Rock is within us! Let's find those left to be found & bring them into the Kingdom as the first responders in the human army of the LORD! He may not need us, but He wants us, & He works through us! Praise Jesus!

**What's Coming for the Elect**

Brothers & sisters, we will follow the King on His return & march into Jerusalem! (Rev 17:14) We will witness Him take His Throne! We will worship Him there soon! We will live in His presence & be allowed to partner with Him in the Millennial Kingdom, then forever more in the Eternal Kingdom! The Mercy & Grace of the LORD is great.

Praise the LORD!

## The Wicked Get Worse

### Condition of the World

It is possible to point to any point in known history & identify a tumultuous state of affairs. In recent times studies have been put forward that show recent times to have less violent crime, less war, the success of human peace keeping efforts, & so on. While the data may be there to support these reports, I think it is worth evaluating the current condition of humanity at a global scale through a different lens.

In times leading up until recent, separation of people meant separation of cultural standards with moral & ethical principles which generally speaking were different from one another. Conflicts that arose between these diverse groups stemmed from economic, geographic, political, or ideological conquest – or some blend of all of these. In most cases, these involved war with a literal occupation of land. This led to a state of oppressor subjugating the oppressed.

With the advent of recorded & portable media, many of the things we take for granted now, the value-based homogenization of the globe has been underway. Innocuous examples can be found, from the exporting of burger chains & coffee shops to a desire for apparel worn by the people in the movies. The United States has been a major exporter of this new global culture. However, today we see contributions from Europe, Asia, & others. The concept of ‘the mixing pot’ attributed to immigration waves of people coming to the United States is now occurring globally. For many this feels like progress, innovation, & the development of the human species. However, the values of mankind are becoming increasingly separated from Godly values.

While war & violent crime may be down in one sense, people have become more hateful to one another. Even the term ‘tolerance’ has been redefined to allow for those who don’t agree with a vocal minority to be classified as ‘intolerant.’ Moreover, the anonymity afforded by things like the internet & social media apps has bled over into daily human behavior between real people.

A full cultural assessment is probably a book by itself & beyond the scope of the focus here. However, it is interesting that while people are being molded into a more worldly version of cultural consistency, division abounds as a subcurrent. While the Body of Christ has been called to come out of this world, living in it yet apart from it is a difficult paradox to navigate.

Growing up I remember singing the hymn “They’ll Know We Are Christians by Our Love.” The lyrics are:

We are one in the Spirit, we are one in the Lord  
And we pray that our unity will one day be restored  
And they’ll know we are Christians by our love, by our love  
We will work with each other, we will work side by side  
And we’ll guard each man’s dignity and save each man’s pride  
And they’ll know we are Christians by our love, by our love  
Yeah, they’ll know we are Christians by our love

I’m not saying that Christians have lost their way, but I don’t know if I could necessarily identify one on the street. An Orthodox Jew, sure. A Buddhist monk, of course. But are we clothing ourselves in love? This is a challenge for myself, because a critical piece of following Jesus is growing in our ability to love each other with His Divine Love.

As part of that personal challenge, I’ll tell you that I’d love to see every person be found by Christ Jesus. I’d love to see every person avoid the eternal Lake of Fire. The LORD’s plan is so very good. My personal gain & satisfaction is nothing compared to the free gift He offers. I’m not just talking about Salvation here, but entry into the Millennial & Eternal Kingdom where no accursed thing will exist (Rev 22:3).

### **Depraved Minds of all Types**

Paul talks about how the LORD has given some over to depraved minds (Rom 1:28). Paul also talks about a brother that rejected the teaching of the LORD & was given over to Satan (1 Cor 5:5). There are many other examples, but the reality is that mankind has drifted away from the LORD & is running toward an apostate condition.

While we all deal with our areas of weakness, to accept & legalize them is to say that the values of man are above the values of the LORD. It harkens back to the five 'I wills' of Lucifer (Satan, Azazel) who sought to make himself 'like the Most High.' As people, we've made it easier & easier to remove the LORD from our daily lives.

While many openly reject the LORD, as the Body of Christ we must be alert with our Spiritual Armor on to guard against & develop in Him for our own protection.

### **Dealing With a Depraved World**

Loving Kindness, Jesus is the example.

Heiser makes a good point that contextually applies to this body of work. People get excited about casting out demons & other things we think of as spiritual warfare. But if you really want the enemy to have a bad day, take the Gospel to the world.

If something gets you bent, or there are situations you can't deal with, then find another way. But the LORD equips us all to go out into the world in our own way. Getting people in the Body of Christ to serve at their church is difficult enough. The church should be preparing us to go into the world. It should be a safe place to practice how to love others.

If we look at what Jesus did. And after Him, what the apostles did. And after them what the members of the early church did. As Paul writes, "follow my example, as I follow the example of Christ" (1 Cor 11:1). More recently I've served with evangelists who say that it is really hard to get people to remain out there evangelizing the Gospel. It is a situationally awkward position to be in & also an under-taught discipline. Learning how to have a soft touch with people, even when they are hard & combative with you... it takes practice.

I don't worry too much about what people think about me anymore. I'm fine being laughed at & thought less of, because what the LORD thinks of me is more important to me. That doesn't make me better, it just makes me willing. I pray for more people willing to serve the Lord Jesus in His Ministry.

### **During the Tribulation**

I can only imagine that the followers during the Great Tribulation will need supernatural strengthening from the LORD. I think this, because when I'm evangelizing the Gospel, I wonder what kind of amazing statement it would be for hundreds of Christians to show up at once to minister. What type of impact that would make today?

During the Tribulation it will become increasingly difficult. This is one of the reasons why I've come to think that the followers being edified today will be needed on earth to find the elect in the last days.

I heard a pastor recently make a point that it isn't about where Peter started, or even where he was when he denied Christ three times, but the level of faith that he had when he (Peter) was crucified. That level of apocalyptic faith doesn't just happen. I'm working my way there too, & I pray I'm ready when the time comes.

Whether it is now or during the Great Tribulation it all boils down to the same thing. Love people, minister the Gospel to them, let Jesus finish the job, & let them decide.

**We Know the End**

Something that strengthens me is that we know the end. The Bible has been translated into nearly every language on earth, & there are groups actively working toward that. The accessibility of the Gospel of Christ Jesus has never been greater. People can know if they want to know. It's available. It's their choice. Our job is to be a sign of sorts that this is something they should consider, then let Jesus take it from there.

The end of this world will be terrible unfathomable destruction. But it will be followed by incomprehensible restoration in the Power & Presence of the LORD. While those who are wicked are doubling down on their iniquity, hardening their own hearts, it is important for us to pray to soften our souls & allow the Holy Spirit to work through us.

Followers of Jesus will participate in the first resurrection. We will participate in the Millennial Kingdom. We will be reunited with loved ones who believed, & get to meet other brothers & sisters throughout the ages. And best of all, we will be in the Presence of King Jesus. It will be incredible.

Unbelievers will be contained to the Pit. They will participate in the second resurrection, face the LORD at the Great White Throne Judgement, be judged based on their works compared to the infinite standard set by Jesus, & cast into the Lake of Fire.

Children of God will then move into the Eternal Kingdom, where we will experience eternity with the LORD. These things are too quickly abridged in saying 'we go to heaven.' The truth is so much better & interesting.

## Seals & Trumpets & Bowls

### What We Can Agree On

Before we get wrapped around the axel on this, let's take a step back to agree on a few things.

First, the Bible tells us about these because they happen. As followers of Jesus, our Heavenly Father wants us to be aware that times of trouble will come.

Second, the only one worthy to open the seals is Jesus Christ, because He went through the cross & resurrection to gain authority under the Divine Law of the LORD. The implication here is that the seals could only be opened after this event.

Third, there are many interpretations on the sequencing of these events. The two main views break down like this. Either they are sequential & in order – seven seals, followed by seven trumpets, followed by seven bowls. Or they concur, where the first seal, trumpet, & bowl happen at the same time, followed by the second of each, & so on. I've depicted the flow to reflect something like the former, but I don't think it's quite that simple, & will pick this up in a bit.

Fourth, the outpouring of the Wrath of the LORD is at the very end. Either way you structure it, the great city of Babylon (the whole earth in rebellion) is made to drain the stored anger of the LORD.

Fifth, regardless of when you think Jesus will meet us in the clouds, it will precede this event. The Wrath of the LORD is not for His Children. He did not pay for us with His blood, only to pour out His Wrath on us. This is for all those who have rejected Him.

### Why These Are Hard to Understand

It is possible that some of the descriptions overlap, while others do not. The LORD knows, & our responsibility is to trust Him with the plan, not fight amongst ourselves about our interpretations.

Let's look at an example where we do know the answer. In the NKJV translation of Genesis 3 it reads, "And I [the LORD] will put enmity [contention] between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel" (Gen 3:15 NKJV). We know this is talking about Jesus. But even more, it is the first prophecy of the virgin birth. In the language of the OT 'seed' came from the man. But here we see that the LORD prophesies 'her Seed.' Note that it is capitalized, indicating divinity. We could do a deeper dive into the original language, but this is sufficient to make the point.

It isn't like the LORD doesn't reiterate this prophecy again. See Isaiah 7:14 for instance. What is hard for us to understand through these oblique & weird prophecies is also hard for the enemy to understand. Again, looking at the Genesis 3:15 prophecy, the LORD let the Serpent know he would hurt Him to serve the purpose of the LORD, but the LORD would destroy the Serpent who is His enemy in order for the Father to redeem His Children.

The upshot here is that we can wrestle with & debate these topics. But it is counterproductive to the Glory of God to fight & create enmity between ourselves over them. That only gives the Serpent the opportunity to destroy us, so let's agree to disagree on some of these as we learn together.

### **Things We Can Disagree On**

**First Four Seals Timing:** I depicted the first four seals as starting & being active during the Dispensation of Grace. This is counter to a viewpoint that all of the seals, trumpets, & bowls happen during the Great Tribulation. However, the churches John writes to in Chapters 2 & 3 of Revelation are already in the world, so it seems that other parts of this book could also be so.

**Event Overlap:** Each of these things could be unique events. Although, there could be some overlap. For instance, I've depicted the seventh bowl & the harvest of the wicked as different descriptions of the same thing or happening at the same time. What is more, is that while these are delineated cleanly in the flow, it is possible that two or more descriptions could overlap with one another. What overlaps with what is interesting, a difficult puzzle to put together, but ultimately doesn't matter all that much. This is not something we should use to build dogma or fight about. Trust the LORD, know that hard times are coming, & develop in His Character – He has you in the palm of His hand.

**Proximity to Tribulation:** I've drawn a case that depicts the Great Tribulation as happening soon. If you ask me, I think this is what we are facing. Even if it isn't, we should be inspired to live our lives like the return of our LORD is eminent. Nonetheless, I think the LORD has described the seasons in the Bible so that we will know & will be prepared & so we will be inspired to participate in the Great Commission by seeking out the elect.

**The World is Crazy:** Generally, we've all heard people say recently that 'the world has gone crazy,' that 'we need to get back to a new normal.' I believe these globalized shifts in culture are evidence of the restraint of the LORD being pulled back. I believe the apostasy of the church has been underway & is accelerating. I believe what feels 'normal' to us today is quite abnormal from the LORD's perspective. There are too many examples to list. I don't believe that followers of Jesus should be getting back to a 'new \*worldly\* normal,' but should be coming out of this world as the Bible tells us to do. This type of edification requires work & personal shifts to align with Him. We cannot align to both the world **AND** the LORD. I believe the world can go crazy & drink the Wrath of the LORD. Let's find the elect while we are here.

**Believers in the Tribulation:** This is a polarizing topic, & I don't really understand why. If you believe in a 'pre-Trib rapture' I'm fine with that. In my studies I've come to believe that Jewish & Gentile followers of Jesus continue to work until the fullness of the Gentiles comes in. In the flow I represent believers as going into the Great Tribulation. If you disagree with me, consider it a conservative perspective that 'plans for the worst, hopes for the best,' & pray for those who will be on the field working for Christ Jesus during that time. The Bible is clear, **SOME** believers absolutely will be on earth during that time, so let's appreciate the gravity of that.

**Judgement for This Age:** The interpretation of this affects the other positions. If the Great Tribulation is the Judgement of the LORD, then it is not meant for His Children. If the seven bowls of God's Wrath are the Judgement of the LORD, not just the last part of it, then the part of the Great Tribulation leading up to this would be the removal of the restraint of the LORD, & explains the presence of followers of Jesus on the earth at that time.

### Dealing With Defining the Judgement

My own struggle with this forced me to look into all this deeper. Feel free to disagree with me, but to sum up my path in trying to understand the Bible on this point:

- That the LORD is the same yesterday today & tomorrow, His consistency is assured.
- Cycles of dispensations evidence themselves with regular steps in the Bible.
- Each dispensation has a period of the LORD's Judgement.
- This is always followed by the LORD personally setting up success in the next.
- But the LORD always saves His people through His Judgement.
  - Adam & Eve are not killed, but given clothes & taught to survive outside of Eden.
  - Noah rides the arc through the flood, not lifted up & set down on the other side.
  - Humanity at Babel is disinherited, but the LORD calls Abraham from the Chaldeans.
  - Jews in Egypt see the plagues, follow the LORD, & walk through the Red Sea.
  - Jesus stops the clock at the cross so followers of His church can find the elect.
- At no point did the LORD evacuate His people to sit on the sideline.
- At no point did the LORD deal with the wicked in the absence of His followers.
- In every period of Judgement, the LORD requires His people to trust Him.
- Every time His people are expected to follow & trust, & in trust follow Him.

Jesus puts it this way in Matthew:

“24b ‘...the kingdom of heaven may be compared to a man who sowed a good seed in his field, 25 but while his men were sleeping, his enemy came and sowed weeds among the wheat and went away. 26 So when the plants came up and bore grain, then the weeds appeared also. 27 And the servants of the master of the house came and said to him, ‘Master, did you not sow good seed in your field? How then does it have weeds?’ 28 He said to them, ‘An enemy has done this.’ So the servants said to him, ‘Then do you want us to go and gather them?’ 29 But he said, No, lest in gathering the weeds you root up the wheat along with them. 30 Let both grow together until the harvest, and at harvest time I will tell the reapers, ‘Gather the weeds first and bind them in bundles to be burned, but gather the wheat into my barn.’”

– Matthew 13:24b-30

Something that stands out to me is the ‘harvest’ language in verse 30. This same language shows up in Revelation 14:14-20. The harvest of righteous & the harvest of the wicked appear to occur in close proximity to one another. How the LORD accomplishes this is something He knows, & it is for us to trust. But my suspicion is that they are not temporally divided by many years, but at nearly the same time, which is to say, the bowls of Judgement & the harvest of the wicked are the same. This would mean that the harvest of the righteous immediately precedes this in the second half of the last week of this dispensation.

## The Cup of Wrath of the LORD

### **What is the Cup of Wrath**

In Revelation 14 the Angel announces, “9 If anyone worships the beast and its image and receives a mark on his forehead or on his hand, 10 he will drink the wine of God’s wrath, poured full strength into the cup of his anger...” (Rev 14:9-10)

In Revelation 16 it reads:

“The great city [earth] was split into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell, and God remembered Babylon the great, to make her drain the cup of the wine of the fury of his wrath. And every island [literal & powerful person] fled away, and no mountains [literal & kings / government & military leaders] were to be found.”

– Revelation 16:19

In Revelation 14 it reads:

“17 Then another angel came out of the temple in heaven, and he too had a sharp sickle. 18 And another angel came out from the altar, the angel who has authority over the fire, and he called with a loud voice to the one who had the sharp sickle, ‘Put in your sickle and gather the clusters from the vine of the earth, for its grapes are ripe.’ 19 So the angel swung his sickle across the earth and gathered the grape harvest of the earth and threw it into the great winepress of the wrath of God. 20 And the winepress was trodden outside the city, and blood flowed from the winepress, as high as a horse’s bridle, for 1,600 stadia.”

– Revelation 14:17-20

There is a lot of prophetic metaphor going on in these verses which by any standard are pretty gruesome. Yet the LORD includes these descriptions in the Bible so that we can be aware of what is to come. So that people who contemplate these things know the reality of the fierce anger of the LORD.

### **Comparison to the Seven Bowls**

The first three bowls affect people, the sea, & the land. It is reminiscent of the Genesis creation story in Genesis 1 & 2. There the LORD made the environments, then placed mankind within it to have dominion over it. Here the LORD brings judgment on rebellious mankind followed by the natural environment:

- 409. First bowl: Harmful & painful sores come on the people who bore the mark of the beast & worshiped its image (Rev 16:2).
- 411. Second bowl: The sea became like blood, & everything in it died (Rev 16:3).
- 413. Third bowl: The rivers & springs of water became blood (Rev 16:4).

The fourth bowl uses the natural environment to torment the rebellious humanity. First from above:

- 415. Fourth bowl: The sun is allowed to scorch people with fire (Rev 16:8).
- 416. Fourth bowl: People are scorched by the fierce heat of the sun, & curse the name of God who had power over these plagues. They do not repent & give Him glory (Rev16:9).

Then from below:

- 417. Fourth bowl: The poles of the earth reverse (Is 24:1 KJV, ASV). This happens at the same time the people of the earth are scorched by the sun to suffer for their sin (Is 24:6).
- 418. Fourth bowl: People experience vertigo & sickness. All joy has grown dark, & gladness is banished. Desolation is left in the city (the earth) (Is 24).



The LORD has not forgotten the rebellion of the angels. The fifth bowl addresses the rebellious horde & its leader Satan (Azazel). It also affects humanity who made Satan their king receive Judgement as well.

- 420. Fifth bowl: The bowl is poured out on the throne of the beast, & its kingdom is plunged into darkness (Rev 16:10). This darkness may be spiritual, as the enemy is thrown into confusion.
- 421. Fifth bowl: The darkness may also be a literal darkness on earth (Rev 16:10).
- 422. Fifth bowl: People gnaw their tongues in anguish & curse the LORD for their pain & sores. They do not repent of their deeds (Rev 16:10-11). This likely indicates a spiritual darkness over all people in the kingdom of the enemy.

The sixth bowl makes way for the enemy to prepare for what it believes will be a battle with the LORD. Popular culture has both misinterpreted & glorified the idea of a battle at Armageddon (Har Megiddo). This is the prophesied meeting place of the armies of the enemy, but not the location for a battle, which will take place at Jerusalem.

424. Sixth bowl: The water of the great river Euphrates is dried up to prepare a way for the kings from the east (Rev 16:12).

425. Sixth bowl: Demonic spirits come out of the mouth of the dragon, beast, & false prophet, described as unclean spirits like frogs (Rev 16:13-14).

426. Sixth bowl: Demonic frog spirits recruit the kings (governmental & military leaders) of the whole world to do battle against the Almighty LORD (Rev 16:14).

427. Sixth bowl: The 'kings from the east' assemble at the "Hill of Megiddo," Armageddon, in Israel (Rev 16:16).

The seventh bowl has the LORD going to war with His enemies. This involves the mortal destruction of rebellious humanity & the casting of all rebels (human & spiritual) 'outside the city' or into spiritual prison (the Pit) to be held until the Great White Throne Judgement. Because the harvest of the wicked in Revelation 14:17-20 has an echo of the same, my interpretation is that these are two depictions of the same event. In both cases – the seventh bowl & the harvest of the wicked – the utter destruction at the Hand of the LORD is incomprehensible.

- 431. Seventh bowl, harvest of the wicked: No literal island or mountain can be found (Rev 16:20).
- 432. Seventh bowl, harvest of the wicked: Islands (powerful people) & mountains (kings / governmental & military leaders) cannot be found (Rev 16:21).
- 433. Seventh bowl, harvest of the wicked: A great earthquake 'such as there had never been since man was on the earth, so great was that earthquake.' It splits the earth (the great city) into three parts. This is a massive earthquake (Rev 16:18-19).
- 434. Seventh bowl, harvest of the wicked: The cities of the nation's fall (Rev 16:19). Recall the nations from Babylon (Gen 10 & 11) made illegitimate by the New Covenant of Jesus (Mat 27-28).
- 435. Seventh bowl, harvest of the wicked: The LORD brings a plague against all who wage war with Him (Zech 14:12).
- 436. Seventh bowl, harvest of the wicked: Their flesh rots as they stand, eyes rot in sockets, tongues rot mouths. (Zech 14:12)
- 437. Seventh bowl, harvest of the wicked: Flashes of lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder (Rev 16:18).
- 438. Seventh bowl, harvest of the wicked: One-hundred-pound hailstones fall from the sky (Rev 16:21).
- 439. Seventh bowl, harvest of the wicked: The hail falls on people, & they curse God or the plague of the hail (Rev 16:21).

In box 450, as the seventh bowl is poured out, we see the men of the earth gather & go to war against the Most High. As the Anger of the LORD comes out, they are all thrown into the Pit; the rebellious angels, Satan, mankind, & the unclean spirits. The Antichrist & false prophet are thrown into the Lake of Fire. This downpour of Judgement is the winepress described, where the Lord Jesus smashes all of His enemies (Rev 14:17-20).

**Withheld From Children of God**

This is not for the Children of the LORD, who Jesus paid for with His Blood. No faithful interpretation of the end times events could posit that the LORD would both pay for us with His blood, & conversely outpour His rage on us. It doesn't stand to reason or agree with the Spirit. It's also why the harvest of the righteous & the harvest of the wicked are depicted as two different events.

That Jesus must separate the sheep & the goats as He is setting up His Millennial Kingdom seems to indicate that the Grace of the LORD is still active, & even during these last moments the LORD is still willing to receive those who turn to Him – Praise the LORD!

This final Judgement of our age is reserved for the enemies of the LORD. It is difficult to imagine how anyone would choose creation or the enemy over the LORD. Then again, we all struggle with sinful separation from the LORD, & we all look forward to being close to Him as we live in His presence.

“18 For thus says the LORD, who created the heavens (he is God!), who formed the earth and made it (he established it; he did not create it empty, he formed it to be inhabited!): ‘I am the LORD, and there is no other. 19 I did not speak in secret, in a land of darkness; I did not say to the offspring of Jacob, ‘Seek me in vain.’ I the LORD speak the truth; I declare what is right.”

– Isaiah 45:18-19

“1 Praise the LORD! Praise the LORD, O my soul! 2 I will praise the LORD as long as I live; I will sing praises to my God while I have my being. 3 Put not your trust in princes, in a son of man, in whom there is no salvation. 4 When his breath departs, he returns to earth; on that very day his plans perish. 5 Blessed is he whose help is the God of Jacob, whose hope is in the LORD his God, 6 who made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that is in them, who keeps faith forever; 7 who executes justice for the oppressed, who gives food to the hungry. 8 The LORD sets the prisoners free; the LORD opens the eyes of the blind. The LORD lifts up those who are bowed down; the LORD loves the righteous. 9 The LORD watches over the sojourners; he upholds the widow and the fatherless, but the way of the wicked he brings to ruin. 10 The LORD will reign forever, your God, O Zion, to all generations. Praise the LORD!”

– Psalm 146

## The Millennial Kingdom

### New Heaven, New Earth

Almost all of the Book of Revelation is covered in all the other books of the Bible. Except for the last two chapters. Something that is amazing about the LORD is how good His restorative power is. In the wake of the Great Tribulation & the outpouring of His Wrath, restoration is already in flight.

Followers of the LORD throughout the ages, & those who received Jesus as their Lord & Savior during the Dispensation of Grace now participate in the first resurrection. All of us will reign with Christ Jesus for a thousand years (Dan 12:2; Lk 14:14; Jn 5:29; 1 Cor 15:20; 1 Thess 4:16; Rev 20:4-6).

### Dealing with Time

The LORD created time for us to live within. But He is outside of time. One comparison to the timeline of mankind is like a river, & the LORD is above it looking down on us.

In another way, those whose body died throughout the ages considered 'sleeping' will feel as though they are instantaneously entering into this Millennial Kingdom. Paul describes this as putting on or being clothed in immortality. Another way to say this is that we will be in our glorified bodies.

This ability to conduct location & presence has actually been posited by physics, & is a necessary condition to the construct of reality. That the LORD can move through all dimensions because as an ultimate & creative authority has control of & design through these dimensions is difficult to understand yet relate to. Nonetheless, the LORD brings His Children through into the next dispensation as indestructible spirits equipped to have relationship with Him.

### The Edenic Covenant

The kickoff of the Millennial Kingdom takes us back to Genesis 1 where the LORD blessed creation & told it to "be fruitful and multiply and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth" (Gen 1:22). Then He made man & in Genesis 1 blesses them.

"28 And God blessed them. And God said to them, 'be fruitful and multiply and fill the earth and subdue it, and have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the heavens and over every living thing that moves on the earth.' 29 And God said, 'Behold, I have given you every plant yielding seed that is on the face of the earth, and every tree with seed in its fruit. You shall have them for food. 30 And to every beast of the earth and to every bird of the heavens and to everything that creeps on the earth, everything that has the breath of life, I have given every green plant for food.'"

– Genesis 1:28-30

The coming future paradise that will be realized in the Millennial Kingdom will reflect what we see in Eden. Isaiah 35 gives us a glimpse into this. The earth itself shall rejoice. The desert shall blossom abundantly & rejoice with joy & singing. All shall see the majesty of the LORD! His restorative power will grow & strengthen each person as we have been purchased by the Lord Jesus so that we can be part of His Family.

Isaiah tells us that waters will break forth in the wilderness & streams in the desert. A highway called the Way of Holiness will be there & belong to those who walk on the way, no unclean shall pass over it. And all the ransomed will come to Zion with singing & everlasting joy!

### **Death Continues**

People with mortal bodies will still exist on earth. This is an odd concept, but according to the Bible there are some people who incredibly survive through the Tribulation & the Wrath of the LORD poured out on the wicked (Mat 25:31-32). These people will fall into two groups, & King Jesus will separate them. This is the prophecy of the 'sheep & the goats' (Mat 25:33-34).

The first will be people who remain in rebellion to the LORD, the goats. These folks get a quick ticket to the Lake of Fire (Mat 25:41-46). Jesus is able to do this by the Divine Law, because He has the authority to execute Judgement, & there is no need to keep these people around until the Great White Throne Judgement. For this group, it is over.

The second group are those who have received Jesus as their Lord & Savior. This implies three things. First, that they received Jesus following the harvest of the righteous. Second, that the Grace of God is so great that even during a time when His Wrath is being poured out, He is still willing to receive those who will repent unto Himself. Third, it explains how the people with mortal bodies make it into the Millennial Kingdom.

In Isaiah 65 we learn that mortal bodies must work differently than they do today. This is because in verses 19-20 we read that new born babies don't die in their first days, & that old men fill out their days. However, it also considers humanity during this time who are in rebellion as it reads, "the young men die at a hundred years old and the sinner a hundred years old shall be accursed" (Is 65:20).

This means that people with physical bodies are born & must still come to receive Jesus as their Lord & Savior. That a person has one hundred years to do this is Grace from the LORD. It means that all people over one hundred years old will be saved believers walking with the LORD. It also means that death is still present during the Millennial Kingdom, & that those who die are sent to the Pit & await the Great White Throne Judgement.

### **A World At Peace**

All violence & wickedness will be removed. Today humanity is attempting to figure its way to a utopia of our own making. But as believers we know this is as futile an effort as the Satan trying to be like the Most High. We are utterly dependent on the LORD. But in Him we find a loving Heavenly Father who desires a relationship with us, & seeks to provide meaningful work to develop His Children.

In Isaiah 65 it reads, "'The wolf and the lamb shall graze together; the lion shall eat straw like the ox, and dust shall be the serpent's food. They shall not hurt or destroy in all my holy mountain,' says the LORD" (Is 65:25).

### **Purpose of the Millennial Kingdom**

The Millennial Kingdom will be like the Dispensation of Innocence. However, this time humanity will have gone through the pains of history to learn all the ways that we can't where the LORD can. During this seventh & final dispensation, King Jesus will demonstrate to us how He can rule with Truth & Justice.

During this age we will not only see, but participate in the fulfillment of the Edenic Covenant. The work we will have to do will be meaningful, we will not labor in vain. The LORD even says that all born will be blessed & He will answer them before they call.

**Great Hope & Excitement!**

It is difficult to even imagine how wonderful this next age will be! And not only that, but some of us today will see the coming of this age in our mortal lifetimes as we are converted to our glorified bodies, if we aren't martyred for the Kingdom of God first. We will get to serve the LORD to bring in the last of the elect who get to enter! The amazing fire of hope we should feel as Children of God in partnership with the Most High!

Brothers & sisters, we are so close. Jesus is coming soon! Let's be filled with joy, especially during the hard times in front of us, because paradise with Him is before us!

**Rebellion at the End**

Revelation 20 it reads:

“7 And when the thousand years are ended, Satan will be released from his prison 8 and will come out to deceive the nations that are at the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them for battle; their number is like the sand of the sea. 9 And they marched up over the broad plain of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city.”

– Revelation 20:7-9a

That the LORD allows for this is interesting, but shows how He still gives people a chance to choose Him or not. Free will of our own is important to a Father who loves. That there are that many people on earth already apart from the LORD is also interesting. In this part of history, the idea of a paradise sounds amazing, but at the end of the Millennial Kingdom understanding a fallen world will be lost on those in rebellion. It sounds as though Satan (Azazel) makes one last attempt to overthrow the Most High with the same failed strategy he's used before.

Revelation 20 continues:

“9b ...but fire came down from heaven and consumed them, 10 and the devil who had deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and sulfur where the beast and the false prophet were, and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.”

– Revelation 20:9b-10

The fire here may be literal, but it may also prophetic metaphor for the truth of the LORD. We see this in Jeremiah 23:29, & with the two witnesses in Revelation 11:5. However the LORD accomplishes this, the reality is that Satan (Azazel) will be cast into the Lake of Fire directly, & the remainder of rebellious humanity will get teed up for the Great White Throne Judgement.

## The Great White Throne Judgement

### The Second Resurrection & Second Death

At the end of the Millennial Kingdom the final Judgement from the LORD will come. This will not involve those who participated in the first resurrection at the beginning of the Millennial Kingdom. And it will not concern those still mortal who have received Jesus as their Lord & Savior.

However, the dead from all the ages who are 'sleeping' in the Pit will be resurrected. Daniel 12 puts it like this, "And many of those who sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt" (Dan 12:2). This contempt is the Great White Throne Judgement followed by the Lake of Fire. Let's pull in the text from Revelation 20 in here.

"11 Then I saw a great white throne and him who was seated on it. From his presence earth and sky fled away, and no place was found for them. 12 And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged by what was written in the books, according to what they had done. 13 And the sea gave up the dead who were in it, Death and Hades gave up the dead who were in them, and they were judged, each one of them, according to what they had done. 14 Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire. 15 And if anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire."

– Revelation 20:11-15

In the timeline we see the time when Jesus sent out the seventy (or seventy-two) disciples, signaling to the enemy that He was about to win back their spiritual authority over the nations disinherited at Babel. When they returned, they were excited that even demons listened to them at the Name of Jesus. But Jesus taught them:

"18 And he said to them, 'I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven. 19 Behold, I have given you authority to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy, and nothing shall hurt you. 20 Nevertheless, do not rejoice in this, that the spirits are subject to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.'"

– Luke 10:18-20

### Who's on the Docket

I had a friend who worshiped many gods. He told me that he loved Jesus, because Jesus was a good god. But to him Jesus was just another god. This was a non-negotiable point with him. He equated Jesus to a 'basketball coach,' & if you want to get better at basketball (or whatever) you find Jesus or the right god to teach you that thing, & off you go. But the idea of any perfect god sounded ridiculous to him.

In Islam, people believe that Jesus (they call Him 'Isa') is the final judge, not Muhammad. Sahih Bukhari 4:55:657 reads, "...surely (Jesus), the son of Mary will soon descend amongst you and will judge mankind..." There are many things about Islam that do not agree with Christianity, but on this point, they couldn't be more correct. However, the sad reality is that in Islam it is a works-based judgement with no possibility of Salvation Grace. When Jesus (Isa) comes to judge their works will not meet the infinite standard, they will fall short (Rom 3:23), & have no remediation for their sin through the free gift of Jesus. Failure to meet the infinite standard of perfection, they will be sentenced to the infinite second death in the Lake of Fire.

In these & many other examples, the worldly religions are a reflection of different deceptions by the lesser gods. It answers the 'many gods' problem. These false religions persist the concept of works-based judgement to elicit good behavior, loyalty, & dedication to the fallen god or gods.

We all know we have made mistakes. This is self-evident & humbling. There is no point in our lives but by the Grace of God that we in ourselves can ever measure the infinite standard. Culturally it is in vogue to claim to be 'a good person.' Yet we can all identify times we've lied, stolen, blasphemed, been idolaters, fornicators... we are all wicked in the sight of God. The measure is not whether we are 'a good person' by human standards, but whether we are sanctified of our sin by the Blood of Christ Jesus. Consider the human standard of the best person to be possibly an inch high – or even a mile. But this is lined up to the infinite standard of Christ Jesus, which is to say, there is never any amount of good works, reincarnations, lesser gods, meditation, or anything else you could possibly do to reach perfection. It's impossible.

None of the lesser gods can save anyone. These fallen angels are also on the docket & will be judged & found guilty of their rebellions & sins against the LORD. They too are facing the Judgement of the Lord Jesus! In fact, all those who reported to Satan (Azazel) who is first to be thrown into the Lake of Fire at this Judgement will face this Judgement & sentence themselves. All of the rebellious sons of God (Watchers) who lusted after & raped human women at the second fall. All of the unclean spirits (demons) who resulted from this defilement. And all of the rebellious sons of God who were placed as administrators over the nations at Babel. Every one of these will be Judged, found guilty, & thrown into the Lake of Fire with Satan (Azazel), the False Prophet, Beast, & humans (sent there at the division of the sheep & the goats) who are already there. Humanity who doesn't choose Jesus also receives this punishment.

### **The Books & the Lambs Book of Life**

In Revelation 20 John reports, "11 Then I saw a great white throne and him who was seated on it. From his presence earth and sky fled away, and no place was found for them. 12 And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened" (Rev 20:11-12a).

These are the books filled with the works of every person. We know this because John goes on to say, "12b Then another book was opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged by what was written in the books, according to what they had done" (Rev 20:12b).

Only the names of the elect are written in the Lamb's book of life & have been there since before the foundation of the world was laid (Rev 13:8). But this same verse delineates between the elect & everyone else. In the Great Tribulation the lost are known as those who marvel at & worship the Beast. But even before the Great Tribulation we see that people concern themselves with creation, worshiping the created things rather than the Most High God & His Son Christ Jesus.

That these names have been written in the Lamb's Book of Life tells us about the foreknowledge of the LORD. He knew from the beginning who would choose Him in the end. While the conversion to Christianity was our decision (this is not predestination) He already knew. This is evidenced through idioms like 'I found Jesus,' or 'I came to Jesus.' But there is good teaching that says, 'Jesus wasn't lost, you were. You didn't find Him, He found you.'

This foreknowledge of the LORD doesn't mean we don't have free will, or that from our perspective we shouldn't appreciate what is going on. This is not predestination, but simply that the LORD already knew what we would choose. Thus, motivating ourselves to consider receiving Jesus as our Lord & Savior is very important. Contemplating how we can deepen our relationship with him is a next step. But know that the transformation that happens in us is done by Him as we participate with the Holy Spirit to develop our character into His.

Nonetheless, the names in the book for the elect are dealt with during the first resurrection & the mortal still alive who choose Jesus during the Millennial Kingdom. Here at the second resurrection all those who rejected the Lord of Light have opted for a judgement based on works. As already discussed, this will not end well for them.

**A Complete Judgement**

In each dispensation the LORD follows His program. This seventh Dispensation is not only a complete number, but the cyclical program here on earth is completed with the Great White Throne Judgement at the end of the Millennial Kingdom.

John goes on in Revelation 20:

“13 And the sea gave up the dead who were in it, Death and Hades gave up the dead who were in them, and they were judged, each one of them, according to what they had done. 14 Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire. 15 And if anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.”

– Revelation 20:13-15

When I read this, a few things stand out to me. First, the sea gives up the dead. The ‘sea’ in prophetic metaphor refers to Judgement. As I’ve mentioned, Jesus walked on the sea, or on the waters, because He is above Judgement & does not sink into it. We do the same like Peter when we have our eyes on Jesus. The people that the sea gives up are those held waiting in the Pit for this Judgement.

The LORD takes the time to judge each one. I can’t imagine the horror, waiting in line, watching each person in front of me stand, be judged by their works, cast into the Lake of Fire, knowing that I have no case. I rejected the free gift of Jesus. What an awful feeling. Nonetheless, the LORD honors each person’s decision.

Hades is another term used for the Pit. Because this Judgement is for all held there, the need for it is obsolete. Thus, the LORD throws it into the Lake of Fire as well. This eternal quarantine is where everything apart, separate, rebellious, & divided from the LORD ends up.

The last thing then is Death. As Paul tells us, what is raised is imperishable (1 Cor 15:42). Thus, there is no need for this last enemy of the LORD, & it too is cast into the Lake of Fire.

Those spirits sent to the Lake of Fire hiss & gnash their teeth. They will melt away, the desire of the wicked will perish! (Ps 112:10)



## The Lake of Fire

### **The Final Place for the Judged**

The Lake of Fire, as the name implies, is not a place you'd like to end up. Fire is prophetic metaphor for Truth, that is the Truth of the LORD. Like other places & beings in the spirit world it is difficult for humanity to really understand what this is, or would be like. Humans have generalized thinking about this into terms like 'Hell' & depicted it in works like Dante's Inferno from his poem Divine Comedy. We diminish how terrible this place is, thinking it is a big party, & sing songs like "Highway to Hell" by ACDC as we party our way to damnation. We flippantly tell people to 'go to Hell' as though we have authority to judge, or understand what we are really saying.

To understand how terrible this place is, we can look to things that are described, like the outpouring of the Wrath of God. That's a bad day. The Lake of Fire is an eternal torment.

### **Sheol, the Pit, is Not the Lake of Fire**

An array of names is used to describe the spiritual prison in the earth which keep those bound for the Lake of Fire. This place, which might be considered the doorstep of the Lake of Fire, does not sound all that terrific either. Jesus, in the parable of Lazarus & the Rich Man tells it like this:

"23 ...in Hades, being in torment, he lifted up his eyes and saw Abraham far off and Lazarus at his side. 24 And he called out, 'Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus to dip the end of his finger in water and cool my tongue, for I am in anguish in this flame.' 25 But Abraham said, 'Child, remember that you in your lifetime received your good things, and Lazarus in like manner bad things; but now he is comforted here, and you are in anguish. 26 And besides all this, between us and you a great chasm has been fixed, in order that those who would pass from here to you may not be able, and none may cross from there to us.'"

– Luke 16:23-26

Because this bears similarities to the Lake of Fire, it is easy to understand how these spiritual locations gets confused & conflated. They are both places of torment. They both have separation from the righteous & from the LORD. And both flames & fire are used to describe both places, which could be literal &/or metaphorical for the Truth of the LORD.

### **Abraham's Bosom**

Something else stands out here. There are two sides of this, which are separated by a chasm. In Genesis 42 Jacob laments that if anything happens to Benjamin on the trip to Egypt with his brothers, they "would bring down my gray hairs with sorrow to Sheol" (Gen 42:38). Jacob is not talking about the side of torment, but rather the side where Lazarus is with Abraham. This side of comfort is sometimes referred to as 'Abraham's bosom.'

Many believe that this is where Jesus went, & look to verses like 1 Peter 3:18 & Ephesians 4:8.

### **Description of the Lake of Fire**

We get a description of the Lake of Fire from 2 Enoch 10:1-3. Again, this is not a Biblical description, so this isn't for doctrine. But it does paint a picture that might begin to approach the horror of this place.

"1 And those two men led me up on the Northern side, and showed me there a very terrible place, and (there were) all manner of tortures in that place: cruel darkness and unilluminated gloom, and there is no light there, but murky fire constantly flaming aloft, and (there is) a fiery river coming forth, and that whole place is everywhere fire, and everywhere (there is) frost and ice, thirst and shivering, while the bonds are very cruel, and the angels (spirits) fearful and merciless, bearing angry weapons, merciless torture, and I said: 2 'Woe, woe, how very terrible is this place.'"

– 2 Enoch 10:1-2

“3 And those men said to me: ‘This place, O Enoch, is prepared for those who dishonor God, who on earth practice sin against nature, which is child-corruption after the sodomitic fashion, magic-making, enchantments and devilish witchcrafts, and who boast of their wicked deeds, stealing, lies, calumnies, envy, rancor, fornication, murder, and who, accursed, steal the souls of men, who, seeing the poor take away their goods and themselves wax rich, injuring them for other men’s goods; who being able to satisfy the empty, made the hungering to die; being able to clothe, stripped the naked; and who knew not their creator, and bowed to the soulless (and lifeless) gods, who cannot see nor hear, vain gods, (who also) built hewn images and bow down to unclean handiwork, for all these is prepared this place among these, for eternal inheritance.’”

– 2 Enoch 10:3

### **Processing the Dead**

When the mortal body dies today their spiritual self goes to Sheol. For those who are saved by the Blood of Jesus, or were aligned to the LORD before Jesus, they are all covered by the Lamb who was slain & go to Abraham’s bosom. But for all people who are not saved, they go to the Pit, the prison reserved for those to be judged by their works.

Those in Abraham’s bosom will participate in the first resurrection. At that point Abraham’s bosom will be empty & cease to be used. This is because all mortal people during the Millennial Kingdom will remain alive in their mortal bodies. However, those who do not receive Jesus as their Lord & Savior during the Millennial Kingdom will die a mortal death & the spiritual part of their self will then be contained in the Pit. Thus, the prison or Pit side of Sheol remains necessary until the end of the Millennial Kingdom.

The second resurrection of the dead occurs in preparation for the Great White Throne Judgement. Here the spirits of humanity, unclean spirits, & rebellious angels will be brought in queue to stand trial. At this point the Pit will become obsolete, & Hades will be cast into the Lake of Fire. This also means that one by one, each spirit will face individual consideration & judgement from the Lord as their works are measured & their sin & iniquities are weighed.

Romans 6:23 tells us that the wages of sin is death. From a human perspective today, we might think this is saying that cursing or shoplifting is punishable by death. That may seem overbearing. However, it is a fact that these things are sin & do constitute death. But the death we think about may be the mortal death of our body. This is the corporal punishment we as humans inflict on the worst of us who by our standard have committed terrible acts. What the LORD is telling us in Romans 6:23 is that if we are blemished by any sin whatsoever, we are unable to remain in His presence.

This is not withstanding the fact that those who have rejected Jesus & His gift of Salvation are not atoned for, or that every human has fallen short of the Glory of God only attainable by the only begotten Son of God. What the LORD is talking about is the second death, the Lake of Fire. The wages of sin, any sin, even a smidgeon of sin is enough to send us to the Lake of Fire. Which is why the Blood of Christ Jesus must absolve all of our sin, even the smallest amount.

The Judgement of the Lord then is that all of these held in the Pit, brought before His Divine Judgement, are cast into the Lake of Fire.

Finally, this allows Death itself to be cast into the Lake of Fire. It too becomes obsolete. All who enter into the Eternal Kingdom will live forever in the Presence of the LORD, the Most High God, our Heavenly Father! And the adventure doesn't stop there. While we have a limited view into the Millennial Kingdom, & even less understanding of the Eternal Kingdom, we do know that the LORD loves us. That He will wipe away every tear, & present many opportunities to partner with Him as we learn, grow, develop, & are conformed into His Character. This is to say, we won't all be robots or clones of each other or Him, but rather, edified into the best version of ourselves that we can be, which by design is that of the Creator!

Conversely, those thrown into the Lake of Fire will also exist for eternity. Their reality will be eternal quarantine apart from the LORD, & from all of His spiritual family & angels. No longer will these in rebellion be allowed to pollute God's good world with their sin.

**Repentance Today**

The goal of this work is to get people to study the Bible. But if this lesson in particular has moved you to consider repentance, I'd encourage you to simply ask Jesus into your heart & for Him to be your Lord & Savior. If you do that, please find a pastor at a church who can talk to you. No person should be alone without pastoral leadership, lest the enemy come & steal the truth once you have it.

The church can't do this for you. Neither can anyone else. This is a personal commitment you make to the Lord Jesus. If you take a step toward Him, He will come running to you. Be blessed in the Name of Jesus, amen.

## The Eternal Kingdom

### **Dwelling with the LORD**

Revelation 21 begins, “Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and the sea was no more” (Rev 21:1).

Recall that the sea is a prophetic metaphor for judgement. When Jesus walked on the water, it was a miracle, but also, the Lord Jesus is above Judgement so He can't sink into it. We also see Peter do the miraculous when He is focused on & walking with Jesus. Now we see that condition become the reality for all of creation!

“And I saw the Holy City, New Jerusalem, coming down out of the heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, ‘Behold, the dwelling place of God is with man. He will dwell with them, and they will be his people, and God himself will be with them as their God’” (Rev 21:2).

### **Worship of the LORD**

All will worship the LORD. This will be done through praise music, which we typically equate to worship today, but it is more than this. Our lives will reflect His Character & like today will be worship in all that we do. As part of the Family of God, He will be glorified as we work in partnership with Him in all that we do (Rev 22:3).

### **He is the Light**

It says that the sun & the moon will be no more. That these things will fade away, & that the light we receive will be from Him. There will be no need for lamps to light our day – or that day & night will even exist. All this will pass away. In our eternal life we will not tire, or have a mortal need to rest. Yet, our rest will be in Him as He rested after creating the earth, we will continue to follow His example.

### **The Tree of Life**

There will be a great river flowing out from under the firmament of the LORD's Throne, will flow through the New Jerusalem, & out into the rest of creation. Along both sides of the river the tree of life will grow on its banks (Rev 22:2).

The tree of life will produce fruit each month & will be for food. The leaves from the tree of life will be medicine for the healing of the nations (Rev 22:2), & there will be all kinds of trees for food (Ezk 47:7,12).

The tree of life & the other trees for food are the same trees from Eden (Gen 2:9). Note that this is not the Tree of the Knowledge of Good & Evil (Gen 2:17). Even so, no defiled & rebellious things are unable to enter into God's good world (Rev 22:3). Our safety & security in the direct presence & relationship with the LORD is assured.

### **The River**

Ezekiel & John both give a description of this river running through the city & creation of the LORD (Ezk 47:1; Rev 22:1). The water of life is fresh water that runs all the way to the sea. The best we can do today is imagine the stunning landscape of Creation that itself is in alignment with the LORD. No longer will things be ravaged by the violence of rebellion & Judgement. All things will be made new, & this includes the hills, plains, mountains, & waters.

Everywhere the river goes on its journey life will abound with creatures that swarm & there will be many fish. Abundance will fill the sea as it becomes fresh. This will allow everything that lives in the waters to live wherever the river goes. Fishermen will live & work beside the sea, & will fish many kinds of fish (Ezk 47:9-10).

Personally, I'm very excited about this, because the implication is that there will be boats. One of my hopes is to sail on the seas, & I look forward to sailing on these magnificent seas the LORD has made in the Eternal Kingdom! In fact, dreams & imaginings like this while they are the best we can do from where we are today, are exciting to think about. Jesus tells us that He went away to prepare a place for us. Praise the Lord Jesus! I'm looking forward to all of these incredible blessings!

### **Swamps & Marshes**

One of the last things described in the natural environment are the swamps & marshes, which are left for salt. Salt is sterilizing in this part of the life, but there will be no defilement in the Eternal Kingdom. However, salt is an important resource in many ways. While the nature of the physical & spiritual world may not be clear to us now, that there is a reason for salt to continue to exist, the LORD has provided.

Salt in prophetic metaphor is a more commonly understood Biblical metaphor. As believers we are full of salt. We can lose our saltiness, which is to say we can lose our ability to bring truth into situation with a spiritual sterilization similar to how salt sterilizes. In this too, the LORD provides.

### **The New Jerusalem**

Revelation 21:9-14 provides a description of the New Jerusalem. It is cube in shape, large, with three gates on each side. Each gate is named for one of the tribes of Israel. In the middle of the City is the Throne of the LORD. There are twelve foundations, each named for one of the twelve apostles. What starts to come to mind is the layout of the Israelite camp in the OT. And also, the cross of Jesus which became the alter where His Blood was offered to make the New Covenant in the NT. The layout of New Jerusalem reflects the layout of these things, because these have been a type & shadow preparing humanity for this Eternal Kingdom.

### **Rainbow over the Throne of the LORD**

Chapter 1 of Ezekiel launches into this phenomenal spiritual experience where he gets a vision of the Throne of the Lord. Ezekiel describes angels & their movement under the Bow, "And the living creatures darted to and fro, like the appearance of a flash of lightning" (Ezk 1:14). This is not uncommon on earth, to have lightning from the clouds with a rainbow. Something similar happens in heaven. The last verse in this chapter we see a familiar description of the rainbow. "Like the appearance of the bow that is in the cloud on the day of rain, so was the appearance of the brightness all around. Such was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD. And when I saw it, I fell on my face, and I heard the voice of one speaking" (Ezk 1:28).

The LORD set the rainbow in the sky after the rain as the sign of the Noahic Covenant, & He said He would see it & remember that Covenant & would never again flood the earth & destroy all flesh. What Ezekiel describes above shows us that the LORD also has this over His Throne. In other words, the symbol of that Covenant is both in heaven & on earth, for humanity & the LORD to see (Gen 9:12-17). The bow in heaven above the Throne of the LORD is described in 3 Enoch 22 also.

“4 And the arches of the Bow are set above the Araboth, and they are 100 thousands and 10,000 times ten thousands (of parasangs) high. Their measure is after the measure of the Irin and Qaddshin (Watchers and Holy Ones). As it is written (Gen 9:13) “My bow I have set in the cloud.” [It is not written here “I will set” but “I have set,” (i.e.) already; clouds that surround the Throne of Glory.] As His clouds pass by, the angels of the hail (turn into) burning coal. 5 And a fire of the voice goes down from by the Holy Chayyoth. And because of the breath of that voice they “run” (Ezk 1:14) to another place, fearing lest it command them to go, and they “return” lest it injure them from the other side. Therefore “they run and return” (Ezk 1:14) 6 And these arches of the Bow are more beautiful and radiant than the radiance of the sun during the summer solstice. And they are whiter than a flaming fire and they are great and beautiful. 7 Above the arches of the Bow are the wheels of the Ophannim. Their height is 1000 thousand and 10,000 times units of measure after the measure of the Seraphim and the Troops (Gedudim).”

– 3 Enoch 22:4-7

### **Partnership with the LORD**

We will live directly in His presence, being developed by Him. But what will we be doing? The Bible talks much about our development, about our character, about the edification through the Holy Spirit. But all this begs the question, ‘for what?’

Christians say things like, ‘after we die, we go to heaven,’ or ‘we will see our loved ones when we are in heaven.’ Hopefully this body of work helps detail out what is too often given a hand wave or lip service within the church; that there is a first resurrection, a Millennial Kingdom, & an Eternal Kingdom. That the LORD has given us a slight glimpse into some of this but has left so much of it for us to trust in Him.

That ambiguity can be disconcerting, which may be why leaving it as a hand wave, a simplification, an area we don’t really wrestle with, is easier. But I find it engaging to imagine & dream about. What will this new eternal life hold? Will we be here on earth, or will we move to another planet? Will we be able to see other parts of the Universe? Or will we be in the spirit world entirely? What will we be working to accomplish? Will we be able to learn to play instruments? Will we be better dancers? Will we develop relationships with the LORD’s spiritual family? Will we get to meet people that we’ve only learned about in Scripture? Will we get to tell people like Ruth & Boaz, ‘your story really inspired me!’ Or ask Moses, ‘what was it like when you held up your hands & the Red Sea split?’

Once I head down this track the possibilities are endless. My imagination runs wild. And this type of enthusiasm only fuels me to want to develop here & now, & to prepare my heart for the soon coming events because what comes after that will be amazing! Moreover, the application of all this will be a productive & meaningful relationship with the Most High. I can’t wait! Praise the LORD!



## Appendix

“For truly, I say to you, until heaven and earth pass away, not an iota not a dot,  
will pass from the Law until all is accomplished...”

Jesus

Only Begotten Son of the Most High God  
Messiah, King, Lord, & Savior of the world.  
Matthew 5:18



## Bibliography

All Scripture references unless otherwise noted are from the English Standard Version (ESV).

Bible Gateway, [www.BibleGateway.com](http://www.BibleGateway.com), a division of The Zondervan Corporation, Grand Rapids, MI

Blue Letter Bible, [www.BlueLetterBible.org](http://www.BlueLetterBible.org), 2022

Beshore, Dr. F. Kenton, The Prophecy Bible Study Notes, printed in China, World Bible Society, 1980

Heiser, Michael W., Demons: What the Bible Really Says about the Powers of Darkness, Bellingham, WA, Lexham Press, 2020

Holy Bible, English Standard Version (ESV), printed in China, Good News Publishers, 2016

Idleman, Kyle, not a fan, becoming a completely committed follower of Jesus, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 2011

Schnieders, Paul C., The Books of Enoch Complete Edition, Las Vegas, Nevada, International Alliance Pro-Publishing, 2012

## About the Authoring

This work is based on inspiration from the Holy Spirit, & is intended to edify the Body of Christ.

Jeff Metcalf has a B.A. in philosophy from UC Santa Cruz, & an A.A. in Bible from Praxis Academy in Downey, CA, where Mr. Metcalf was ordained to serve the Body of Christ. Professionally, he is a Product Manager where uses documentation applied here in managing highly regulated technology & financial products. This work is based on a combination of years in study of the Bible, seminary level classes, & the documenting product requirements, specifications, & compliance data flows.

It is a non-denominational work, the target of which is to provide a reference tool that uncovers & provides context that's been lost to the modern church, but was expected to be known by the readers during the writing of the Holy Bible. Mr. Metcalf's position is that we shouldn't be arguing against one another, but laboring together to understand the deeper truths of the Holy Bible. We should always agree on the core doctrines of Christianity, & agree to disagree where we don't agree on interpretation.

The goal of this work is not to generate money. As a PDF, what was freely received is freely given. Copies can currently be downloaded from [www.HCJcministries.com](http://www.HCJcministries.com) website.

## Additional Resources

Unsolicited recommendations.

### **The Bible Project**

[www.bibleproject.com](http://www.bibleproject.com)

Tim Mackie & Jon Collins

TONS of free & wonderful content.

Learn the Bible books, themes, word studies, & more.

### **Dr. Michael S. Heiser**

[www.drmsch.com](http://www.drmsch.com)

American Biblical Old Testament scholar & Christian author specializing in the nature of the spiritual realm of the Bible. He has many great videos on free content sites like YouTube.

Recommended books include:

- Supernatural
- The Unseen Realm
- Angels
- Demons

### **Friendship With God**

[www.FriendshipWithGod.org](http://www.FriendshipWithGod.org)

Bible teaching with Tom Cantor, & Israel Restoration Ministries.

Listen to teaching that connects the Old Testament with the New Testament, with insights to Jewish culture & important vocabulary. I've personally listened to Tom Cantor for years & highly recommend his teaching, which has helped me grow in my own walk with Christ Jesus!

### **Bible Gateway**

[www.biblegateway.com](http://www.biblegateway.com)

A searchable online Bible in more than 200 versions and 70 languages.

### **Blue Letter Bible**

[www.blueletterbible.org](http://www.blueletterbible.org)

Searchable online Bible with study references

Breaks down verses & helps make Strong's Concordance words accessible in context to verses.

### **Bible Hub**

[www.biblehub.com](http://www.biblehub.com)

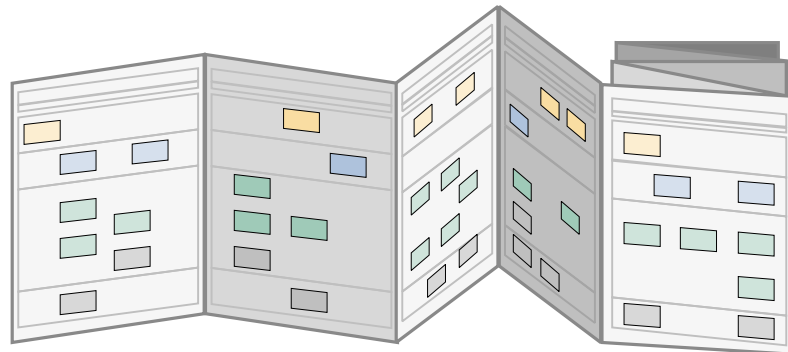
Online parallel Bible, search & study tools including parallel texts, cross references, & more.

Compare the same verse in multiple translations side-by-side.

## Printing Tips

If you have this in PDF version, the page numbers should coincide with what will print on a printer. For instance, if you want to print the study, “Romans 8 – How the LORD Adopted us into His Family” on pages 40 & 41, selecting pages 40 & 41 should print those two pages. This can be helpful as a handout at a Bible study, or as a guide as you deep dive on your own.

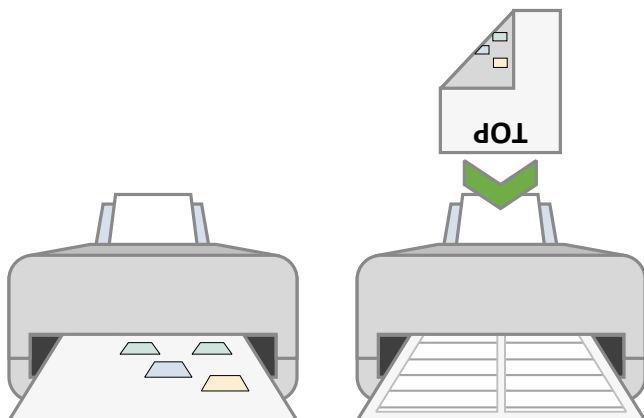
The fourteen page “Main Flow” (pgs. 12-25) & the fifteen page “Great Tribulation flow” (pgs. 105-119) can be printed on their own & put together. Print pages 12-25 or 105-119 single sided & tape them together in order left to right. Folding it up after taped still allows you To navigate through the timeline & investigate What was happening, what came before, & what came after in the epic storyline. This can be useful when using the individual studies, but is designed to help as a reference when you read the Bible itself.



If you print the whole thing double sided, **FIRST** print all of the odd pages, **THEN** print all of the even pages.

Be careful to reinsert the paper for the second print so that the page orientation & order are correct.

Because this work is for the Glory of the Kingdom, print as many copies as you would like. The best thing that could happen is that more people learn & study the Bible, that the fullness of the Gentiles comes in, the Jews reawaken, and King Jesus Returns!



# Hineni

(HAH-nee-nee)

Here I Am LORD, Send Me!

(Gen 22:1 NLT)

I learned to learn, but the Lord showed me how.  
I learned to work, but the Lord showed me how.  
I learned to write, but the Lord showed me how.  
It was always the Lord teaching me how.

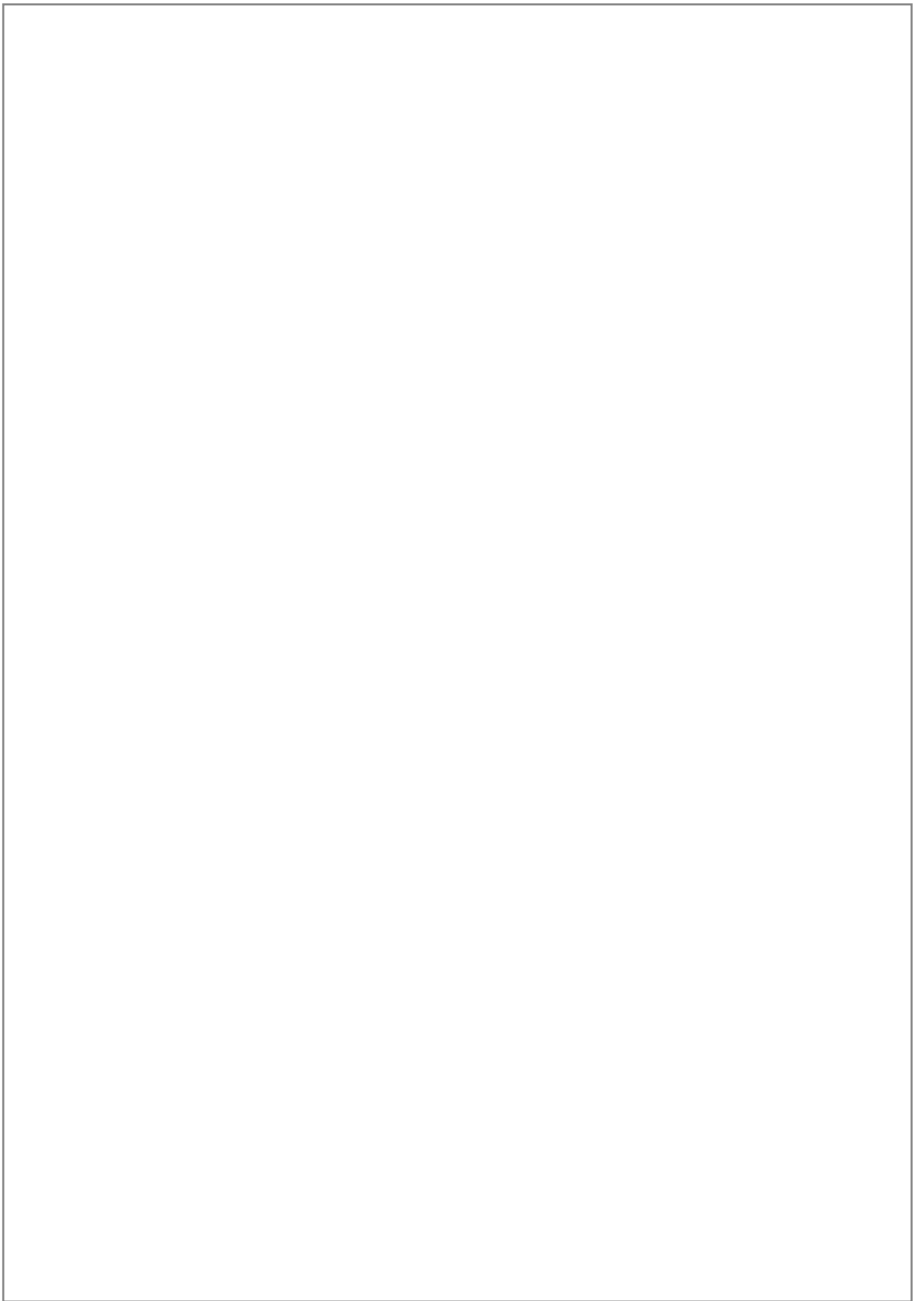
So now...

The Lord asked me,  
learn His Character, so I am.  
Study His Word, so I am.  
Write this work, so I did.

And now I will go serve the Lord!  
And now I will go praise Jesus!  
And now I will go find the Lord's elect!  
Because the Lord asked me to.

And I am not ashamed,  
And I care not what man thinks,  
But what He thinks of me.  
Amen.







## It's An EPIC Story!

There is no doubt in my mind that the Holy Bible is the most epic story every told. In fact, even if you include stories & poems like Homer's Iliad, these tales fit within the larger epic of the Bible – & in some cases can be explained by the Bible. This goes for the Greek & Egyptian gods of antiquity, the myriad of earth's religions, & everything we know about the spirit world. There is no way around it, the God-Breathed Scripture is the most exciting book out there.

Despite this, so many people – even within the church – have not read the Bible. And if they have, struggle through many of the parts of the Bible. Laws, genealogies, & hard to pronounce names for modern people make the Bible seem 'boring.' Not to mention that many Bibles come in at about 1,500 pages. That's a lot of text to power through without understanding what is going on.

Realizing this disparity I thought it would be cool if there were something more accessible. Sort of a key to how all this fit together. Thinking about the genealogies flow many of us are familiar with, I looked for a similar flow that would describe the spiritual events of the Bible. But after looking around, the Holy Spirit put it on my heart to use my product management skills applied to products that are heavily regulated by the laws of man, & create one. Thus was the genesis of this flow that details the spiritual reality, & how the LORD remains both faithful to His Divine Law while saving all of humanity who receive Him through Christ Jesus our Lord.

To be fair, I've been studying this stuff for years. I've investigated pieces & parts, taken detailed notes, & wrestled with things like Daniel's 70 Week Prophecy. Everything in here stands on the shoulders of many teachers, authors, & the hours of intense study. Yet, I will tell you that while I compiled this work, the Holy Spirit worked through me to make it happen. Consider it a means to understand books in the Bible with the larger spirit-world context that the authors of the Bible had, & which has been lost by many modern readers.